

**ANNALS OF THE WARS**  
**OF THE**  
**EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.**

---

**VOLUME III. 1760—1783.**

2348/RR2/E/RF

Entered at Stationers' Hall.

*[The Author reserves to himself the Right of Translation.]*

# ANNALS OF THE WARS

OF THE

## EIGHTEENTH CENTURY,

COMPILED

From the most Authentic Histories of  
the Period.

BY THE

HON. SIR EDWARD CUST, D.C.L.

LIEUTENANT-GENERAL IN THE BRITISH ARMY,  
AND COLONEL OF THE SIXTEENTH QUEEN'S LANCERS.

"By reading you will be distinguished without it your abilities will  
be of little use."

GENERAL SIR CHARLES NAPIER'S *Advice to a Young Officer*

THIRD EDITION.

VOL. LII. 1760—1783.

LONDON:

JOHN MURRAY, ALBEMARLE STREET.

1869.

090

940-253  
C-war

2348  
2.2.2

"The worn-out soldier, *kindly bade to stay,*  
Sits by the fire and talks the night away,  
Grieves o'er the wounds, and tales of sorrow done,  
Shoulders his crutch and shows how fields were won."

GOLDSMITH.

---

*BY THE SAME AUTHOR.*

4 vols. fcap. 8vo, 5s. each.

ANNALS OF THE WARS OF THE NINETEENTH  
CENTURY, 1800-15:

Including MILITARY CHARACTERS of the COMMANDERS of the  
FLEETS and ARMIES of every Nation within that period.



## CONTENTS.

---

1760.	PAGE		PAGE
1. Negotiations . . . . .	1	27. Pondicherry besieged by General Coote . . . . .	36
2. Preparations for War . . . . .	2	28. Reinforcements from Eu- rope . . . . .	ib.
3. Numbers of the competing Armies . . . . .	3	29. The whole of the French Possessions in India sur- rendered to the English . . . . .	38
4. The Campaign commences between the British and French . . . . .	4	30. Military Characters of the French Commanders— La Bourdonnais, Du- pleix, Lally, and Bussy . . . . .	39
5. War in Saxony . . . . .	ib.	31. War in North America . . . . .	43
6. War in Silesia . . . . .	5	32. The French advance to Quebec . . . . .	ib.
7. Battle of Landshut . . . . .	6	33. Fight at Sillieri . . . . .	44
8. Glatz besieged and taken . . . . .	7	34. Quebec besieged, and re- lieved by the Fleet . . . . .	ib.
9. War in Westphalia—The Fight of Korbach . . . . .	ib.	35. Naval War . . . . .	46
10. Affair at Emsdorf . . . . .	8	36. Reflections . . . . .	49
11. The Fight at Warburg . . . . .	9	37. Death of George II. of England . . . . .	50
12. The King attempts to re- cover Possession of Dres- den . . . . .	11		
13. Siege of Dresden raised . . . . .	12	1761.	
14. Loudon besieges Breslau . . . . .	13	1. War in India—Combats at Patna . . . . .	51
15. The King marches into Silesia . . . . .	15	2. Invasion of India by the Afghans—Ahmed Ab- dallah Shah . . . . .	52
16. The Battle of Liegnitz . . . . .	16	3. Naval War . . . . .	53
17. Daun ordered to invest Schweidnitz . . . . .	19	4. The Siege and Capture of Belleville . . . . .	56
18. Colberg saved by General Werner . . . . .	20	5. Capture of Dominica . . . . .	57
19. War on the Rhine—Affair at Kloster Camp . . . . .	ib.	6. State of Europe in respect to the War . . . . .	ib.
20. The Russians advance to Berlin and plunder it . . . . .	23	7. The Campaign begins . . . . .	59
21. Frederick advances to its Relief . . . . .	24	8. The Affair at Langensalza . . . . .	61
22. The Battle of Torgau . . . . .	25	9. Other enterprising Affairs . . . . .	ib.
23. All the Armies go into Winter-quarters . . . . .	30	10. The Battle of Villinghau- sen . . . . .	63
24. War in India . . . . .	31	11. The Duke de Broglie re-	
25. Battle of Wandewash . . . . .	32		
26. Count Lally obtains Assist- ance from Hyder Ali . . . . .	34		

	PAGE		PAGE
called, and the Prince de Soubise commands the French Army . . .	66	14. The Siege of the Havana . . .	98
12. The Austrian and Prussian Armies . . .	ib.	15. Expedition against the Manillas . . .	95
13. The Russian Army under Marshal Butturlin . . .	67	16. Naval War . . .	96
14. Loudon takes Schweidnitz by Assault . . .	69	17. Successes of the Spaniards against the Portuguese . . .	ib.
15. Attempt on the Life of Frederick . . .	71	18. The French attack Newfoundland . . .	97
16. Colberg is besieged and taken by the Russians . . .	72	19. Death and Military Character of Admiral Lord Anson . . .	98
17. Attempt on Magdeburg . . .	73	20. Frederick concludes a Truce for Saxony and Silesia, and ravages Franconia . . .	99
1762.		1763.	
1. War declared between Great Britain and Spain—The Family Compact . . .	74	1. Pacification of Hubertsburg—Peace of Paris . . .	100
2. Death of the Czarina and Withdrawal of the Russian Troops from Germany . . .	76	2. Military Characters of the Generals of the Seven Years' War . . .	101
3. Consequences of the Russian Change of Policy on the War . . .	77	Prince Henry of Prussia . . .	ib.
4. Prince Henry attacks General Serbelloni . . .	78	Prince Charles of Lorraine . . .	102
5. The King attacks Daun near Schweidnitz . . .	79	Marshal Daun . . .	103
6. Catharine, Empress of Russia, orders her Troops to quit Frederick's Army . . .	80	General Ziethen . . .	ib.
7. Battle of Schweidnitz . . .	81	General Seydlitz . . .	105
8. The War in Westphalia—Fights at Wilhelmsthal, Lutterburg, and Johannisberg . . .	83	The Duke of Brunswick . . .	106
9. Bloody Affair at Amöneburg—Siege and Capture of Cassel . . .	85	The Marquis of Graub, and Lord George Sackville . . .	108
10. The King of Prussia takes Schweidnitz . . .	86	The French Commanders . . .	109
11. The Battle of Freyberg—The Last of the Seven Years' War . . .	87	3. War in Spanish South America . . .	110
12. The War in the Peninsula . . .	88	4. War in Corsica . . .	ib.
13. War in the West Indies—Conjunct Expeditions against the French and Spanish Colonies . . .	90	5. War of the British against the Native Powers of Hindostan . . .	ib.
		The Battle of Geriah or Nootee . . .	111
		The Battle of Ouhannulla—Monghier taken . . .	112
		Patna taken . . .	113
		1764.	
		1. Death of Augustus III., King of Poland . . .	ib.
		2. War with the Native Princes of Hindostan . . .	114
		Battle of Buxar . . .	115
		3. War with the Indian Tribes in North America . . .	116

PAGE	PAGE
<b>1765.</b>	
1. War in India—Lord Clive Governor-General and Commander-in-Chief—Chunarhur and Allahabad taken by Sir Robert Fletcher—Battle of Corah by Carnac . . . . .	117
2. Lord Clive establishes the Sovereignty of the East India Company . . . . .	118
<b>1766.</b>	
1. Lord Clive establishes the Clive Fund for invalided Soldiers of the Company—Quits India . . . . .	119
2. Rise of the Power of Hyder Ali in the Carnatic . . . . .	120
3. War in Georgia . . . . .	ib.
<b>1767.</b>	
1. War with Hyder Ali and the Nizam—Battle of Changama . . . . .	ib.
2. The Battle of Trinomalee . . . . .	121
3. War in Europe—Paoli triumphs in Corsica . . . . .	123
<b>1768.</b>	
1. War in Europe—Corsica sold by the Genoese to the French—Paoli defeats them . . . . .	124
2. War between Russia and the Porte—Disturbances in Poland . . . . .	ib.
3. War with Hyder Ali . . . . .	125
<b>1769.</b>	
1. The French establish themselves in Corsica, and Paoli flees to England . . . . .	129
2. The Russians send a Fleet to the Mediterranean . . . . .	130
3. War between Russia and Turkey . . . . .	ib.
4. The Siege of Choczim is attempted and raised . . . . .	132
5. The Grand Vizier superseded—The Turkish army defeated—Choczim taken . . . . .	133
6. The Russians obtain other Successes . . . . .	134
7. War in Poland . . . . .	135
8. War in India . . . . .	ib.
<b>1770.</b>	
1. Spain seizes the Falkland Islands . . . . .	136
2. War between Russia and Turkey . . . . .	137
3. Naval War between these Powers . . . . .	ib.
4. Engagement off Scio . . . . .	139
5. Romantow defeats a Turkish Army under the Khan of the Crimea . . . . .	140
6. The Battle of the Kagul . . . . .	141
7. The Siege of Bender . . . . .	142
8. The Turks retire behind the Danube . . . . .	ib.
9. War in Georgia . . . . .	143
10. War in Egypt . . . . .	ib.
11. War in Poland . . . . .	ib.
12. The Danes send an Expedition against Algiers . . . . .	ib.
13. The French send an Expedition against Tunis . . . . .	144
<b>1771.</b>	
1. The Russians invade the Crimea . . . . .	ib.
2. The Turks take Giurgevo, but are defeated in the Dobrudscha . . . . .	145
3. The Russian Fleet in the Mediterranean . . . . .	146
4. War in Poland—Attempt to carry off the King . . . . .	147
5. War in Egypt . . . . .	ib.
6. Retirement and Military Character of Admiral Lord Hawke . . . . .	ib.
<b>1772.</b>	
1. Partition of Poland . . . . .	149
2. Suspension of Hostilities between Russia and the Porte . . . . .	150
3. The Porte recovers Egypt . . . . .	ib.
4. Revolution in Sweden and Denmark . . . . .	151
5. Insurrections in various States of South America . . . . .	152

	PAGE		PAGE
<b>1773.</b>		trials gain Possession of Boston . . . . .	172
1. War between the Turks and Russians . . . . .	152	2. The Blockade of Quebec raised . . . . .	173
2. Conclusion of the Caribbean War in the West Indies . . . . .	155	3. An Attempt of the British on Charlestown, South Carolina, fails . . . . .	174
3. Maritime Discovery—Byron, Cook, Hearne, and Mackenzie . . . . .	ib.	4. Declaration of Independence . . . . .	175
4. Disturbances at Boston in North America . . . . .	ib.	5. Battle of Long Island . . . . .	ib.
<b>1774.</b>		6. The British take New York . . . . .	178
1. War between the Turks and Russians . . . . .	156	7. Battle of White Plains—The British capture Fort Washington and Fort Lee . . . . .	179
2. Peace of Kainardji . . . . .	157	8. Action on Lake Champlain . . . . .	182
3. Russian and Turkish Naval War . . . . .	ib.	9. Skirmish at Trenton . . . . .	183
4. Pugatcheff's Rebellion in Russia crushed . . . . .	158	10. The Indians introduced by the British into the War with the Provincials . . . . .	184
5. Death and Military Character of Louis XV. . . . .	159	11. European Powers sympathize with and assist the Patriots . . . . .	185
6. War between Spain and Morocco . . . . .	160	12. War between Persia and the Porte . . . . .	ib.
7. War in India . . . . .	ib.	<b>1777.</b>	
8. Death and Military Character of General Lord Clive . . . . .	161	1. American War—Affair at Princeton . . . . .	186
<b>1775.</b>		2. Sir William Howe tries in vain to draw Washington from his defensive Position . . . . .	188
1. War between Great Britain and her North American Colonies . . . . .	163	3. The British send an Expedition by Sea to the Delaware and Chesapeake . . . . .	190
2. Battle of Concord or Lexington . . . . .	ib.	4. Battle of Brandywine and Capture of Philadelphia . . . . .	191
3. Ticonderoga and Crown Point taken by the Patriots . . . . .	164	5. Some Foreigners of Distinction join the Patriot Army . . . . .	192
4. The Battle of Bunker's Hill . . . . .	165	6. The British Fleet and Army force their Way up the Delaware . . . . .	193
5. The Patriots invade Canada and take Montreal . . . . .	167	7. Forts Montgomery and Clinton on the Hudson taken by Clinton . . . . .	195
6. The Patriot Army fail in an Attempt on Quebec . . . . .	168	8. General Burgoyne advances on Ticonderoga, which is captured . . . . .	196
7. The Spaniards send an Expedition against Algiers . . . . .	170	9. Colonel St. Leger fails before Fort Stanwix . . . . .	199
8. War in Egypt . . . . .	171	10. Burgoyne crosses the Hudson . . . . .	ib.
9. War in Persia . . . . .	ib.		
10. Disturbances in France . . . . .	172		
<b>1776.</b>			
1. American War—The Pa-			

	PAGE
11. Surrenders with his whole Force to General Gates	200
12. War between Spain and Portugal	203
13. War in the Crimes	204
14. War in Persia	ib.

## 1778.

1. Burgoyne and his Captive Army	205
2. American Preparations for the Campaign—France proffers them Assistance	206
3. General Sir Henry Clinton takes the command of the British Army	207
4. Battle of Monmouth or Freehold	209
5. The French Fleet under Admiral d'Estaing anchors off New York	211
6. Rhode Island attacked by the Patriots	212
7. Naval Engagement between Lord Howe and Admiral d'Estaing	213
8. Sullivan withdraws from the Attack on Rhode Island	214
9. Naval Action off Ushant between Keppel and D'Orvillers	215
10. Death of the Elector of Bavaria, and consequent War between Austria and Prussia	218
11. War in India	221
12. War in the West Indies, Dominica, St. Lucia	222
13. War in North America, Wyoming, Newfoundland, Georgia—Capture of Savannah	225

## 1779.

1. General Lincoln arrives to the Defence of Georgia—Affair at Briar Creek	227
2. General Prevost removes the War into Carolina—Affair at Stono Ferry	228
3. Naval War—The French capture the Islands of St. Vincent and Grenada	229

VOL. III.

	PAGE
4. Action between d'Estaing and Byron off Grenada	231
5. The French and Spanish united Fleets enter the British Channel	232
6. Minor Exploits at Sea	233
7. Admiral d'Estaing and General Lincoln lay siege to Savannah, which falls—The French Fleet sails away to France	234
8. Clinton attacks Stony Point on the Hudson, which Washington attempts to retake	236
9. Affairs at Paulus Hook, Newhaven, and Penobscot	237
10. Paul Jones on the Coast of Great Britain	239
11. Spain obtains Advantages over the British in America	240
12. The War in Germany ended by the Peace of Teschen	ib.

## 1780.

1. Rodney defeats the Spanish Fleet off Cape St. Vincent—Gibraltar relieved	241
2. Right of Search—Great Britain seizes seven Dutch Ships and a French Convoy of Merchantmen laden with Military Stores	242
3. War in North America—Clinton takes Charleston—Action at Waxhaw	243
4. Naval Fight between Rodney and De Guichen in the West Indies	245
5. Naval War	247
6. Spanish Successes against the British	249
7. War in North America—Count de Rochambeau with a French Armament arrives at Rhode Island	250
8. War in the Carolinas—Battle of Camden	252
9. General Arnold's Treason	a

	PAGE		PAGE
chery—Fate of Major André . . . . .	255	15. Battle of Eutaw Springs—Stuart against Greene . . . . .	284
10. War in the East Indies—Colonel Egerton capitulates—Colonel Goddard defeats Scindia and Holkar—Gwalior taken by Major Popham . . . . .	257	16. Naval Affair at the Island of St Iago . . . . .	286
11. Hyder Ali defeats Colonel Baillie at Perambucam . . . . .	258	17. Gibraltar relieved by Admiral Darby . . . . .	287
12. Hastings sends Sir Eyre Coote to the Command at Madras—Admiral Hughes destroys Hyder's Fleet off Mangalore . . . . .	260	18. The French and Spaniards besiege Fort St. Philip at Minorca . . . . .	288
13. Death of the Empress Queen, Maria Theresa . . . . .	ib.	19. Naval War . . . . .	289
	1781.	20. Battle off the Dogger Bank between the British and Dutch Fleets . . . . .	ib
1. The French surprise the Isle of Jersey—Death of Major Pierson . . . . .	261	21. The Confederate Fleets of France and Spain enter the British Channel . . . . .	291
2. War in North America—Arnold, now a British Commander, ravages Virginia . . . . .	262	22. Naval War—Admiral Kempenfeldt captures twenty sail of French Transports—Johnstone's Squadron destroys some Dutch East Indiamen at the Cape . . . . .	292
3. Naval Action off the Chesapeake between Arbuthnot and Destouches . . . . .	263	23. The Marquis de Bouillé retakes St. Eustatia and Dutch Guiana . . . . .	293
4. Battle of Cowpens . . . . .	264	24. Elliot makes a successful Sortie from Gibraltar . . . . .	294
5. Battle of Guildford . . . . .	267	25. War in the East Indies—Sir Eyre Coote relieves the Forts besieged by Hyder Ali, and drives off a French Fleet from Pondichery . . . . .	ib
6. Battle of Hobkirk's Hill . . . . .	270	26. Battle of Porto Novo . . . . .	299
7. Lord Rawdon relieves Fort Ninety-Six . . . . .	271	27. Battles of Pollaloe and Sholingui . . . . .	300
8. Lord Cornwallis establishes his Army in York Town . . . . .	273	28. The Dutch Possessions in the Indian Seas captured . . . . .	302
9. Naval War—Capture of the Dutch Island of St Eustatia . . . . .	275		1782.
10. The British and French Fleets sail away for the North American Coast . . . . .	278	1. War in India—Sir Eyre Coote relieves Vellore—Colonel Braithwaite surprised and taken at the Calaroon . . . . .	305
11. Washington assembles his Army to attack York Town . . . . .	ib.	2. Sir Edward Hughes captures Trincomalee . . . . .	307
12. Clinton sends an Expedition which takes Possession of Forts Trumbull and Griswold . . . . .	279	3. First Naval Action between Admirals Hughes and De Suffren off Madras . . . . .	308
13. Surrender of Lord Cornwallis and his Army at York Town . . . . .	280	4. The French take Cuddalore—the last defeat of Hyder at Arnee . . . . .	310
14. Washington despatches a Reinforcement to General Greene in Georgia . . . . .	283		

	PAGE		PAGE
5. Military Character of General Sir Eyre Coote . . . . .	312	14. American War—Captain Asgill's Case—Preliminaries of the Treaty of Independence signed . . . . .	330
Military Character of Hyder Ali . . . . .	313	15. Expeditions against the Bahamas and the British Forts in Hudson's Bay . . . . .	332
6. Second Naval Action between Hughes and De Suffren . . . . .	315	16. War in Europe—Minorca taken by the French . . . . .	333
7. Third Naval Action between Hughes and De Suffren . . . . .	317	17. Naval War . . . . .	334
8. The French Admiral surprises and captures Trincomalee . . . . .	318	18. Elliot's Defence of Gibraltar . . . . .	335
9. Fourth Naval Action between Hughes and De Suffren . . . . .	319	19. Military Character of General Sir George Augustus Elliot, Lord Heathfield . . . . .	345
10. British War with the Marattas concluded . . . . .	320	20. Memoirs of the Duke de Crillon - Mahon—the Chevalier d'Arçon—Marquis La Fayette—Sir Banastie Tarleton . . . . .	346
11. Naval Actions in the West Indies—Hood and De Grasse . . . . .	321	21. Preliminaries of Peace . . . . .	348
12. Island of St. Christopher's besieged and taken by M. de Bouillé . . . . .	323		
13. Great Naval Battle between Rodney and De Grasse . . . . .	324	1783.	
		Peace of Versailles . . . . .	349





# THE WARS

OF

## THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY.

---

1760.

1. NEGOTIATIONS.—2. PREPARATIONS FOR WAR.—3. NUMBERS OF THE COMPETING ARMIES.—4. THE CAMPAIGN COMMENCES BETWEEN THE BRITISH AND FRENCH.—5. WAR IN SAXONY.—6. WAR IN SILESIA.—7. BATTLE OF LANDSHUT.—8. GLATZ BESIEGED AND TAKEN.—9. WAR IN WESTPHALIA—THE FIGHT AT KORBACH.—10. AFFAIR AT EMSDORF.—11. THE FIGHT AT WARBURG.—12. THE KING ATTEMPTS TO RECOVER POSSESSION OF DRESDEN.—13. THE SIEGE OF DRESDEN RAISED.—14. LOUDON BESIEGES BRESLAU.—15. THE KING MARCHES INTO SILESIA.—16. THE BATTLE OF LIEGNITZ.—17. DAUN ORDERED TO INVEST SCHWEIDNITZ.—18. COLBERG SAVED BY GENERAL WERNER.—19. WAR ON THE RHINE—AFFAIR AT KLOSTERCAMP.—20. THE RUSSIANS ADVANCE TO BERLIN AND PLUNDER IT.—21. FREDERICK ADVANCES TO ITS RELIEF.—22. THE BATTLE OF TORGAU.—23. ALL THE ARMIES GO INTO WINTER-QUARTERS.—24. WAR IN INDIA.—25. BATTLE OF WANDEWASH.—26. COUNT LALLY OBTAINS ASSISTANCE FROM HYDER ALI.—27. PONDICHERRY BESIEGED BY GENERAL COOTE.—28. REINFORCEMENTS FROM ENGLAND.—29. ALL THE FRENCH POSSESSIONS IN INDIA SURRENDERED TO THE ENGLISH.—30. MILITARY CHARACTERS OF THE FRENCH COMMANDERS LA BOURDONNAIS, DUPLIX, LALLY, AND BUSBY.—31. WAR IN NORTH AMERICA.—32. THE FRENCH ADVANCE TO QUEBEC.—33. FIGHT AT SILLERI.—34. QUEBEC BESIEGED AND RELIEVED BY THE FLEET.—35. NAVAL WAR.—36. REFLECTIONS.—37. DEATH OF GEORGE THE SECOND OF ENGLAND.

### 1. NEGOTIATIONS.

On the 10th of August, 1759, Ferdinand of Spain died a lunatic, leaving the throne to his half-brother Charles, King of Naples. This

Prince had conceived an early antipathy to England, and was deeply imbued with Bourbon principles and prejudices. Maria Theresa inherited by her kinsman's death just rights to the duchies of Parma and Placentia, and Sardinia also obtained a considerable accession to his dominions on the side of Placentia. Fresh complications were therefore likely to ensue on this contingency, and accordingly the King of Prussia determined to turn the event to his own account, and endeavoured to interest the courts of Madrid and Turin in his favour. The attempt did not succeed, but in the course of it his agents got an inkling of the grand Family Compact which was then in progress, and which was intended to bind all the Bourbon princes in one grand alliance. This was effectively brought about in August, 1761.

The winter was occupied as usual in negotiations, which, as before, had no results. The Kings of England and Prussia offered peace to the Empress of Russia; but other motives besides hatred to Frederick at present influenced the Czarina, and moved her to adhere to Austria, and the treaty between the two courts was in fact renewed for twenty years longer on the 21st of March this year.

## 2. PREPARATIONS FOR WAR.

The enemies of Frederick did not desire at this moment any real advances towards a pacification. The plan of operations of the mighty confederation against the King of Prussia was to drive him to sacrifice either Saxony or Silesia, but each party to it was most anxious for its own interests. The French were desirous that the Russians should besiege Stettin; but Soltikow wished to carry on the war in Pomerania along the sea-coast, and King Augustus, on taking possession of Dantzic, entreated that Saxony might be restored to him as quickly as possible. Austria on the other hand was as solicitous for the reconquest of Silesia. The confederates thought they should at length subdue Frederick from the almost impossibility of his getting a sufficient number of recruits to replace his late serious losses, and they therefore came to the determination of not exchanging prisoners with him. But the activity of the King supplied all his deficiencies. Persuasions, money, and force were alike employed by him, and Frederick succeeded in getting men to enrol themselves in his armies—the Prussian recruiting agents exerting themselves actively all over Germany for this object. The expenses of these proceedings fell with heaviest effect on the unhappy Saxons; for this year Leipsic was obliged to pay two million dollars, Thuringia a million and a half, and the other provinces in proportion. Frederick was an especial adept in the art of raising pecuniary resources. The best woods were cut down, and the timber sold for money to wealthy capitalists; while thousands of horses and fat cattle, and a prodigious quantity of corn were furnished on his requisitions by the Electorate. Frederick laboured with all his might to render his armies serviceable. He undertook to defend Saxony himself, and sent his brother Henry with a large army of observation to watch the Russians: a small corps was also sent against the Swedes. When he had made these arrangements he sent back the hereditary Prince of Brunswick with

the auxiliary force that had been lent him by Prince Ferdinand, to rejoin the allied army in Westphalia.

The plan of the confederated enemies of Prussia for the campaign was as follows:—Soltikow and Loudon at the head of the great Russian and Austrian forces were to conquer Silesia; Marshal Daun and the Duke of Zweybrücken with the Austro-imperial army were to cover Dresden, overrun Saxony, and invade the electoral March of Brandenburg; detached corps under the Duke of Wurtemberg, General Ehrenschwerd, and Count Todleben, were to assist the principal object by particular enterprises.

### 3. NUMBERS OF THE COMPETING ARMIES.

Great Britain and France vied in their endeavours to augment their forces in Germany. On the side of England, preparations, altogether unprecedented in her history, were made to assist her ally. At the opening of the campaign she had sent out twelve regiments of heavy and one of light cavalry, twelve regiments of infantry, and two battalions of Highlanders, with a proportionate supply of artillery, numbering in all 22,000 men, which in the course of the summer was increased to 25,000,—a small army in comparison with the continental ones, but far superior in the quality of the troops and in their equipment and discipline to any of them. The Duke de Broglie, now honoured with the staff of Marshal, commanded the French army, and opened the campaign with an army of 130,000 men, of which 100,000 were to carry on the war in Westphalia, and the remainder formed a separate corps in the Rhine districts under the Count de St. Germain. De Broglie hoped by this means to distract the attention of the allies, but it was in fact a private arrangement made in consequence of the misunderstanding known to exist between the two generals. The insubordination of the French generals, dissatisfied with the duties respectively imposed upon them, was carried at this period to such a pitch as very much to cramp the plans of the general-in-chief, and to delay military operations. The consequence was that Prince Ferdinand had time to collect his forces, which, with the reinforcements from England and the return of the detachment under the hereditary Prince, raised the numbers of his army to nearly 90,000 men. The troops of the Empress Queen had by the repose of the winter recovered from their sufferings and fatigues, and she was now enabled to bring against her redoubtable enemy an Austrian army of 130,000 men: to this must be added the Imperialist force of 20,000, the Russian army of 120,000, and the Swedish of 10,000, amounting in the aggregate to 280,000 effectives. Her magazines were full, her corps complete in every respect, and her troops in perfect order. The king of Prussia had experienced the heaviest blows in the last campaign, and with all his exertions was very ill prepared with the means of healing them. At the opening of the campaign he had barely 90,000 effective men, nor did these bear any similarity to those troops which he had formerly led to victory; but he had the ascendancy of his genius, his greater activity, his enterprise, his never-failing courage, and the conviction that no very great

spirit of cordiality or amity existed amongst his opponents. His loss in officers had been his most serious misfortune, and was almost irreparable. Forty generals had died or been killed since October, 1756, and many more had been wounded and disabled, or become prisoners and disgraced, and this was the case in proportion to every rank below them, which had to be replaced by mere boys. Archenholz, the historian of this war, relates that he himself joined the army and began his campaign at fourteen years of age.

#### 4. THE CAMPAIGN COMMENCES BETWEEN THE BRITISH AND FRENCH.

Notwithstanding the severity of the season, when the thermometer of Reaumur had sunk to fifteen degrees below zero, the allied and French armies were not inactive. On the 1st of January, while the head-quarters of the former remained at Marburg, and those of the latter near Friedberg, Colonel Luckner, of the Hanoverian Jägers, fell in with a detachment of the enemy 400 strong, under Count Muret, and attacked them with such vigour, that the Count and all his detachment (except twenty-two) were slain or made prisoners. On the 3rd the Marquis de Vogue attacked the town of Herborn, which he carried, and took prisoners the detachment of the allies which were posted there. At the same time the Marquis Dauvet made himself master of Dillenburg, driving the allied detachment into the castle, in which they were immediately besieged. On hearing of this enterprise, Prince Ferdinand set off with a strong detachment to its relief, and on the 7th attacked and totally routed the besiegers, and took 700 prisoners, including forty officers, two pieces of cannon, and seven pairs of colours. The Highlanders, under Major Keith, with Luckner's horse, were immediately sent forward from Dillenburg to the village of Eybach, where Beaufremont's regiment was posted, whom they routed with great slaughter. The Highlanders had only just arrived on the Continent, and distinguished themselves on this occasion by their marked intrepidity. On the 8th of February the hereditary Prince returned from Frederick's army, and all parties took up their cantonments again.

#### 5. WAR IN SAXONY.

In April Marshal Daun still occupied his position at Pirna, preventing any advance on Dresden, on the left bank of the Elbe, while Count Lacy covered the right bank. Opposite to them was the King in person in a strong position at Katzenhauser, between Meissen and Nossen. He had given all his generals to understand that he designed this year to act by forced marches more than formerly, and the troops were to be exhorted to bear with patience these severe demands upon their physical energies for the honour of the Prussian name. His first object was to attack Lacy. He accordingly quitted his quarters on the 21st, leaving Hulsén in command, and passing the Elbe at Jehren, alarmed Lacy, who fell back on Dresden. Daun, however, remained in his camp till the 1st of June. Prince Henry had assembled his army, consisting of forty-four battalions and sixty-four squadrons, near Sagan to check the advance of the Russians, and

advanced as far as Landsberg. The Russian army had been collected in May, and was by the beginning of June fully assembled at Posen. On the 28th of January the Swedes had surprised General Manteufel in the night-time at Anklam, and notwithstanding that they were driven back with great loss, the General himself missed his way in the dark and fell into their hands.

#### 6. WAR IN SILESIA.

While these evolutions were taking place elsewhere, affairs assumed an unfavourable aspect in Silesia. This province was but weakly provided with defence, for the King had contented himself with strengthening the different garrisons. The Prussian General, Fouquet, was encamped for its protection near Landshut, on a number of hills which he had intrenched. In consequence of the increasing strength of Loudon's corps opposed to him, his position became dangerous, and he ventured some earnest representations to be permitted to change it. Frederick, however, would not permit it, but gave him nineteen battalions and eighteen squadrons to do the best he could there, and accordingly he took a position near Würben, whence he subsequently retreated to Breslau to cover that town.

General Goltz was encamped in Upper Silesia with a small detachment which Loudon endeavoured to surprise. He took with him four regiments of cavalry, and by a forced march got to Neustadt just as the Prussians were leaving it with more than 100 waggons. He now sent forward an officer to demand a surrender on a promise of allowing them their lives and baggage. The officer in command replied that the men should give their own answer; then taking the aide-de-camp to their front he asked the men what answer they would send; "That we will see them — first," was the reply in good Plat-Deutsch. The order was in consequence immediately given to advance. The Löwenstein dragoons attacked the advanced guard whilst the Palfy cuirassiers fell upon the rear, and two regiments of hussars upon the flanks. Goltz at the same time opened upon Loudon's cavalry such a storm of grape that they were driven back, and all their efforts were unavailing; the Prussians sustained several charges and then retreated in an oblong square; and Goltz continuing his march, though Loudon repeated his attacks, reached in safety the vicinity of Neisse, where he took up his quarters. Goltz, however, having been thus obliged to quit the province of Upper Silesia, Loudon advanced to Glatz and invested it. Instructions were accordingly issued to Fouquet to take post again near Landshut, which it was necessary the enemy should possess in order to besiege Glatz with effect. These instructions were characteristic of Frederick; he wrote to Fouquet, "I am devilishly obliged to you for abandoning my mountains; get me my mountains again, cost what it will." Fouquet found some Austrians in his old quarters, but regained possession of the mountains, encamping on the Blasdorf heights towards Mount Memmel, and occupying Landshut at the same time, which was too extensive a ground for his army to cover, for his whole force was only 10,680 soldiers; while Loudon,

talling in General Beak to join him, and collecting other reinforcements, was at the head of forty-two battalions of infantry, forty companies of grenadiers, and seventy-six squadrons, amounting in all to 31,000 men.

#### 7. BATTLE OF LANDSHUT.

On the 23rd of June, therefore, Loudon resolved to attack the Prussians in their intrenched camp in the mountains on five different points. At two in the morning the enemy's artillery was heard moving, and deserters made known to Fouquet that he was about to be attacked. At the signal of four howitzers fired by the Austrians, the engagement commenced, and all the five columns advanced. General Wolfersdorf directed his attack on the extreme left along the river Bober by Reichhennersdorf. General Jahnus advanced on the other side of this village, and the Count de Geiss still more to his right near the village of Zeider. Major-General Muffling overwhelmed the scattered Prussian troops on the height of Buch, and drove them into Nieder-Zieder, whilst Loudon placed his cavalry on the other side of the Bober behind Landshut to cut off the retreat of Fouquet upon Schweidnitz and Breslau. The heights and forts of Memmel, Buch, and Blasdorf were in this way carried, after a vigorous defence from the five battalions that guarded them.

At this period of the action Loudon summoned the Prussian commander, as in a fortified town, to surrender. Fouquet replied by a discharge of all his guns, and withdrew into the two remaining redoubts of Kirchenberg and Galgenberg, between Landshut and Breitenau, which covered a passage across the Bober. When these intrenchments were carried he formed his men into a square and continued fighting, defending himself with the greatest bravery until completely surrounded, when, with their ammunition exhausted, they were compelled to surrender after fighting for eight hours. Fouquet, however, attempted to cut his way through at the head of his cavalry, but his horse was killed, and he fell to the ground himself also dangerously wounded. The Austrian cavalry now rushed upon him and cut down the brave men who had flocked round their chief to defend him, when Colonel Voit of the dragoons hearing Fouquet's servant exclaim, "Will you kill the commanding general?" rescued him and carried him prisoner to General Loudon. The Colonel had his horse brought to him and asked Fouquet to mount; but he hesitated and said, "I shall spoil your beautiful saddle with my blood." Voit replied, "It will become far more valuable to me from bearing the marks of a hero's blood." The Prussian cavalry who had charged with their General were dispersed, but about 1500 men made good their retreat by Neumarkt to Breslau, where they joined General Ziethen, who upon this threw a garrison into Schweidnitz and retreated.

Frederick, usually so severe in his remarks on his unsuccessful generals, was more indulgent to Fouquet. He says, "Far from this disaster doing any prejudice to the reputation of this brave man, which had been so long and so solidly established, it has raised and

rendered it more conspicuous, by giving an example of what valour and firmness can do against numbers however superior." The fight was all over by eight in the morning; 4000 Prussians had been slain, and the remainder threw down their arms, except the few who had escaped to Breslau; fifty-eight pieces of artillery and a number of colours were the trophies of the victory. The Austrians lost about 8000 killed and wounded, but Loudon cast a stain on his personal glory by giving up Landshut, which was not a fortified town, to pillage. The barbarities and outrages committed on this occasion by the Austrians against poor people who could offer no resistance were dreadful; "nothing was spared by them but misery and ugliness."

#### 8. GLATZ BESIEGED AND TAKEN.

These reverses were followed by the fall of Glatz. This fortress consists of two citadels, the old and the new. In importance to the Prussian dominions this place was next to Magdeburg, and was well provided with stores of provision and ammunition, but had only a garrison of 2400, mostly deserters and foreigners, and was most unaccountably placed under the government of an Italian, Bartolommeo d'O, a colonel in the Prussian service. General Harsch was ordered to lay siege to it, and on the 20th of July Dreskowitz assaulted and carried the upper fort; the Prussian garrison then abandoned it at once, and it was taken possession of by a few Croats. Six days after the opening of the trenches the principal works were stormed. The Commandant is supposed, in conjunction with the garrison, to have betrayed the place. A mutiny was got up, during which whole companies threw down their arms, and on the 26th of July, in four hours the whole town and fortifications were in the hands of the Austrians, when Loudon himself was present in the trenches.

Frederick cashiered all the officers of the garrison; and Colonel d'O, after the peace, was tried and condemned to die, but at the place of execution received a commutation of his sentence to imprisonment. It was thought that the Austrians had had an understanding with the Jesuits and monks in the city, who had besides other things been embittered against the Prussians, for hanging a Franciscan father who had not acquainted the authorities with the intended desertion of a Prussian soldier made known to him through confession; and the King himself remarks on the surrender of Glatz, "This disgraceful event to the Prussian arms was the consequence of a negotiation which M. de Loudon had been carrying on for some time through the means of the Jesuits." The possession of Glatz laid all Silesia open, and the province was now undefended by any Prussian army, so that Loudon could choose on which side to turn his arms, as there was no sort of obstruction to him on either hand.

#### 9. WAR IN WESTPHALIA—THE FIGHT AT KORBACH.

In consequence of the French having made demonstrations of

intending an invasion of Hanover, Duke Ferdinand was desirous of attacking as soon as he received reinforcements, and commenced operations for that purpose. On the 24th of June he quitted his position at Fritlar, and marching to Frielendorf, there encamped. General Imhoff commanded the right wing, and the hereditary Prince, falling back from Fulda, occupied the left. On the 28th the Duke de Broglie occupied a strong post at Wassenburg. His intention was to penetrate through the country of Hesse into Hanover. With this view he directed M. de St. Germain to join him near Korbach, and he himself advanced to Frankenburg. On receiving intelligence of these movements, Brunswick on the 9th of July occupied the heights of Brunau, near Wildungen; and the hereditary Prince at the head of his own corps, reinforced with some English battalions and squadrons under Major-General Griffin, marching to Sachsenhausen, found himself suddenly in presence of the enemy at Korbach, and resolved to give them battle.

About two in the afternoon of the 10th of July the engagement began. De Broglie at first retired; but discovering the weakness of the force opposed to him, he soon ordered M. de St. Germain to return to the attack. The action soon became very warm and obstinate. The Prince had received no advice of the junction of the two French armies, and thought he had to do but with the corps of M. de St. Germain, and only with his vanguard. As soon as he discovered his mistake he sent back to Duke Ferdinand for reinforcements to sustain him, who sent him instead an order to rejoin his army forthwith at Sachsenhausen, where the main army had arrived. The Prince forthwith made dispositions for a retreat; but the difficulty of drawing an inferior force out of the field in the presence of an enemy quite fresh and continually reinforced, and in the middle of the day, may be well imagined. In the manœuvre some of his troops fell into confusion, which the enemy observing, they brought forward some guns and plied them well with cannon-ball, and advanced a body of cavalry who charged with great vigour. In this exigency the hereditary Prince put himself at the head of Bland's and Howard's regiments of British dragoons, who seconded the heroism of their young and dashing leader, and acted with their accustomed gallantry and effect. Their onset stopped the career of the French victorious horse and enabled the infantry to rally, who now made good their retreat to Sachsenhausen. The Prince himself was wounded, and had lost in the fight 500 men left dead on the field, together with seven cannon and three howitzers; but, in spite of this loss, he gained great credit both from friend and foe for the decision and promptitude of his measures, by which he had been enabled to escape a complete defeat.

#### 10. AFFAIR AT EMSDORF.

The spirit of the young Prince chafed at the mortification of having been driven back; and he was scarcely recovered from his wound when seven days after, on the 16th, he received advice that a French detachment commanded by General Glaubitx was advancing



to Ziegenhain, a place of importance in the landgravate of Hesse. He accordingly took with him six battalions and some cavalry, to which was subsequently added a British regiment newly arrived, who had never seen any kind of service, called Elliott's Light Horse. Glaubenitz was resting in the most perfect security, in no sort of expectation that there was any enemy within sixty miles, when he suddenly found himself attacked by General Luckner in front and the Prince in the rear, in his camp between Emsdorf and Exdorf. The French had scarcely time to form, when a very warm action ensued, and they were driven back with the loss of some 500 men towards Niederlein; but the Prince, placing himself at the head of Elliott's Light Horse, charged them as they retreated five different times, and separated the entire corps into small detachments. A regiment of hussars was cut to pieces, and for a time the slaughter was terrible; in the end General Glaubenitz, the Prince of Köthen, 179 officers, and 2182 men laid down their arms; and six pieces of cannon, with nine pairs of colours, together with all the camp equipage, became a prize to the conquerors.

Of all the smart affairs of this campaign (and the contest between the British and French was wholly made up of such) this was by far the most brilliant, and added greatly to the reputation of the Prince. A great share of the honour fell upon Elliott's Light Horse, whose casualties were by far the larger proportion of the loss. On the other hand, De Broglie had very nearly succeeded in cutting off General Spörcken with his Hanoverian division, but was prevented by a rapid march, which brought him within reach of support, and he entered the camp on the 15th in safety. But the increasing misunderstandings and jealousies which existed between the French commanders were their most fatal misfortune, and disconcerted all their promised plans of co-operation. The reigning Duke of Wurtemberg, not being willing to serve under the orders of Prince Xavier of Saxony, the brother of the Dauphiness, left the French service with all his contingent. The Count de St. Germain, one of their most able generals, sent in his resignation, and retiring altogether from the service of France entered that of Denmark. The Count de Luc and the Marquis de Voyer also withdrew from the army at this time. The Chevalier de Muy was placed in the command vacated by St. Germain, and was now ordered to cross the Diemel and to threaten the communications of the allies with Westphalia.

#### 11. THE FIGHT AT WARBURG.

Duke Ferdinand, therefore, leaving General Kielmansegge with a body of troops for the defence of Cassel, passed the river on the 30th of July without loss near Gibenau. De Broglie encamped the same day at Zieremberg, and De Muy's corps near Warburg. The hereditary Prince observing that these two divisions were too distant from each other, sent to apprise the Duke, who selected M. de Muy as his antagonist, and forthwith marched to attack him.

The Chevalier occupied an advantageous camp between Warburg and Ochsendorf, and the hereditary Prince and General Spörcken

were ordered to turn the enemy's flanks, while Brunswick attacked in front from the heights of Korbach. It was on the 31st of July, at about five in the morning, that the several columns were put in motion. About half-past one Spörcken came up with his division and instantly attacked. About the same time the hereditary Prince came up with the enemy, and having formed two lines under Generals Dossel and Grimbach, advanced upon the left flank, while Colonel Huth of the artillery immediately mounted three batteries, each consisting of four 12-pounders, which took the enemy in flank and rear. Colonel Beckwith with 100 grenadiers, marching with Spörcken's column, attained a height in the French rear, which was immediately attacked, but two English battalions arriving successively maintained the position for a considerable time, until at length De Muy brought up three fresh brigades, when they would have been obliged to retire, but that at this critical moment one of the batteries opened, and some Hanoverian battalions came up, so that the heights were maintained. Duke Ferdinand all this time was advancing against the front of the enemy; but finding that he could not get forward fast enough with his infantry on account of the heat, he sent off to Lord Granby and Lord Mostyn to bring up the British cavalry, with Captain Philip's brigade of artillery, which were posted on the other side of a large wood nearly two leagues distant. The French cavalry were pressing hard upon the advancing columns, when Lord Granby arrived with these troops at speed and fell upon them, and they retreated before the British; three squadrons, who formed the rear-guard, held their ground, but these were broken by the onset; and Philip's artillery opened at the same time upon them with such precision and effect, that nothing could stand against them. The French got across the Diemel, but their retreat was very disorderly. The French infantry were then assaulted; the hereditary Prince brought up two battalions of English grenadiers and two of Highlanders, under General Waldegrave; but though they were unwilling to be outdone and made the most earnest efforts to get into action, they arrived on the field too late. In these exertions, however, a great many soldiers fell down with heat and fatigue. The French, finding themselves so hard pressed, retired precipitately across the river, in endeavouring to ford which many were drowned. Lord Granby was ordered to follow them with twelve battalions and ten squadrons, and he passed the Diemel and encamped the same night upon the heights of Wilda. The French lost in this affair about 5000 men, with twelve guns and ten stands of colours. The loss of the allies did not exceed 1200 men, of which full one-half were British. M. de Muy retired to Volk-Missen, and next day to Wolfshagen.

Duke Ferdinand gained much reputation by this affair, but on quitting Kalle to take post on the Diemel, he exposed Cassel, into which country Prince Xavier forthwith advanced, and his corps was too powerful for Kielmansegge to resist. Thus while the allies were triumphant at Warburg, the towns of Minden, Cassel, Göttingen, Einbeck, and Ziegenhain, where was a field hospital, were taken by the French, and Hameln was now threatened, but Luckner

appeared in time to stop their progress, and took some prisoners. Had Duke Ferdinand permitted M. de Muy to pursue his course to the north of the Diemel, nothing could have prevented the French from again entering the Hanoverian dominions on the right of the Weser, by which the allies would have lost the course of that river and have been very much straitened for their supplies. He now continued to hold the position at Warburg for nearly a month after the battle. Though De Broglie had an immense superiority of force, he dared not venture another battle in consequence of the discontent that prevailed in his army. He therefore contented himself with fortifying Göttingen, and securing himself by intrenchments near Cassel. It was extremely difficult for him, however, to get the necessary sustenance for so large an army in these exhausted provinces. Prince Ferdinand's light troops were so active that they cut off continually the supplies of the French, and destroyed their magazines, whence it had become necessary to employ from 15,000 to 20,000 men to cover the parties that were always out, so as to procure even forage for the horses of their cavalry.

#### 12. THE KING ATTEMPTS TO RECOVER POSSESSION OF DRESDEN.

Frederick received the intelligence of Fouquet's defeat with very natural agitation, and for a moment his firmness forsook him, when striking his forehead he exclaimed, "Such disasters happen to me alone." Under such an accumulation of reverses he was in a state of great anxiety with respect to Silesia, but at the same time he could not leave Daun and his army in Saxony. He soon, however, recovered all his magnanimity, and brought his genius to enter the lists with his ill fortune. In the midst of his calamities he resolved upon a stroke, which, from its unexpectedness and daring, should baffle all the calculations of his enemies and confound their concerted measures. This was to draw Marshal Daun out of his stronghold, and to open to his army a direct passage to Dresden itself.

On the 2nd of July, in pursuance of his plan, the King suddenly broke up from his strong camp, leaving General Hulsen to show front to the army of the Empire, and on the 4th at an early hour he crossed the Elbe near Marschwitz: he then marched to Quetsdorf. No sooner had Daun heard of this than he detached Lacy to watch him, he himself continuing in his camp near Reichenberg. Lacy marched to Lichtenstein, but as soon as he learned the rapidity of the King's movements he apprised Daun, who resolved to anticipate his Majesty in his march, and hasten to reach Silesia before him. Both armies now appeared to be pushing for the same object, but the Austrians marched along the chord, and the Prussians along the arc of the bow, the road from Meissen to Bunzlau being two days shorter than that from Dresden. The heat was so intense, that on the 6th of July 105 Prussian soldiers fell to the ground killed by the heat, while in Daun's army 300 of his men fell sick, and 200 died in one day from the extremes of heat and cold to which they were exposed. All were anxious to procure water, which they were not permitted to have

from the state of perspiration they were in, but thirst got the better of the fear of punishment, and the officers feeling the same desire, were forced to be more lax in discipline than on ordinary occasions. When the unfortunate soldiers came to a stream, a spring, a pond, or a pool, they rushed at it regardless of blows and words of command, till they had slaked their thirst. Marshal Daun arrived at Görlitz on the 7th. As soon as the King was apprised of this, and that he was thus full two days' march ahead of him, he saw his purpose obtained, and suddenly wheeling round put himself on Marshal Daun's track in the opposite direction, and repassed the Spree near Bautzen. Lacy having all this time hung on his rearguard, Frederick determined to attack him, but he retired too soon for the accomplishment of this design and hastened back to Dresden, the King encamping the same day near Reichenberg. His Majesty had already ordered a battering train and ammunition for the siege of Dresden, to be conveyed from Magdeburg, and before Daun had discovered the machinations of Frederick, the latter had by means of Hulsen and Ziethen's corps invested the place on the 14th. He opened his trenches in form from both sides of the Elbe, he himself on one side, and the Prince of Holstein on the other. Dresden was at this time defended by General Maquire with 14,000 men, who, when summoned to surrender, refused. The Austrians were readily driven out of the royal gardens and the suburbs, and had the town been stormed at this critical moment, it must have surrendered. The King, however, preferred to rely for success on his exciting the apprehensions of the King of Poland; and before the breaching batteries were in position he made such use of the 12-pounders and howitzers with his army, by pouring red-hot shot upon the devoted town, that many of the finest palaces were broken down, whole streets were wrapped in flames, and the wretched inhabitants fled in crowds from the burning city, leaving all their household goods unguarded, at the mercy of the licentious soldiery of either army. Some guns were directed against the tower of the Kreuz-Kirche, which soon became a mass of flames; several other churches met the same fate, and the noble manufactory of porcelain, so long the pride and wealth of this luxurious capital, was almost annihilated. But all these expedients were ineffectual to move the stout heart of Governor Maquire to embrace articles of capitulation. He still held out valiantly, though the Duke of Zweybrucken would not stir from his intrenched position to aid him, and it was not till the 19th of July that Daun returned to his relief. On that day 1400 shells and balls were thrown into the city, every part of it was on fire, and it was impossible for the besieged to extinguish the flames in consequence of the pipes that supplied water having been cut off by the besiegers.

### 18. SIEGE OF DRESDEN RAISED.

In spite of all Frederick's exertions, a reinforcement of 12,000 men was immediately thrown into the place, and in order to terminate the siege an attempt was now resolved upon, in conjunction with the army of the Empire, to surprise the army of the King which protected the

besiegers, and as his Majesty's head-quarters were known to be at the village of Gruna, they flattered themselves that they might take the King himself prisoner. The attack was to have been made at day-break; the light troops of the Austrians advanced, drove back the outposts, and the King had in truth only just time to mount his horse and get out of the village; but this was the extent of their progress. The Prussians got under arms to oppose the enemy with incredible celerity, so that in three minutes men asleep in their tents, and all in complete repose, were aroused by the cry to arm, and were in order of battle in a moment. They rushed out of their tents without minding their dress, formed their ranks and advanced against the attackers, who withdrew in all haste. Every day, however, it became more evident that the siege operations would result in a failure. The besieged made frequent sallies. Daun lay unexpectedly quiet till the 21st, when the Austrians constructed bridges to pass the Elbe, but it was the 27th before they crossed the river. They got possession, however, at this time of a considerable convoy from Magdeburg, intended for the besieging army, and at the same time Frederick heard from the Austrian General, Nugent, who had been taken prisoner in a sortie, that Glatz had surrendered on the 26th. His dismay at this intelligence was very great, from his opinion of the strength of the place. "Well, be it so," he said, "we must therefore go into Silesia, that all may not be lost." Accordingly, on the night of the 30th of July, amidst storm and rain, the Prussians withdrew from their trenches before Dresden, and the King quitted his camp and marched towards Meissen. Thus ended, without the success it deserved, the King's famous stratagem, but the want of success does not detract from the wisdom of the attempt. To draw his adversary out of a strong position, to gain eight days free of all obstruction from him, and to have nearly gained possession of Dresden by his skilful forecast and use of his time, was an enterprise worthy of the King of Prussia's reputation, and deserving of success; and though it failed, he was precisely in his former condition and free to act as before.

#### 14. LOUDON BESIEGES BRESLAU.

After the capture of Glatz Loudon had marched to invest Breslau. The King's body-guard, which had been cut all to pieces at Kollin, had their head-quarters in this capital, and had been again completed to 1000 men, under their Colonel, Tauenzien, who was now commandant of the garrison, numbering 3000 men; but two-thirds of these were deserters and impressed soldiers on whom he could place no reliance; besides which, he had in the place 9000 Austrian prisoners, ready to break loose, and General Loudon was before it with a victorious army of 50,000 men. The German armies at this time were but ill provided with the means of carrying on a siege, and had the reputation of being but indifferent engineers. The Austrians before Breslau were unprovided with the necessary battering train and ammunition for a siege, and the fortifications being secured with a wet ditch, precluded the hope of obtaining it by storm. Nothing therefore remained to the Austrian General but to try the effect of negotia-

tion and intimidation. He accordingly summoned the place to surrender upon these reasons, "That Breslau was a commercial town and not a fortress, and that it was contrary to the usage of war to defend it, when the King was on the other side of the Elbe, and Prince Henry near the Wartha: that in two days a Russian army, 75,000 strong, would appear before the town, and that he thought they would prefer falling into the hands of the Austrians to those of the Russians; that the garrison should now have liberty to regulate their own terms, but that if they determined to resist he could set the town on fire from forty-five mortars." Tauenzien was shrewd enough to see in these menaces the apprehension of the Austrian commander that he should not be able to take the place, and he replied that "Breslau was a fortress, and that the King, his master, had commanded him to defend it to the last extremity; that he knew the works admitted of a good defence, and that he would meet the enemy on the ramparts even if the town were reduced to ashes." Loudon now strove to stir up a revolt amongst the inhabitants through Conradi, the president of the magistrates, to whom he sent a letter, pointing out the terrible consequences of a bombardment; but such a communication was not likely to have much effect in a town that was governed by Tauenzien, and it remained unanswered. The bombardment accordingly commenced. Loudon opened his batteries and poured in a storm of bombs and red-hot shot; after lasting several hours it set fire to the palace, and the General thinking he had now occasioned sufficient alarm, again summoned the town; increasing his threats by adding "That the child in its mother's womb should not be spared." Tauenzien answered, "That he was happy to say neither he nor any of his soldiers were pregnant, to take alarm at this." Every judicious measure was adopted to lessen the effect of the fire, and at length it was discovered that Loudon's head-quarters could be reached by loading the large culverins with extra charges; one of these, in fact, threw a shot which obliged Loudon to remove further off. The Governor, however, knew his own weakness, and he accordingly called together the officers of the body-guard, to whom he stated his fears of the result of the siege, unless succour should arrive in time. He also informed them that in any case he could not be a witness of such an ignominious spectacle as seeing the whole of the King's body-guard prisoners to the enemy, and that he therefore had resolved to station himself with all that would stand by him in one of the bastions, and there defend themselves to the last, shooting themselves rather than surrender. The officers all agreed to this noble proposal, and the whole regiment determined to die fighting.

Prince Henry had marched his army into Poland to oppose the advance of the Russian army, but as this had postponed its march till the 26th he resolved, as soon as he heard of the surrender of Glatz, to pass the Oder near Glogau and advance to Breslau: by a rapid march he fortunately reached it on the 5th of August, when Loudon immediately raised the siege and marched to Striegau. Prince Henry need such expedition to effect this object that he marched 120 English miles in five days, and this rapid advance not only saved the

town, but the whole province, for the Russian army was within a march of joining with the Austrians, and actually arrived near the town on the evening of the 8th, when, hearing of Loudon's retreat, they took up an encampment at Wiegelsdorf. Affairs were now fast leading to a crisis, when, to the grief of Frederick, his brother Henry, one of the most accomplished generals that the age produced, was seized with despondency, and giving way to gloomy prognostics, asked leave from his head-quarters at Lissa to be allowed to resign his command. "It is not difficult," replied the King, "to serve the state when it is prosperous and flourishing. My affairs will, according to all appearances, be decided in a few days. Superior numbers do not frighten me, still I cannot answer for the result." The King had, moreover, at this moment gained a remarkable advantage; he had destroyed the plan of operations by which the Austrians and Russians were to have acted, and Prince Henry had been a material agent in this work; he therefore set himself to the task of appeasing his brother, who was happily persuaded to relinquish his intention of retiring from the army.

#### 15. THE KING MARCHES INTO SILESIA.

From the time that the King of Prussia found himself compelled to raise the siege of Dresden it was evident that Saxony was no longer the field for him, and that his fate seemed to have indeed reached a crisis. Though Prince Henry had obliged Loudon to retire from Breslau, that able general, so lately victorious, was still formidable; he still kept Neisse and Schweidnitz closely blocked up, and looked to effect a junction with the Russian army, and thus give a final blow to Frederick's power in Silesia. When Soltikow arrived at Breslau he was thunderstruck at finding a Prussian force there instead of an Austrian one, as he had been led to expect. Having reckoned that on the taking of Breslau he might provide his army with provisions from its large magazines during the remainder of the campaign, he now suspected the sincerity and good faith of his new allies, and sent off to Marshal Daun to give him to understand in very decided terms that he should immediately retire unless the Russian force was strengthened by the corps of Marshal Loudon, and that he would at once withdraw to Poland if the King should cross the Oder. This solemn declaration and threat induced Daun to relinquish his system of procrastination, and no longer to hesitate about engaging the enemy.

The King of Prussia had but two armies to act with, and it was necessary for his safety that at least one of them should make rapid and sudden movements to oppose successfully the many combinations that might be formed against him. Frederick had nothing now to oppose to superior numbers but superior activity, of which he resolved again to avail himself without delay. Silesia was in imminent danger of being taken from him by the junction of the Austrian and Russian armies. The King, therefore, directed his course thither without delay. He marched his army some 200 miles with such rapidity that Marshal Daun, who had considerably the start of him, was last

far behind. He passed five rivers, the Elbe, the Spree, the Neisse, the Queiss, and the Bober, with a considerable army, accompanied by a numerous artillery and above 2000 waggons—and this at a time when one body of the enemy hung upon his front, another on his rear, and a third on his flank. Such a march even of a detachment of light troops would have rendered it questionable, but with a whole army could only have been justified by the most urgent necessity. He hoped to have been able by this means to bring Loudon to action before the triple union he apprehended made his enemies irresistible. On the 3rd of August he commenced this hazardous march; but when on the 10th he arrived at Liegnitz, he found Daun, Loudon, and Lacy, all three united, occupying all the ground between Parchwitz and Cossendau, in a position along the Katzbach, extending little less than thirty English miles. Frederick attempted in vain for several days, by various devices, to detach one body of the enemy from the rest, and to turn their flanks, or attack them under any advantage. But the nature of the ground and the skill of the generals rendered abortive all the suggestions of his ingenuity. For example—on the 11th the King marched in the night on Jauer, with a view to get round the enemy; but at break of day, when he arrived in front of Lacy's corps at Praunitz and passed the Katzbach to attack, this general made so skilful a movement to effect a junction with Daun, that he baffled the King completely. Soltikow with his Russian army displayed some unwillingness to cross the Oder; nevertheless advices were now received that another Russian corps of 24,000 men under Czernichew had thrown bridges over that river at Auras, and the King clearly saw that the plan was to close him in on every side, and attack him in a surprise with all these forces united. By whatever means Frederick became suspicious of this design (and troops which have been long opposed reciprocally guess each other's plans by the least movements), it is certain that he took the earliest, the most vigorous, and the most effective measures to defeat it. Marshal Daun did indeed design to repeat the game he had played at Hochkirchen, and to storm the King's camp at break of day, but the Prussian monarch had already quitted it with his whole army. On the night between the 14th and 15th of August, he was already out of the toils from which it was thought he could not escape, and under cover of the darkness, and with the utmost privacy, was in full march.

#### 16. THE BATTLE OF LIEGNITZ.

It was a beautiful summer's night, brilliant with stars, when at nightfall he quitted the camp with his army, leaving the ordinary lights and fires to be maintained by the peasants, and some hussars to keep up the night-call of the sentinels. The same *ruse de guerre* was in truth going on in the Austrian camp, who were also in motion, both parties striving to deceive the other. The King passed his army through Liegnitz, and drew up upon the heights of Pfaffendorf. It was about three in the morning; the whole of the troops who had slept under arms during the brief interval



allowed for repose, awaited the break of day with the utmost impatience. Frederick had lain down by the camp fire, and had just fallen asleep, when Major Hund rode in to say that the enemy's columns were in motion, and were already within 4000 yards of the camp. Frederick would scarcely believe him; but at length he discovered that Loudon had marched the evening before from his camp at Gerkendorf, and had advanced by Brunowitz. The King had patrols always out to inform him of his enemy's movements, and instantly to report their approach. He thus learned that the Austrian General had already passed the Katzbach, near Parchwitz, and as day broke he saw to his surprise the whole Imperial army in order, advantageously posted, and furnished with a numerous and well-placed artillery. Loudon had calculated on coming suddenly on his enemy, and to keep his march more secret had dispensed with any advanced guard.

The General therefore eagerly pressed forward to attack the Prussians, rejoicing in the distinguished share assigned to him of crushing the redoubtable Frederick; but he was not a little astonished and mortified to find himself caught in his own snare, for he was now forced to stand the engagement, and had advanced too far to recede. "Friends," said he to his soldiers, "I see that we have only ourselves to depend on; follow me." The King before daybreak, on the approach of Loudon, slightly altered his position, and deploying his columns placed the line in order of battle between Hamel and Panten, and taking Schenkendorf with him pointed out a small height that he wished to be occupied with artillery to prevent the army from being outflanked. Schenkendorf immediately mounted twelve guns there, and had scarcely done so when the enemy appeared. While these things were in progress the King rode along the line to animate his troops, and superintending every division himself; he gave orders to his troops to form with all possible expedition, and forthwith prepared for the fight. The thunder of the guns "opened the ball" on both sides; the Austrian cavalry came quickly down upon that of the Prussians, but the latter valiantly maintained their ground, and after a sharp struggle drove back the Imperialists from the field. The Prussian cavalry now rushed upon the enemy's lines and made many prisoners. Still Loudon was so superior to the King in numbers, having 35,000 to 12,000, that he was able to send fresh troops perpetually into action; on the other hand, although the Prussians effectually repulsed every attack, their ranks were every moment more and more thinned. Loudon's cavalry now charged the Prussian infantry, and it was on this occasion that the Bernberg regiment regained its lost honour. Charging the cavalry with fixed bayonets, they actually pushed the riders from their horses, and drove them all before them in wild confusion. Schenkendorf with his field battery now opened a heavy fire; but Loudon, depending on the support of the Commander-in-chief, kept the Prussians at bay stoutly. He tried to gain the village of Panten, which lay on the right and in front of the Prussian line; but it was set on fire by the Prussian howitzers, and he was forced to collect his infantry, and now with some fresh battalions attempted to gain the Prussian left flank, but the attempt was here again frustrated. His hopes of receiving

assistance from the Marshal failed him; for it was not until late that Daun knew of the attack of the King; his troops, in fact, did not hear the cannonade in consequence of the wind not being favourable. Loudon therefore, having done everything in his power to force back the enemy, was obliged to withdraw his army. The whole battle lasted only two hours; and thus by the hour when people in the rest of the civilized world were stirring from their beds, a battle had been fought which had been stoutly contested and nobly won; 6000 Austrians were taken prisoners, 4000 were killed and wounded, and eighty-two cannon, and many standards, were the trophies of the field. Daun had with great caution early in the morning made his approaches to the old Prussian camp, and to his astonishment had found no enemy there; but as soon as he comprehended the intentions of the King, he followed the Prussian Army through the deserted camps, and despatched Lacy to attack the right wing of Frederick's army. In order to effect this, he was obliged to cross the marshy Schwartzwasser, which discharged itself near Liegnitz into the Katzbach, and sheltered the Prussian position on the right side. There was but a single bridge by which to cross it, and Ziethen watched it so well, that as soon as he saw the heads of the Austrian columns cross it he opened the fire of the Prussian artillery upon them, and they fled in hot haste in all directions. Daun was now indeed undecided how to act; he did not know what had happened to Loudon; but the stiffness of the Prussians, whom he had come up with, satisfied him that he must have been defeated; and after long indecision he formed a plan to attack the King's camp in front, while Lacy took it in the rear. In the evening, therefore, he occupied the suburbs of Liegnitz, crossed the Katzbach, and at dusk attacked the village of Schimmelwitz, but to his surprise found it abandoned. The Marshal then detached Prince Löwenstein and General Beck with the reserve of his army to join Prince Czernichew at Auras; but this Prince was so intimidated by the defeat at Liegnitz, that he had repassed the Oder, consequently Prince Lowenstein fell back on Jauer. The victor did not forget the good service and gallant conduct of the Bernberg regiment. As Frederick rode down the line after the battle, he called out gaily to the regiment as he passed it, "Children, I thank you; you have done your duty bravely, right bravely, you shall have something back." The fugleman, an old veteran, stepped out of the ranks, and addressing the King replied, "I thank your Majesty in the name of my comrades for having done us justice and restored our rights. Your Majesty is a most gracious king." "Every thing is forgotten, and every thing shall be forgotten except this day," said the King, with tears in his eyes, and he made the spokesman a sergeant on the spot. After the parade the soldiers gathered round the King and conversed freely with him, defending their conduct at Dresden with a freedom that alarmed the commanding officer, who, fearing the King's displeasure, ordered them to their quarters; but this Frederick would not permit, and he then dismissed them, saying they were brave fellows, and an honour to the Prussian army. Frederick's influence on the hearts of the soldiers was mainly

attributable to the familiarity with which he entered into all their feelings, and the consequence was that his soldiers continually talked with him, addressing him by the name of "Fritz," or the pet name of "Old Fritz." On one occasion his troops owing to weariness were relaxing the military precision of the march. The King coming up, exclaimed, "Recht, Kinder, recht!" "Richtig, Fritz, richtig," replied the men.

The Prussian monarch had thus not only escaped the imminent hazard of a defeat under great disproportion of numbers, but he had also prevented the dreaded junction of the Austrian and Russian forces, and his business now was to open a communication with Breslau, and with his brother Prince Henry. The King marched in the afternoon of the battle to Parchwitz, and on the 16th of August united himself with his brother's division at Neumarkt. The Prince, after he had obliged Loudon to relinquish the investment of Breslau, had kept a watchful eye on the Russians, who were still in the neighbourhood, and would have doubtless advanced to bombard it, but for some redoubts thrown up by him. But Czernichew as well as Soltikow had now repassed the Oder, having been instigated to this by a letter from the King to his brother, written in order to be intercepted, announcing the defeat of the Austrians, and his preparations for an immediate attack on the Russians. This letter he sent by a peasant, and no sooner did Czernichew read it than he hastily rejoined Soltikow across the Oder. Frederick therefore rested two days; for by the departure of the Russians Breslau was freely open to him.

Loudon now retreated to Striegau, and Daun encamped at Dittmannsdorf. Soltikow and Czernichew retired to Peterwitz; and the Imperial army, 35,000 strong, was encamped on the Plauensche-Grund. But the Duke of Wurtemberg, at the head of 12,000 men, who had acted hitherto with the French army, now wished to try his fortune with the Austrians; consequently, on the 18th he turned and attacked the Prussian General, Hulsen, who had an intrenched camp near Strehlen. Hulsen made good his position, but was nevertheless obliged to withdraw to Torgau to protect his magazines, and thus Saxony became wholly evacuated at this time by the Prussians.

#### 17. DAUN ORDERED TO INVEST SCHWEIDNITZ.

In order to allow his army some repose at Neumarkt after the extreme fatigue of preceding operations, the King sent Prince Henry to follow the Russians, which he did as far as Vanzig, and then, leaving Goltz at Glogau to observe them, he returned and joined the King again at Breslau. In the mean time Daun and Lacy united, attempted to besiege Schweidnitz with the corps of Loudon, Lacy, and Beck, which induced the King (after leaving a considerable detachment under General Balze to protect the country against Russian irruptions) to move on the 30th of August, with his whole united force, to relieve that place. In his march he fell upon a separate body under General Beck near Reichenau, dispersed some cavalry, and made two battalions of Croats prisoners. Frederick's measures were directed with so much tact, that the Austrian army, although greatly superior

to the Prussian, was obliged to confine itself to defensive operations. Daun, who kept Schweidnitz very narrowly enclosed, was forced to retreat as soon as the King moved towards him, for fear of being out-flanked, and his Majesty thus recovered his communications with Schweidnitz. Daun, however, received orders from Vienna to besiege it, while the Russians were to be persuaded to invest Glogau. Every endeavour was, therefore, made to induce the King to withdraw; and an attack upon Berlin by the Russians appearing the most likely means to effect this object, Daun, in order to induce Soltikow to undertake this project, promised to take active measures in Silesia during his absence on this expedition.

#### 18. COLBERG SAVED BY GENERAL WERNER.

It was about this time that General Werner, a general of Prussian hussars, executed an enterprise for which the King struck a medal. The Russians with a fleet of twenty-seven vessels under Admiral Mischukoff, and an army of 15,000 under General Demidow, had marched to besiege Colberg in Pomerania, on the Baltic Sea, where Heyden commanded. The garrison held out, and defended itself with the greatest bravery, and the inhabitants remained unshaken, though their houses were burned to the ground, until Werner appeared to their assistance. He arrived at Colberg on the 18th of September, and attacked the besiegers sword in hand with such effect, that in a few days both fleet and army disappeared from before the place, leaving their cannon and ammunition behind them, for their ships at once slipped their anchors and stood out to sea. Thus Colberg had a most extraordinary escape.

#### 19. WAR ON THE RHINE—AFFAIR AT KLOSTER CAMP.

On the side of Westphalia the two armies of M. de Broglie and Prince Frederick had continued for about a month to occupy the same ground: the former pitching his camp at Dierenberg, and the latter continuing to occupy Warburg; the river Diemel running between the two armies. The hereditary Prince, who could never bear to be long idle, and had a strong taste for adventure, made many raids of little importance; but now observing the French outposts to be very careless, and receiving intelligence that they occupied Zierenberg, a place merely surrounded by some damaged walls, with a very insufficient garrison, he resolved on attempting a surprise of this body. For this service he selected four battalions, with a detachment of Highlanders and eight regiments of dragoons. About a league after crossing the Diemel he was joined by the light troops under General Bulow, whom he ordered to take post between Zierenberg and Dierenberg, in order to intercept any enemy that should come to their relief. The troops destined for this service were for the greater part English. The cavalry, consisting of two squadrons of the Greys and two of the Enniskillens, with some German regiments, were commanded by General Boch. The infantry were commanded by Major-General Griffin, and were composed of Maxwell's and Kingsley's battalions, and of three battalions

of grenadiers. With these he marched with the utmost caution and diligence towards the town. It was the night of the 5th of September, when the noise of marching feet alarmed the French, who at once opened fire; but such was the discipline and courage of the English grenadiers, that they endured the fire without returning a shot, till they reached the gate of the town, when they pushed on with their bayonets, killed the guards at the gate, forced in the pickets, and entered with the fugitives without the least disorder. Captain Grey, of Kingsley's, and Maxwell at the same moment entered the town by the two streets that led to the churchyard, which being the only open place in the town served as a place d'armes. Here they met and bayoneted many who were running to the rendezvous, but without firing a shot, and in most profound silence the British reached the churchyard. The attack was so sudden, and the surprise so great, that the French had not time to assemble in any great numbers, and the night was so dark that they formed upon the churchyard by the side of the English, mistaking them for their own pickets; but they were soon undeceived and obliged to get away as fast as they could; they then began firing from the houses, which so exasperated the assailants, that they burst open the houses and slaughtered all they met without mercy. Some of the enemy's dragoons endeavoured to fly to alarm the camp close by; but when they reached the gate they found it in possession of Bulow's light troops: and then flying to another gate, they were repulsed by a sharp fire of small arms from another detachment. The Prince was entire master of the place in about an hour, and having remained in it till three in the morning, he made off with 428 prisoners and three pieces of artillery, and reached the camp without any interruption to his retreat. This nocturnal adventure was achieved with very little loss, and was very creditable to the discipline of the troops, but was attended with no sort of advantage. Such affairs in war are rarely desirable, the risk is greater than the advantage, and they are more suited to the warfare of partisans than of regular troops. Prince Ferdinand was, however, unable to undertake any thing but partial affairs against the superior force under De Broglie. The French progress, indeed, towards Hanover had been checked, but they held so advanced a position that it was impossible to prevent their making very ruinous inroads into the Electorate. The allied General had no course open to him but to send these frequent detachments to threaten the French communications with the countries around the Rhine and the Maine, from which they drew the greatest part of their supplies of all kinds. With this view he now despatched General Bulow to Marburg, who destroyed the ovens and carried off a considerable quantity of clothing and military stores, scouring the country so as to make all communication difficult, until at length, on reaching Trinkenau, he roused the French General, Stainville, to check his progress, who, falling on the allied forces as they passed the river Orche on the 13th of September, entirely routed their rear, and took some prisoners with a very great number of horses. Indeed, General Stainville had General Bulow at such an advantage, that but for the

opportune arrival of the hereditary Prince by a forced march of two German miles, he would have crushed him. But on the arrival of the Prince Bulow fell back into a strong post from which they could not dislodge him. General Wangenheim also received a severe check from the side of the Weser on the 19th; and, indeed, these frequent detachments so well answered their end, that on the 20th the French fell back upon Cassel, where they began to intrench themselves, and Prince Ferdinand followed the example.

Such was the position of these two great armies, when the world was surprised by an expedition to a widely different quarter, equally astonishing for its rapidity and object. The hereditary Prince, who had just been seen in the furthest parts of Hesse, suddenly appeared at Cleves, on the lower Rhine, on the frontiers of the United Provinces, with an army of twenty battalions and ten squadrons, or about 15,000 men, having in view to drive the French from that place. This was a scheme devised and suggested by Pitt, whose policy it always was to carry the war into the enemy's country. On the 29th of September the Prince sent a large detachment over the river at Rocroot, where he surprised a post of the French partisan, Fischer, whose corps lay at Rhyenberg: another column from Munster passed the river nearly at the same time below Rees. These two detachments marching to meet each other seized all the French posts along the river, and obtained possession of a quantity of boats by which they were enabled to cross again to attack Cleves, which surrendered in three days; and afterwards on the 9th of October they invested Wesel, which was battered and burned; but the Prince met with so much more opposition here than he expected, that the French had time to send a force for its relief. The hereditary Prince also found himself stopped at Wesel by the fall of unusual ruins which impeded every thing, and in the meanwhile the French were enabled to collect with all expedition a force of thirty battalions and thirty-eight squadrons, under M. de Castries, which moved on the 14th of October to Rhyenberg, and thence took post by the convent of Campen. The Prince having information of these reinforcements, determined to be beforehand with them, and attempt to surprise them in the night, and the dispositions for this were made with the spirit and enterprise for which he was so remarkable. For this purpose he began his march at ten in the evening, leaving General Boch to observe Rhyenberg while he was to attack that post if the attempt on Campen should succeed. To reach the enemy's camp it was necessary first to overpower Fischer's corps of irregulars, which occupied the convent of Campen. This led to firing that alarmed the French army, who were half a league behind, and who immediately turned out and took post in a wood. The Prince immediately attacked them, and at first with some success; but the French held their ground without finching from five in the morning till nine at night, when they reaped the fruit of their perseverance; for the hereditary Prince seeing no prospect of success, the troops harassed and their ammunition spent, withdrew his men and left the field of battle to

the enemy. The allies had 1170 killed and wounded in this obstinate combat, and the French as many. The Prince had a horse killed under him. The principal loss fell upon the British, who were always with the hereditary Prince in these enterprises, and the young Lord Downs, a youth of great promise, was killed on the occasion. Next day, the 16th of October, the enemy attacked the allies near Elverich, on the Rhine, but the Prince repaired his bridges which had been destroyed, and passed the river under the eye of the victorious army, very much superior to him in number, and proceeded to Bruyden, where he fixed his head-quarters, having utterly miscarried in his design. This expedition, though thrown into the shade by more important conflicts, has been rendered remarkable by an individual act of heroism that deserves recording. The Chevalier d'Assas, captain in the regiment of Auvergne, was on an outpost on the night of this attack, when he was suddenly seized, and told that if he made the slightest noise he should be a dead man. "A moi, Auvergne," he replied, "voilà les ennemis," and he was instantly shot. This noble self-sacrifice remained unrewarded till 1777, when the then minister of war, Montburry, requested of the King a pension for the family of this hero, and in the year 1790 the National Convention ordered that this pension should continue to be paid as a debt due from the people.

#### 20. THE RUSSIANS ADVANCE TO BERLIN AND PLUNDER IT.

The late movements had necessarily drawn the Prussians into the southern parts of Silesia, and consequently to an increased distance from the capital. This favoured the Russian enterprise against their capital. General Todleben passed the Oder at Beuthen, and making forced marches by way of Guben, Beerkow, and Wartenshausen, after a march of six days, appeared before the Kotbus gate of Berlin on the 3rd of October. Lacy was ordered at the same time to advance from Landshut, and Soltikow with 20,000 Russians to pass the Oder at Carolath, having detached Czernichew to Frankfort to support the movement. Todleben summoned Lieutenant-General Rochau, who was commandant of the city, to surrender. Berlin is an open town surrounded only by a wall, and in some parts by palisades only; but Field-Marshal Lehwald and Generals Seydlitz and Knoblock, who were in the place wounded, and three weak battalions as garrison, refused the terms proposed. The Russian General then ordered the town to be bombarded, which was continued two days. During the night the gates of Halle and Kotbus were attacked, but the Generals made it their duty to take the command of the defence of these posts, and a Marshal of seventy years and two Lieutenant-Generals acting as private soldiers animated the troops and drove back the enemy. The Prince of Wurtemberg and General Hulsén hastened to defend the capital and arrived off the 5th, when Todleben was driven back; but Czernichew coming up with 12,000 men, Todleben again advanced and bombarded the city a second time. The three battalions now endeavoured to make some terms, but on the approach of Lacy, who next appeared, the Prussian

Generals surrendered the capital, and retired to Potsdam on the 9th. All the terms that could be obtained were granted to the solicitation of the foreign ministers residing at the Prussian court, who mediated with so much zeal and success that tolerable conditions were allowed, but the Austrian and Russian troops totally destroyed the magazines, arsenals, and founderies, with an immense quantity of military stores, and levied a contribution on the city of 1,900,000 German crowns.

Charlottenburg was entirely plundered, the precious furniture was despoiled, the pictures defaced, and even some antique sculpture broken and damaged. Fredericksfeld, belonging to the Margrave Charles, was also plundered. Potsdam, and Frederick's favourite palace of Sans Souci were preserved by the influence of Prince Esterhazy, who only carried away the King's own picture and two of his flutes.

#### 21. FREDERICK ADVANCES TO ITS RELIEF.

But Frederick allowed them short time to dally in his capital. As soon as he received intelligence of the march of the enemy upon Berlin, he reinforced his garrisons at Schweidnitz and Breslau, and hastened with all his disposable force to Guben. News soon arrived that the King was approaching to the relief of the city, and the cry, "The King is coming," dissipated in a moment the host of his enemies. The capital was evacuated on the 13th, so that it was but four days in the possession of his foes: but in their retreat from Brandenburg by different routes, they drove away all the horses and cattle they could find, ravaged the country, and committed great outrages on the inhabitants. The Russians retired at once into Poland by way of Furstenwalde, while the Austrians took the route to Saxony. When General Hülsen marched for the protection of Berlin there remained no Prussian army in Saxony, so that when the Duke of Zweybrucken with the Imperial army had already reduced Wittenberg in that electorate in conjunction with the Austrians, the German troops, now falling back from Berlin, made themselves masters, with little opposition, of Leipsic, and Meissen. All the fortified towns fell into their hands, and the great magazines of the Prussian army were every where seized.

As soon as the King knew that the enemy had retired from Brandenburg on his approach, he quitted Guben and turned off to Lübben; continuing his march to the Elbe, he crossed that river on the 25th of October at Coseritz; there he was joined by Prince Eugene of Wurtemberg and General Hülsen, making his united force 44,000 fighting men, with which he resolved to strike some blow of importance.

The occupation of Berlin by the enemy had been very disadvantageous to Frederick's cause in Saxony, for Hülsen having been obliged to quit this province, the Imperialists and Austrians recommenced their operations, and took Torgau, which was garrisoned with 2000 men, where was a large supply of provisions, and destroyed the bridge; and they now attacked and regularly besieged Wittenberg, which,



though but badly fortified, was bravely defended by its commandant, General Salennon. It was, however, bombarded with such effect, that after a few days the magazines, and indeed the greater part of the town were reduced to ashes, so that on the 14th of October it was forced to surrender. Prince Eugene of Wurtemberg, who had now taken the command of Hülsen's corps, marched to the assistance of this town, but it was too late. He, however, pushed forward Colonel Kleist on the 24th of October to attack 2000 men of his brother's (the Duke's) corps at Köthen, of which he took 700 prisoners and dispersed the rest. The King was at Lubben on the 17th, and on the 22nd he moved to Jessen and drove the Imperialists out of Wittenberg; he then passed the Elbe and joined Prince Eugene near Konitz. He next detached General Linden to Leipsic, whence, supposing it was the King who approached, the enemy retired and permitted him to reoccupy the town with two battalions. The General then rejoined the King at Eulenberg.

Marshal Daun had never lost sight of the King since he had returned into Lusatia. It was his first object to be entirely master of Saxony, for Dresden was in his hands and a great part of the Electorate; but Frederick was equally determined that it should not be entirely wrested from him; and though he had scared the troops of the Empire across the Pleisse and the Elster, out of all communication with Daun, yet beyond his magazine at Duben, which was nearly exhausted, he had no supplies. Moreover the Russians were on the Wartha awaiting the assistance of the confederates to take up their united winter-quarters in Brandenburg. Frederick's position was fearful, and his usual resource—a battle with his principal antagonist—appeared hopeless, for Daun had pitched his camp in the neighbourhood of Torgau with an army of 64,000 men. Frederick in extremity, sensible of the strength of an advantageous position where Prince Henry had last year defied all the attempts of the Austrians to dislodge him, and the caution of Marshal Daun, knew that he had no chance of drawing that wary commander from his strong post, and yet it was absolutely necessary for him to fight a battle before the campaign concluded. The season had already advanced; he had no place to winter in but his own territories, already wasted by his enemy; he had no magazines, no dépôt of ammunition and military stores; straitened for subsistence, and without the means of recruiting his forces, he might be at any moment crushed in a corner by the combined force of so many prompt and exasperated enemies. Knowing therefore that he could not draw his opponent to an attack, he determined to storm his camp in spite of every disadvantage.

## 22. THE BATTLE OF TORGAU.

The Austrian position, defended by 400 pieces of artillery, seemed almost impregnable. The heights of Süptitz are very considerable in this part of the country,—a continuous ridge, lying to the north of the village from which they are named. The King examined the ground well, and concluded that to attack from the south would be too difficult; he therefore proposed to turn the enemy by advancing from

Neiden so as to attack him in the rear, whilst another attack should be made in front. The left of the Austrian position rested on the fortress of Torgau, covered by the river Elbe and a fishpond or small lake; the centre occupied the heights of Zinna; and the right extended to an eminence which rises beyond the marshes of Grosswig. The Rhörgraben, a marshy and almost impassable rivulet, ran along the front; and the extensive wood of Donnebach, crossed by strong and extensive abattis, enveloped the right. On the evening before the 3rd of November he assembled his generals, and told them, "I shall attack Daun to-morrow. I know he is in a strong position, but it is a cul-de-sac, and if I beat him all his army will be taken or drowned in the Elbe. If we are beaten we shall all perish, and I the first; but I am tired of this war, and so must you be. Ziethen, I give you the right wing of the army; march upon Torgau, and cut off the Austrian retreat as soon as I shall have driven them from the heights of Suptitz." They unanimously declared they were ready to die with him. Animated by this declaration, Frederick put his troops in motion at early dawn. Ziethen took the road from Eulenberg with a view to attack Lacy, who was posted on the extreme left of the Austrian position behind the great fishpond with 20,000 men: as he advanced he met with the light troops of General Brentano, and was obliged to bring up his heavy guns to force them back, which however he accomplished, and echelloned himself near Enterfang before Zinna, towards Daun's left. Lacy on Ziethen's approach moved to his right, and, occupying the heights of Zinna with his batteries, hastened to engage the Prussian corps. The grand attack was to be made by his Prussian Majesty in person; Daun did not expect an attack; but as soon as he discovered the approach of the King, and learned its direction from his scouts near Grosswig and Weidenhain, he ordered his second line to face about and the artillery to be conveyed to the rear, which then became his front. In this position he faced all sides. About two in the afternoon the King began his attack, for it had been necessary in order to bring about the manœuvre to proceed a circuit of several miles. Frederick had scarcely got through the forest of Neiden, where he had only met a regiment of Austrian cavalry under Count St. Ignon, whom he had encountered and taken prisoner, when he heard the cannonade and fusilade on the side of Ziethen, and thought him to be involved in a regular engagement. He had at this time very nearly reached his intended point of attack, which was the only assailable part of the position, but now in his eagerness he resolved to make the attack with only ten battalions. Frederick led his grenadiers, and was received by such a tremendous fire as induced him to exclaim to one of his adjutants, "Did you ever hear so dreadful a cannonade? I never did." The Marshal had, in truth, placed on a gentle ascent with an open slope 200 guns, which made sad havoc amongst the Prussians. A raking fire swept the Prussian grenadiers, who fell in lines; they had to pass through a wood, but the shot penetrated through it, and the trees fell on every side, crushing all beneath them; one huge oak fell close to

the King, killing two men in front of him. Frederick was obliged to dismount, and lead his men through the wood into the plain of Neiden. But they were obliged to fall further back about three o'clock. Two-thirds of the grenadiers were prostrate, and the rest were now withdrawn; the second line, however, came up, and the King rushed forward at their head, but they met the same fate, and were broken and repulsed with slaughter. After a most desperate resistance they were compelled to give way, and the slender remains of both divisions made their retreat through the abattis into the wood. The King was much distressed at the destruction of his grenadiers and the loss of their leader the Count of Anhalt; and at this time it rained in torrents. The King, given to moments of despondency, exclaimed, "Every thing goes wrong to-day. A third attempt was, however, to be made. He ordered his third line of infantry to advance; and the Prussian cavalry having come up about half-past three, the King gained ground, took the enemy's right wing in flank, and made several prisoners. By the exertions of this body of horse, all the first line of the Austrians was eventually thrown back, and the infantry actually succeeded in taking possession of the height on which were the guns. Daun at the head of his reserve and cuirassiers now assailed the Prussian infantry, and forced them back again to the wood. The Prussian cavalry under the Prince of Holstein had not come up; but their cannon were useless in the wood, and could not play from the loss of the men that served them. Daun observing this, supported his new attack with a proper number of horse; but at length Holstein came up, and Colonel Dalwig at the head of Span's regiment charged with such success as to make many prisoners. Other horse followed. The Austrian cavalry was thrown into confusion and four regiments broken, but Daun's artillery opened upon them such showers of shot that they were again obliged to go back. At this time five Prussian battalions which had marched in the rear of the cavalry came up, with a battery of 12-pounders, led on by the King in person, and drove back the Austrians again, but it had no result. At this juncture Marshal Daun received a dangerous wound in the thigh; but he rallied his troops, exposing himself like a common soldier, until he was obliged to quit the field, and the command devolved upon Buccow. The Marshal ordered himself to be carried to Torgau, whence, in full confidence of the fact, he despatched a courier to Vienna to announce the total defeat of the enemy. Frederick also was wounded. He had had two horses killed under him, and in the last attack a ball struck him in the breast, when he fell to the earth; but on recovering from the contusion, and tearing open his cloth coat, he was relieved by discovering that the ball had been stopped by the dress he wore, and had not penetrated the skin. As he unbuttoned his coat the soldiers observed a ball to fall to the ground. One picked it up, and it was passed from hand to hand with great enthusiasm. At length they exclaimed, "Thou art always our dear old Fritz, and sharest our dangers with us!" Remounting,

<sup>1</sup> This ball is still preserved in the museum at Berlin.

he gave fresh orders for the battle, but the Austrian cavalry pressing forward once again, the Prussians were again compelled to retire. Night now came on, when the Prussian army retired, and took up another position to await the events of the coming day. Frederick proceeded to a neighbouring village to have his contusion looked to, and as the wounded occupied all the houses, he took up his quarters for the night in the church.

General Ziethen had not remained inactive all this time; he had had repeated encounters with Lacy without any result, and had even attempted under General Saldern to carry the heights of Süptitz with the bayonet, but the impracticable rivulet of the Röhrgraben rendered the attempt futile. Under these circumstances he received orders from the King to bear towards the left to his assistance. Lacy also moved more to his right, and opened a heavy fire from his ordnance, which was effectually answered by the Prussians. Ziethen, finding the fire of the King's forces slacken, set fire to the confines of the village of Suptitz as he passed, that his corps might not be insulted. It was now dark. He had been harassed and retarded in his march by the irregulars of Lacy's cavalry, and therefore did not arrive in time to aid the King's gallant assault; but at length he had reached the verge of the wood, and finding the battle not gained, marched towards Cosswig to favour the retreat of the King. Passing on by the village of Suptitz he accidentally came upon a dyke between two ponds, which the Austrians, either lulled into security or overcome with their exertions, had neglected to defend. On this discovery he led two battalions in the dark across it, followed by Saldern, who rushed to gain the heights and seize the batteries. Colonel Mollendorf supported this movement by marching through the burning village. A desperate struggle ensued; some Prussian regiments from the side of the wood, that had already taken part in the King's contest, hurried forward at the renewal of the conflict; and conducted by the blazing light of the burning village, they succeeded in attaining the heights which had been the object of the contest; and now, dragging some cannon across the stream, they commenced a cannonade that threw the Austrians into great confusion. This surprise changed the victory of the Austrians into a defeat; they were forced to retire from a field which they had considered as won. In the darkness and confusion they knew not whom to resist or where to form. In vain Lacy attempted to dislodge the Prussians; after being twice repulsed he was obliged to retire. The Prussians, that they might not mistake one another in the dark, ordered their drummers to beat the Prussian march. Then old General Hulsen, who on the retirement of the King after his contusion to Elsing was in command of the left wing, and who having had all his horses killed under him, was from infirmity and wounds unable to walk, got upon a gun, and was thus carried into the midst of the battle. During the night whole battalions of Austrians lost their way; and at length both parties encamped on the same ground, where they remained together until morning as if they belonged to the same army. The night was dreadfully cold and

stormy, and the troops were soaked with the heavy rain which had fallen. A few of them, however, contrived to get wood from the neighbouring forest to make fires, and both parties, as if wearied of hostility, congregated together round the same fires to await the return of day.

Marshal Daun on retiring from the field gave up the command to General Buccow, who was immediately afterwards shot in the arm, and the command devolved upon O'Donnell. About ten o'clock he was informed that the fate of the day was going against him, and he immediately ordered such part of the troops as could be collected to march off from the field. Daun, who lay at Torgau wounded, immediately ordered the town to be evacuated, and he himself escaped to the other side of the Elbe. He ordered the army to cross the Elbe by five bridges and proceed to Dresden, while Lacy, covering the retreat of his commander by the high road, joined him there at break of day; but numbers of men wandered about ignorant of the result of the battle and searching for their comrades. The burning village waned its fires, but the murmuring of the waters of the Elbe guided the Austrians, of whom, nevertheless, whole battalions fell into the hands of their opponents.

Frederick was planning at Elsing the renewal of the conflict on the following day, when Ziethen came up to him with the report, "Your Majesty, the enemy is beaten and retreating." The King threw himself into the arms of his friend, who, overcome with the excitement and overpowered by his feelings, fairly wept aloud. As soon as day dawned Frederick appeared among his men on the battle-field. His invariable salutation was, "Good morning, children!" "Good day, Fritz," was the reply. A grenadier in his death struggle looked at him as he passed, "I die with pleasure; I see who has conquered, and that Fritz is alive." A female hussar, who had taken part in all the campaigns, gave birth to a boy, which she presented to the King, saying, "A little Fritz is born." "Has he been baptized?" then asked the King. "No," said she; "but he shall be called Fritz." "Very well," answered the King, "take care of him, and when peace comes I will provide for him." Such familiarities were never taken amiss by the King, and in return the troops followed him with unbounded devotion. On Ziethen exclaiming, "Long live our great King!" the cry was echoed back, "And father Ziethen, too, our hussar chief." It is said by some that the King was jealous of the share the old hussar had had in the victory, but he might have been equally so of General Hülssen, who had the greater share in the attack on Suptitz, which was in effect the germ of the victory. It was Hülssen also who, the day after the victory, took possession of Torgau without striking a blow. On the 6th the King marched his army to Wilsdruf, while Ziethen followed the enemy, who retreated to their camp on the Plauensche-Grund. The Austrians lost 20,000 men killed, wounded, and prisoners in this battle, and the Prussians 10,500; while about fifty guns and the bridge equipment fell into the hands of the conquerors. The King doubtless committed many faults, and his success was mainly owing to good luck. It was in

## ALL THE ARMIES GO INTO WINTER-QUARTERS. [A.D.]

with Ziethen who won the day, for the King had been foiled; and the old General's resolution to unite with Frederick by forcing a passage through the enemy is a fine instance of the value of boldness in war when based on a judicious confidence in your own powers. The loss of the battle, however, was not thought to reflect any disgrace on the Austrian commander, but, on the contrary increased his reputation. Frederick acknowledged that he owed his victory very much to the wound of his antagonist. Had Daun been enabled to make a proper use of the superiority of numbers which still remained to him, he might have rendered the victory one of equivocal value to Frederick. Nor was Maria Theresa dissatisfied with her general, but met him when entering Vienna after his wound, and said, "I wish to be the first to welcome you, and to assure myself of the state of your health, which has caused me much anxiety; and I congratulate you on your many successes during the campaign."

The consequence of this battle was that it restored all Saxony, except Dresden, to the Prussians, and enabled them to relieve Brandenburg, Silesia, and Pomerania. Loudon had in the mean time invested Kosel, and was bombarding it, but on the 31st of October Goltz advanced, and Loudon on the 1st of November raised the siege and retired to Glatz; afterwards abandoning Landshut, he left all the Prussian portion of Silesia unoccupied and in quiet. After hearing of the King's victory on the 6th of November, the Swedes retreated to Stralsund, and the Russians were driven back to Poland; the command of their army was now given to General Butturlin. The Duke of Zweybrucken relinquished the command of the army of the Empire, which was transferred to Count Stolberg; and the Duke of Wurtemberg, who had been termed in derision, King of Swabia, took the opportunity of the victory of Torgau to withdraw altogether from the number of Frederick's enemies.

## 23. ALL THE ARMIES GO INTO WINTER-QUARTERS.

It is singular how often actions in war produce consequences that are by no means the natural results of the incidents in a battle. In this case we find a contest terminated by a mere accident of fortune, and by the wound of a commander, while a disastrous retreat terminates it. But had the Austrian commander held on, Frederick was in no condition to resume the fight in the morning; and certainly could have derived no advantages from the victory, even if he could have maintained himself in possession of the field of battle. The King, however, was now himself again, and made several endeavours to drive Daun back into Bohemia, but the severity of the season rendered all campaigning impossible. Daun, finding the King could do nothing against him, placed one part of his army in quarters in Dresden, and cantoned the rest in such a manner as to command the Elbe and keep open his communications with Bohemia. Torgau was the last battle during the war in which Frederick commanded in person. He was still in the field, every where directing operations,

but he henceforward either avoided battles, or they were fought by his lieutenants.

The allied army in Westphalia, after their failure on the Lower Rhine, turned their attention to Göttingen, which they kept closely blockaded from the 22<sup>nd</sup> of November; but the French made a brave defence, and having taken a strong post in a sally, they compelled the allies to raise the blockade on the 18<sup>th</sup> of December. Both armies then went into winter-quarters. The French kept possession of Hesse and all the country eastward of the Weser to the frontiers of the Electorate, by which they communicated with the Austrians and Imperialists, and prevented the succours which after the battle of Torgau the King had intended to send to the allied army. The English army was stationed in and about Paderborn, where Lord Granby established his head-quarters; but every thing there was so badly arranged for them, that great complaints were made in England, which much affected that people's love for the war, and made the army very dissatisfied.

#### 24. WAR IN INDIA.

A war in India follows very different rules to one in Europe, and is most active in winter. M. de Lally employed the breathing-time allowed him after the capture of Wandewash by the English General Coote, in bringing his scattered parties together, so that by the beginning of January he found himself in a condition to take the field with an army more numerous than he had ever yet commanded. Bussy earnestly entreated him to confine his operations to straitening the operations of the English; but Lally, who felt his military reputation tarnished by past events, was eager to wipe out the stain. He was the first to disturb the temporary calm, and manœuvred with so much skill that Colonel Coote imagined his object to be the recovery of Wandewash, and despatched orders to Captain Sherlock, who commanded there, to defend it to the last extremity. Lally, however, had different views; his object was to attack Conjeveram, where he supposed the English had great stores of rice, and the mode in which he contrived to reach this place without exciting suspicion manifested some dexterity. For two days his progress was inexplicably slow. On the third he amused those about him by putting his troops through a variety of evolutions, until he succeeded in throwing his whole line in the direction he intended to march, and in placing his cavalry in the position most favourable to his purpose. As soon as it was dark he put his troops in motion, and after a march of fifteen miles, in which he crossed the Paliar river (a considerable stream), he arrived at eight in the morning of the 12<sup>th</sup> of January at Conjeveram. Of the town he obtained immediate possession, but was disappointed in his expectation of stores of rice, of which the English had none there, nor, indeed, had they magazines anywhere, by which they had been exposed already to great privations. Lally nevertheless plundered the place completely, carrying off, besides many valuable effects, upwards of 2000 cattle. The pagoda, indeed, did contain some military stores, but he was

without cannon to attack it, and it was impregnable to a coup-de-main. Lally therefore got his force together and marched upon Trivatore. Colonel Coote had no suspicion of this move upon Conjeveram until apprised of it by an express from the officer in charge of the pagoda. He immediately set out for its relief, and arrived, a distance of twenty-one miles, soon after midnight, but the enemy had already departed. Lally had broken up his force, leaving a large division under Bussy to watch the English, and on the 14th he marched himself against Wandewash. Bussy's force was entirely composed of Mah-rattas, who while the work of plunder remained incomplete could not be brought to check the British movements. It had not escaped the sagacity of Coote that, earlier or later, an attempt would be made upon Wandewash, and no sooner did intelligence reach him that his enemy had gone in that direction than he crossed the Paliar and followed Lally. He took up a position at Ontramalore, half-way between Wandewash and Chingleput, being thus at an easy distance from either place, and, through the latter, in communication with Madras. Lally, therefore, in ignorance of Coote's movement, began at once to form the siege of Wandewash, and took the pettah by escalade after a stout resistance. The French then commenced the entrenchment of the openings of the streets facing the fort, and to raise a battery nearly on the same ground from which Coote had effected his breach against it, but tidings from Bussy now warned him of the approach of the English. He was not at first willing to believe the news, suspecting that Bussy had some intrigue to carry out against him, but the unwelcome report being confirmed from other sources, he forthwith sent instructions to Bussy to join him at Wandewash with his whole force. It was not till the morning of the 20th that his battery would be ready; but it was worked with vigour, and in the course of that night it opened and produced some effects.

Intelligence of all this was conveyed to Coote, who advanced with the cavalry to reconnoitre, and at the same time received a message from Captain Sherlock informing him that the chief rampart was breached. He accordingly gave immediate orders for the main body of his army to advance during the night, and on the 21st arrived at Tirimbouurg, a village about seven miles distant from the fort. The march of the British force was interrupted by the French cavalry and by the Mahrattas, who assembled in great numbers, but were nevertheless repulsed; and the stony ground, which Coote purposely occupied, protected him from their further attacks. Coote passed the night at Tirimbouurg; and at sunrise he gave orders for the army to move towards the south side of the mountain of Wandewash, and in the direction of the fort, while he himself pushed forward on the 21st of January with an advanced guard of 200 native cavalry and two companies of sepoy, to reconnoitre the position of the enemy.

### 25. BATTLE OF WANDEWASH.

The mountain of Wandewash, extending more than a league in length, stands two miles distant from the north of the fort, and the



road from Tirimboung leads along the face of it. The French army was encamped directly opposite the eastern end of the mountain in two lines, and a great tank covered its left flank: this was converted into an intrenchment, and mounted with cannon which commanded the plain and flanked the esplanade in front of the camp. One or two other tanks lay further to the left, and some paddy-fields separated the one line from the other. The Mahratta troops hung like a cloud on the hill side. Coote moved his whole force round the mountain till he had placed his army in a position which secured a free communication with the fort, while at the same time he defended one of its flanks by its fire; the other flank rested on the impracticable ground encumbered with stones which protected it from all attacks of cavalry. The two positions were within cannon-shot of each other. In numbers there was no great disparity between the armies. The French had 300 European cavalry, 2250 European infantry, 1300 sepoy, and 3000 Mahrattas, with sixteen light pieces of artillery. The English had eighty European horse, and 250 native, with 1900 European infantry, 2100 sepoy, and twenty-six pieces of artillery.

Lally commenced the action by placing himself at the head of his European cavalry, and taking a large sweep upon the plain he came down upon the hostile horse. These, which were principally native, either from fear or treachery went off and fled, leaving the charge of the French to be sustained by the eighty English horse, who were, however, so effectually supported by two guns under the direction of Captain Barker, that in less than a minute the French were thrown into confusion and obliged to quit the field, Lally being the last man to retire. He now hastened to the infantry, and led them up to the attack with great gallantry. The battle became general. After the discharge of some volleys of musketry, the regiment of Lorraine formed in a column, twelve in front, and advanced almost at a run. The English opened to the right and left, thus exposing the enemy to a fire of grape, while their extended line wrapped round the flanks of the assailants and galled them with musketry. The encounter, however, was so impetuous, that the two nations soon found themselves indiscriminately mixed in deadly conflict with the bayonet. In the end Lorraine's regiment fell back in disorder. An accident contributed to this. About one o'clock a shot from one of the English guns exploded a tumbril of powder in one of the tanks, which killed or wounded eighty men of that regiment; when Major Brereton, commanding Draper's regiment, instantly advanced against the enemy's left flank, and before they could recover from the confusion assaulted and carried the intrenchment, as well as the empty tanks, at the point of the bayonet. Among the victims was the gallant leader himself. Some of his men seeing him fall ran to his assistance, but Brereton desired them not to think of him, but follow on to victory—victory was with them. It was to no purpose that Lally exerted himself manfully to recover the day. At this juncture Bussy sought to avert the impending defeat by a charge with his Mahrattas; but his own horse being struck by a ball, he was forced to dismount, and found himself

surrounded by an English party, whilst, to his mortification, not above twenty of his men remained with him; the rest had shrunk from the danger and disappeared. Bussy and his party were all made prisoners; but Coote admitted Bussy to parole on the field, and sent him with a pass to Pondicherry. The French troops in other parts of the field also retreated, and the British without further opposition entered their camp, where they found a large quantity of provision and ammunition, together with twenty-four pieces of the battering-train. Lally fell back upon Chittapet and Gingee, and did not halt till he reached Velore, where he took up a position to cover Pondicherry and the districts from which he drew his principal supplies. The French lost in the action some 600 men; the English loss did not exceed 190.

Coote followed the enemy to Chingleput, opened a battery upon the place and breached it, so that it surrendered at discretion on the 9th of February. He then marched and took possession of Arcot on the 10th, thus wresting the capital of the Nabob once more from the French. Many places of minor importance were in rapid succession added to the victor's conquests, while others were silently abandoned by the French; amongst them was Cuddalore, which, in spite of various efforts to recover it, was held fast. On approaching Velore, the killidar, trembling for his fort, sent the offer of a present of 30,000 rupees to Coote. The General refused it, saying that he was neither empowered by the Nabob nor the presidency to levy tributes; but upon the killidar's appealing to the custom of his country, Coote accepted the money, and appropriated it as prize-money to his army. M. Bussy had made the best of his way to Pondicherry, which M. Lally did not reach till the 25th of March. On his arrival he was received there with a torrent of invective and abuse; he was charged with rashness, arrogance, and presumption, of which he might have been guilty; but he was also declared a coward and a traitor, which he certainly did not deserve. On his part he made no attempt to conciliate his opponents, but on the contrary treated them with a haughty defiance. It was necessary, however, to take some measures to repel the English, who were fast approaching the very gates of the presidency; also to re-furnish the army with guns to replace the artillery they had lost; and moreover it was necessary that this relief should be sought for without delay.

## 26. COUNT LALLY OBTAINS ASSISTANCE FROM HYDER ALI.

The possessions of the French in the Carnatic on the 1st of May this year, were limited to the fortresses of Gingee and Thiagar, with the town and territory of Pondicherry. Hyder Ali, an adventurer who had obtained possession of the kingdom of Mysore, and whose career is an important episode in the history of the English in India, happened at this time to be casting about for the possession of a strong place in which, in case of a reverse of fortune, he might bestow his treasures and contingently secure his own person. The fort of Thiagar, as well from its difficulty of access from Mysore as from the impregnable nature of its fortifications, appeared to him

best suited to his purpose, and he readily acquiesced in the proposal made to him through the agency of a Portuguese monk at Velore, who called himself Bishop of Halicarnassus, to enter into terms with Lally for its acquisition. A treaty was concluded on the 14th of May with great secrecy, by which he was to be put in immediate possession of Thiagur, and to retain it in perpetuity, or as long as the French flag remained in India, for the service of 3000 cavalry and 5000 infantry—this auxiliary force to be maintained at the expense of 100,000 rupees a month, at the cost of France, so long as they served. Hyder proved as good as his word, and forthwith despatched the promised reinforcement, together with a supply of cattle and grain for the use of the French troops.

When Coote at length heard of this treaty, he detached a force under Major Moore to watch Thiagur, and prevent the promised reinforcement of Mysoreans from reaching Pondicherry. This force, consisting almost wholly of sepoys, was met by Hyder's whole army in open march on the 7th of July near Trivadi. The state of discipline which already existed in the Mysore army was not at all understood or appreciated, and Major Moore without much information respecting it attacked the Mysorean army; but the disproportion of the contending forces was fatal to the attempt. The detachment nevertheless escaped with fifteen killed and forty wounded. The Mysoreans without further obstacle reached the French camp.

Colonel Coote was at this time engaged in reducing the fort of Villanore, one of the outworks of Pondicherry. Batteries had been erected, and were in operation when the French army with the whole of the Mysore force appeared in sight, marching along the opposite bank of the River Aruancopang, on the 16th of July. Coote immediately sent forward a detachment to check the advance and occupy the villages in the vicinity of the batteries, which immediately played with their full force, so as to beat down the parapet and silence the fire of the fort. These results, followed by the advance of a party of sepoys for the assault, so discouraged the officer in command, that he held out most unexpectedly a flag of truce and opened his gates to the English in the very sight of his friends. The astonishment of the French and their allies may be conceived when they saw their own flags suddenly hauled down and replaced by the English, and found the guns of the rampart of the fort suddenly turned upon themselves and their allies. The effect was to paralyze the advance of the united force as though stricken by some stoppage of vitality. Lally, more confounded than any one, gave orders to retreat. Colonel Coote always esteemed this to have been the most fortunate, as it was the least looked for, act of his distinguished career, for in ten minutes more he would have been forced into a general engagement under most disadvantageous circumstances. The Mysoreans were now still further alarmed by the intelligence that a revolution had occurred at home which threatened the fate of their chief, and they determined to get away to Thiagur, which they succeeded in reaching on the 18th of August, though Coote was at their heels, and drove a considerable division of them back to Pondicherry.

**27. PONDICHERY BESIEGED BY GENERAL COOTE.**

Coote now determined to draw the circle tighter round that capital, and to reduce the fort of Ariancopang commanding the boundary hedge, which was a strong barrier of aloes and prickly shrubs, that extended in a circle from the river to the sea, about 1500 yards in advance of the ditch of the town. He accordingly requested Admiral Stevens, who lay at anchor in the roadstead, to assist him with the marines of the fleet, which were promptly given; but on the 4th of September, while he was considering how to act, Lally made an attack upon the British camp, planned with very considerable skill. Driven into a corner, and hopeless of relief, Lally had seen no chance of escape but the fortune of a fight, and therefore had arranged this night attack, which deserved better success than attended it. He kept his secret so well, that though the city abounded with spies, not a rumour of his intentions reached the British army till they found themselves unexpectedly attacked. The force was divided into three columns, two of which fell simultaneously on either flank of the lines; but the third, which had penetrated unobserved to the rear, contrived by some unlucky accident to lose its way. The consequence was, that the troops actually engaged finding themselves opposed by superior numbers, and hearing nothing of the fire of their comrades in the rear, lost heart, and were beaten back with great slaughter, leaving M. d'Auteuil, one of their leaders, a prisoner behind them. The condition of the city, instead of being bettered, now became more desperate than ever, no other result having been produced by the failure but an increase of the bitter feeling that already existed between Lally and his associates in arms.

**28. REINFORCEMENTS FROM EUROPE.**

There had arrived at Madras during this interval three ships of war with part of a Highland regiment and other troops on board—a reinforcement which was highly acceptable; but they also brought commissions from the Crown, giving Monson the command, and orders to Coote to proceed to Bengal. Colonel Monson was not unworthy of the trust reposed in him, but nothing was more adverse to the public interests than to supersede Coote at such a moment. Monson offered to withdraw to Madras, but Coote understood military subordination too well to hesitate to obey orders, and accordingly proceeded to the new command to which he was appointed, generously and voluntarily leaving his own regiment behind in the camp, though directed by the authorities to transport it to Bengal. Monson had not approved of Coote's intention of proceeding to the investment of the fort of Ariancopang, and had in view another operation which the acquisition of command now enabled him to carry into effect; this was to attack the boundary hedge with all its defences. The assault was made in the night, and succeeded in spite of many blunders. The outposts were driven in, and three of the outworks captured, which compelled the enemy to blow up Fort Ariancopang, although they still held it in their grasp by taking post upon the glacis; this

measure of success was not, however, obtained without severe loss to the English, independently of 115 Europeans put *hors de combat*. Monson himself was disabled by a shot which broke both bones of his leg. The chief command devolved consequently on Major Gordon, the officer who had occasioned so much mischief at Wandersah, and whose incompetency was recognized by the whole presidency. Upon this Coote, who had not yet quitted Madras, was strenuously requested, both by Monson and the local authorities, to resume the command of the troops, and on the 20th of September he returned to the camp, where he was welcomed with the utmost enthusiasm by all the soldiers.

He immediately ordered the gorges of the captured redoubts to be armed, and a few days later he got possession of another outwork which completely shut up the enemy. Lally indeed retained still hold upon the Ariancopang, and erected in the midst of it a redoubt that enabled him to hold some communication with the open country; but Coote had it in his power to cut off by far the larger portion of the petty convoys, which endeavoured to carry in supplies to the place; nor was Admiral Stevens idle, who from his station off Cuddalore prevented all ingress from the sea. Three French ships, the "Hermione," "Baleine," and "Compagnie des Indes," were at anchor before the town, and M. d'Aché with his fleet was understood to be at the Mauritius: accordingly, on the 6th of October an attempt was made to cut these ships out, and with respect to the first two with great success. The boats of the "Tiger," 60, moved in two divisions at midnight with muffled oars, while to avoid parting company each boat took in the painter of the one astern of her. The watchword by which they were to be directed was "Cathcart," a word which few Frenchmen can pronounce. As is usual on the change of the monsoon, it lightened considerably, and this exposed them to the sight of the batteries of the town, which opened upon them. Nevertheless both the "Hermione" and "Baleine" were boarded and brought away; but circumstances prevented any attack being made on the third ship, and she was enabled to put to sea on the 30th of the month. Admiral Stevens, however, afterwards came up with her at the Danish settlement of Trincomalee, when she struck to the "Salisbury," 50. The Danes remonstrated against this infraction of their neutrality, but were not attended to. The prospects of Lally and the inhabitants of Pondicherry now became every day more and more gloomy. No forage being procurable, he first sent away his cavalry, to take their chance of escape or otherwise; and at length distress attained that stage when each man regarded his competitor for bread who could not fight as an incumbrance. All the black inhabitants, therefore, were expelled, and the troops were put upon half-rations. Thus passed the rainy season; at the close of which Coote made ready to convert the blockade into a siege. Ample stores were provided from Madras, and on the 8th of December four batteries were completed, and opened against the town; more batteries were erected in convenient spots, and the guns were about to be run in, when on the

28th of December a hurricane broke over the country, which produced awful havoc both at sea and on shore. The sea broke over the beach and overflowed the country, carrying away the batteries and redoubts. Three of the English ships foundered, by which upwards of 1100 lives were lost; the tents of the soldiers were blown to ribbons, and the whole army was thrown into extreme confusion. The besieged felt the effects of the storm less than the besiegers, but could not take advantage of the calamity. As soon as it had passed over the fleet was refitted; and the batteries were reconstructed with infinite labour. Similar energy was employed in restoring the stations, as well as the works of the military, and on the 5th of January an attempt was made to attack a remaining redoubt, which succeeded; but in the morning the post was vigorously attacked, and the officer in command with his detachment were taken prisoners; Lally, however, sent back his prisoners to the English camp under a promise not to serve again, because he was unable to supply food to keep them alive.

#### 29. THE WHOLE OF THE FRENCH POSSESSIONS IN INDIA SURRENDERED TO THE ENGLISH.

On the 10th of January, 1761, another battery was formed, and on the 12th the English pushed forward their trenches. On the 14th as Colonel Coote was going round the works, according to his custom, he saw a flag of truce advancing, and a deputation coming out from the town to him with a gasconading reproach from Lally that he was prevented from proposing any capitulation on account of some alleged breach of faith in the capture of Chandernagore; but adding, that "the troops of the French King and Company were reduced to extremity by want of provisions," and Lally added that he required certain stipulations before he could propose a surrender. Coote gave a short answer to the deputation; he declined to enter into discussion on any matter concerning Chandernagore, with which he had nothing to do, and was not to be duped by Lally's sophistry; he insisted upon an unconditional surrender; and the enemy, finding him immovable, submitted. Accordingly the English were admitted into the town the following morning, and to the citadel the same afternoon.

The English flag was now hoisted at Pondicherry under a salute of 100 guns. Gingee still remained to the French, but Coote sent a force against it under Captain Stephen Smith, who reduced it. Mahe on the Malabar coast also surrendered, with its dependencies. Thiagar remained to be attacked, which, after sustaining a sixty-five days' blockade and undergoing a bombardment, capitulated at length to Major Preston, and the French empire on the continent of India ceased to exist. In the spirit of conquest which has always animated that nation, vast efforts had been made to establish a commanding influence in the Indian peninsula; and it must be confessed, that the course they adopted for that object taught the English the system under which they have reared their empire; but now, after a war which commenced with the capture of the British settlement of

Madras in 1746, there remained to them nothing of India except the recollection of many defeats and of their ignominious expulsion from the country.

### 30. MILITARY CHARACTERS OF THE FRENCH COMMANDERS—LA BOURDONNAIS, DUPLÉIX, LALLY, AND BUSSY.

La Bourdonnais is the first name which became eminent in the history of the brief inglorious career of his countrymen in the East. He was originally an adventurer on board of a South Sea trader, who, after distinguishing himself in all quarters of the world, was appointed in 1735 to the government of the Isles of France and Bourbon. He improved to a remarkable degree the internal condition of these dependencies, by encouraging the inhabitants in the arts of agriculture and manufactures; but in doing this he made so many enemies that he was recalled to Europe in 1740, in order to defend himself from the charges which had been sent home against him. This he did so effectually that the minister, instead of accepting his resignation, reappointed him to his government, and he returned to the Isle of France in 1741. On his arrival he hastened to repair to the Malabar coast, where the Mahrattas were busily engaged in the siege of Mahe, which was under his government, and having chastised the enemy and re-established confidence, he returned to his insular province; but he had thus tasted the desire for Indian conquest, and when the war broke out between Great Britain and France he determined to strike a great blow at the power of the former in the peninsula of India. By dint of incredible exertions this indefatigable man assembled a fleet of nine sail, on board of which he conveyed 3000 troops, including 780 negroes. The ships were almost all leaky and unsound, miserably armed, and still more miserably equipped; but with this force he put to sea in the beginning of 1746, encountered an English fleet under Peyton with no definite result, and stood away before the wind until he reached Pondicherry. Here he obtained some refitment, and again weighed anchor to seek the British fleet, but its commander, conscious of his inferiority, avoided him, and on the 14th of September the French Admiral suddenly appeared near Madras and landed 500 men. After a bombardment of five days the then capital of the English in India was forced to capitulate, and to open its gates to the enemy upon terms, and it was delivered up to them on the 15th of October; but Duplex, governor of Pondicherry, who claimed in virtue of that office supreme authority over all the French possessions in India, declared the treaty concluded by La Bourdonnais to be null. The Admiral, unable to bear up against the superior interest of his rival, returned to France to vindicate himself from the accusations which were now profusely brought against him; but he met with no justice there, and was cast into the Bastile on his arrival, from which he only obtained his liberation to draw up a statement of his services and wrongs, and to die.

M. Duplex, his rival, could boast a more aristocratic origin than La Bourdonnais, but was indebted to his own genius for the good

fortune which at first attended him in life. His taste in early youth appears to have leaned to military pursuits, but his father insisted upon his adopting commerce as a profession, and he was sent out to India in 1728, and proceeded in 1780 to direct the declining settlement of the French at Chandernagore. Here he superintended the affairs of the factory so well, that their trade in Bengal began to excite the envy of the most enterprising among the European colonists. He extended the commerce of France through the Mogul's territories as far as Thibet, and fitted out ships for the Red Sea, Persian Gulf, and Manilla. He was recompensed for all this in 1742 with the government of Pondicherry. The success of La Bourdonnais awakened the jealousy of Dupleix. He declared that the Admiral had gone beyond his powers; that conquests made by the French arms were at the disposal of the governor of Pondicherry alone. He accordingly broke the capitulation which La Bourdonnais had agreed to for the surrender of Madras to his arms, seized the property of the English, and marched the governor and principal inhabitants to swell his personal triumph at Pondicherry. Dupleix had already begun to revolve gigantic schemes, with which the restoration of Madras to the English was incompatible. He possessed talents of an order more elevated than are usually called into play by the mere exigencies of commerce. Not only had he surrounded the seat of his government with a chain of outworks sufficient to command respect, but he left no arts untried to display the dignity and consequence of his country before the natives. He accordingly paraded La Bourdonnais' unhappy prisoners in public in open procession, though he had obtained them through a false pretence. The Nabob of the country remonstrated with the French governor for his bad faith towards the English, and sent an army of 10,000 men under the command of his son to back his arguments. Exceedingly reluctant to bring matters to such an issue, Dupleix, nevertheless, at the head of one battalion of French grenadiers, not exceeding 400 men, made a sortie from the place, and with two field-pieces opened fire upon the Nabob's troops, who retreated with precipitation in extreme disorder. The arrival on the coast of four ships of the fleet of La Bourdonnais, which had been separated in a gale, opportunely enabled him to intrigue and negotiate with better effect with his eastern opponent, who was now induced to succumb, and sent his son as ambassador to Pondicherry, where he was magnificently received. The governor's attempts against the remaining English settlement of Fort St. David were not so successful; for the arrival of a British fleet off the Indian coast made it requisite for the French to withdraw, and defend themselves within Pondicherry: this Dupleix did most effectually against a forty-two days' bombardment, resisting a powerful English armament under Boscawen, though supported by two nabobs of the country. For these services he was rewarded with the title of marquis and the red ribbon. By the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle in 1748, although he evaded for some time the fulfilment of the stipulation, he was compelled to restore Madras into the hands of the English.



The success of his first proceedings had led Dupleix to form the ambitious project of obtaining for his country all the southern part of India. He procured the sobaship of the Deccan from the Great Mogul for one of the petty sovereigns in alliance with him, and the title of nabob for himself, and he obliged the natives to treat him as a king and his wife as queen. This was but the beginning of his greatness, though his prosperity was not of long duration. In 1751 two pretenders arose to the nabobship of Aroot, one of which was favoured by the English and the other supported by the French; the latter became victorious; after some months of fighting, negotiation, and intrigue, the ability and good fortune of Dupleix prevailed; the successful competitor yielded the palm of the success he obtained to the French governor, who now entered the town in the same palanquin with the Nizam, dressed in the garb worn by Mahomedans of the highest rank. He was declared Governor of India from the river Kristna to Cape Comorin. Dupleix became for the time the greatest potentate in India, and his countrymen boasted that his name was mentioned with awe even in the chambers of the palace of Delhi. But the vain-glorious Frenchman was not content even with the reality of power. He loved to display his greatness with arrogant ostentation before the eyes of his subjects and his rivals. The consequence was that representations against him were sent to the home government at Paris, and Providence returned the same poisoned chalice to his lips that he had forced La Bourdonnais to drink. Dupleix was recalled by orders from the King, and on the 14th of October, 1754, he departed for Europe, giving up his government to M. Godaheu. He arrived at Paris in a desponding state, on account of the failure of all his gigantic projects, which had involved him in utter ruin. By his account he had disbursed for the public service 8,000,000 rupees. The French East India Company contested his claim, which, in fact, they were not in a condition to have paid. The suit was stopped by royal authority, and he published a long statement of his case, but the mortifications and vexations to which he was now exposed soon put a period to his life.

The Count de Lally was descended from an Irish family who had followed the fortunes of James II., and was born in France in 1702. He entered the French army as captain of an Irish regiment raised by his uncle, General Dillon, and he distinguished himself at the siege of Kehl in 1733. He was present at the sieges of Menin, Ypres, and Furnes, and at the battle of Fontenoy, where he fought with such gallantry that he was made brigadier-general on the field of battle by the King himself. He mixed himself up with all the designs of the Pretender, and visited England both before and after Culloden, but was not in that battle. In 1755 he was consulted by the French ministry upon the most advisable mode of impairing the power of England, and he strongly urged an attack upon her East India possessions. He was considered the fittest person to carry out his own plans, and was accordingly sent in May, 1756, with the rank of lieutenant-general, as Commandant-General of all the French possessions in India. It was however the 28th of April, 1758,

before he arrived on the Coromandel coast. He found the government of Pondicherry administered by men who trusted every thing to the exertions of others, without giving themselves much trouble in the matter. The treasury was empty, the means of transport of military stores wholly wanting. The plan of operations he had formed for his opening campaign was of the boldest and most enterprising kind. He resolved to begin at once with the siege of Fort St. David. The squadron that had conveyed him consisted of only twelve sail, commanded by M. d'Aché, who had been immediately attacked by the British fleet, consisting of seven sail and two frigates, and utterly discomfited. The French squadron retreated to Pondicherry; nevertheless the loss to the British was so severe, that they were also obliged to go to Madras to refit. Lally therefore pressed forward the siege with vigour, though in providing the means necessary for this arduous undertaking he has been accused of setting the prejudices and feelings of the people at complete defiance. He permitted no reverence for custom or caste to exempt any portion of the native community from such services as he deemed essential, and they were employed in the trenches and other works, so that in the teeth of fresh obstacles from the fleet and a stout defence by the garrison, the place surrendered to him on the 2nd of June. The fall of Fort St. David, and the success of the French arms, appeared to Lally to warrant his indulging in a triumphal entry into Pondicherry, which accordingly he did after the manner of his vain and unfortunate predecessor Dupleix. The British were never guilty of these absurdities, which added nothing whatever to the French power. In consequence of another defeat of the French fleet by Admiral Pocock, the French Admiral, D'Aché, announced to the Council of Pondicherry that he could no longer remain off the coast, but was determined to return without delay to the Isle of France. Lally saw in this loss of all command of the sea the utter overthrow of all his projects; nevertheless, with characteristic rashness and impatience, he sat down to besiege Madras on the 12th of December, 1758. Destitute of engineers, and poorly supplied with artillery officers, he yet established his batteries with great judgment, and kept under the fire of the besiegers; but at this critical juncture insubordination broke out amongst his officers, and the inopportune arrival of Pocock's fleet in the roads obliged him to raise the siege in February, 1759. Misfortunes now followed on his arms and his policy. Every thing he attempted failed; so that after an obstinate resistance he was on the 16th of January, 1761, compelled to surrender the French capital of Pondicherry to the British arms, and to yield up entire possession of India to the flag of his country's rivals. On his return to France, after having thus lost the last French possession in India, he was accused of having sold Pondicherry to the English, for which he was most unjustly condemned to lose his head, which sentence was carried into execution on the 9th of May, 1766.

The Marquis de Bussy is the last of this catalogue of French commanders, but he was never entrusted with the superior direction

of affairs. He served, however, with distinguished success under both Duplex and Lally, and mainly contributed by his bravery and judgment to the successes they both obtained. He rapidly rose through the various gradations of military promotion, and in 1765 was made field-marshal. He died at Pondicherry the following year.

### 31. WAR IN NORTH AMERICA.

The capture of Quebec would, it was supposed, have been followed by the complete submission of Canada; but this was soon discovered to be an egregious mistake. The French were not a people to give up their province after one acquisition, however important, and much remained to be done before it could be wholly subjected to Great Britain. M. de Levis succeeded to the command held by the late Marquis de Montcalm, still consisting of ten battalions of regular troops and about 6000 Canadian militia. On the other hand, Brigadier Murray was placed in charge of Quebec with a garrison of about 8000 men. An oversight had been committed by the English Admiral of the station in not having vessels of force in the gulf and river St. Lawrence, which gave the enemy at first a superiority, of which they availed themselves. M. de Levis formed the design of attacking Quebec in the winter, when no shipping could enter, and accordingly took possession of Point Levi, on which he formed a magazine. Murray immediately detached 200 men to seize it, who soon drove them away. The French then set to work to construct redoubts, and arm them with cannon, but some battalions and light infantry were sent against them across the ice to threaten their communications, when finding the British governor so much on the alert they desisted; but having the undisputed command of the stream, they carried off all their artillery and stores and brought them in safety to Montreal.

### 32. THE FRENCH ADVANCE TO QUEBEC.

Meanwhile Governor Murray omitted nothing to put the citadel and city in a perfect state of defence during the winter, but his garrison having suffered much from the excessive cold and from the want of fresh meat and vegetables, he had scarcely 3000 men fit for duty when on the 26th of April he received notice that M. de Levis had assembled eight battalions and forty companies of Canadians, in all 10,000 men, and had landed them at Point aux Trembles. Murray immediately ordered all the bridges across the Red River to be broken down, and marching out in person with two field-pieces took up a position to secure the landing-places of Sillery, which defeated the scheme of the French commander. Murray now resolved on a plan which has been much criticised and justly condemned. He thus explained his view of the case in his despatch to the Secretary of State—that the enemy was greatly his superior in numbers, but considering that the British forces were habituated to victory and were provided with a fine train of artillery, he thought that an action in the field was less risk than the single chance of

successfully defending a wretched fortification. Nothing appears to be more contrary to sound rules of war than that a commander of a garrison should risk a battle to prevent his being shut up and besieged. Considering too that his troops were sickly, and the army of M. de Levis well-conditioned and of triple numbers, it certainly was the rashest resolve that an officer charged with the command of a most important fortress could have entertained.

### 33. FIGHT AT SILLERI.

On the 28th of April Murray prepared himself to defend the heights behind Silleri. The right brigade was commanded by Colonel Burton, the left by Colonel Fraser, and two regiments formed a corps de reserve. Major Dalling's light infantry protected the right flank, and Captain Huzzens with some rangers and volunteers secured the left. Murray having reconnoitred the enemy, found them advancing in a single column, and thought it a critical moment to attack them before they could form. His troops accordingly advanced with equal order and expedition. Dalling with great gallantry dispossessed their grenadiers of a house and windmill, but pursued the fugitives as far as their support, and thus lost his advantage, when he was furiously charged and thrown into confusion. The right wing got possession of two redoubts, and sustained them with undaunted resolution until they were fairly fought down by numbers and reduced to a handful. The regiment of Roussillon came boldly against the left wing, which gave way; and Murray was thus forced to quit the field, but fortunately got back into his fortress again, though with a loss of 1000 killed and wounded and the greater part of his artillery.

### 34. QUEBEC BESIEGED, AND RELIEVED BY THE FLEET.

The French General did not lose a moment in improving his victory, and opened his trenches before the town on the very evening of the battle. Murray, instead of being dispirited by defeat, appeared the more roused to exertion by it. The same bold spirit which had led him forth to encounter his enemy outside the town animated him to defend Quebec to the utmost when defence had become necessary. He set his feeble garrison to work to raise two cavaliers and some outworks, and dragged up 132 guns to plant upon the ramparts, so that when on the 11th of May De Levis opened his batteries, they were effectually silenced by the superior fire of the garrison. Nevertheless Quebec would in all probability have returned to the possession of its former owners, had a French fleet from Europe got the start of the English squadron which now entered the river. Lord Colville and Commodore Swanton had wintered at Halifax, and had now sailed for the St. Lawrence on the 23rd of April. On the 9th of May they were able to communicate to the Governor that they were in the river; and receiving intimation that Quebec was besieged they pushed forward, and anchored above Point Levi on the evening of the 15th. French ships were at this time at anchor at the Foulon, landing guns and ammunition, but the Commodore ordered

Captain Schomberg, of the "Diana," and Captain Deane, of the "Lowestoffe," to attack them; and the French immediately weighed and made sail away. One of them, the "Pomona," was driven on the rocks above Cape Diamond; and another, the "Atalante," was burned near Point aux Trembles. In execution of this service the "Lowestoffe" ran on some unknown rocks and was destroyed; but all the enemy's vessels in the river had been fortunately first captured. This so dispirited the besieging army that M. de Levis raised the siege and returned to Montreal, leaving his battering-train of thirty-four guns and all his implements and provisions behind him. Murray, as soon as he heard of his retreat, attempted to sally out and follow him, in the hope of making an impression on his rear, but could not manage to come up with him. The French army afterwards concentrated itself about Montreal, where the Marquis de Vaudreuil now commanded in chief as Governor-General, and appeared resolved to make a stand to oppose the further attempts of the British against him. General Amherst, nevertheless, who commanded the British force, determined to effect the complete overthrow of the French power in that part of the New World. He was bringing up 10,000 men from New York, who had advanced to Oswego, upon Lake Ontario, where he was joined by Sir William Johnson with 1000 Indians. Murray was coming up the river with all his disposable force from Quebec, and Colonel Haviland advancing from Lake Champlain. M. de Vaudreuil also, on the other hand, called in all his detachments, and collected around him the whole French force of the colony. He sought to keep up the spirits of the people by feigned intelligence, which he did not scruple to circulate falsely in a proclamation signed by his own name. He felt, however, that in his situation all he could do was to protract the war and give another year to fortune. Canada was at this period only easy of access by means of the great river; impenetrable woods, swamps, and mountains were obstacles to any forces that would penetrate by the New England states, consuming the short summer, and leaving scarcely sufficient time for a campaign. Amherst, however, who was a man of calm and steady resolution, whom no difficulties could overcome, was early in movement, and reached Oswego on the 9th of July. The transport of 10,000 men, with all their guns, ammunition, and stores, across the vast inland lake of Ontario in open boats and galleys, required much method and regularity in the military arrangements, but the whole of this was successfully effected by the 10th of August. On the 17th the fleet fell in with a French sloop on the lake, captured it, and entered the St. Lawrence on the 27th. Dispositions were immediately made for the attack of L'Isle Royale, an important post, considered as the key of the province, and which was completely invested. Batteries were raised and opened forthwith, and after two days' sharp firing the fort surrendered on terms. The navigation down the St. Lawrence from this point is extremely difficult and dangerous, and many bateaux and some men and guns were lost by the rapids, but on the 6th of September the troops were landed with little opposi-

tion on the island of Montreal. So admirably were the arrangements concerted, that on the same day Murray came up with his force from Quebec, and Haviland from L'Isle aux Noix the day following. Montreal was the second town for extent and traffic in the colony, but its fortifications were mean and inconsiderable, although some works had been added to strengthen the place against this expected attack. Amherst forthwith brought up some guns from the landing-place of La Chine, and determined to commence operations in form; but as soon as De Vaudreuil saw himself completely enclosed he despaired of successfully defending himself, and accordingly on the 7th he sent out two officers to demand a capitulation, which was granted on the 8th. Thus in the sixth year of the war, and after the most severe struggles, the French power on the continent of North America was utterly subverted, and the whole of Canada brought under submission to the British sceptre. The town of New Orleans and a few plantations upon the Mississippi alone remained to France of all her settlements on the American continent.

### 35. NAVAL WAR.

The British Navy under the vigorous administration that so successfully directed the war attained an increase till then unprecedented. It now amounted to 120 ships of the line, besides frigates, sloops, bombs, and tenders. A fleet of seventeen sail was in the Indian seas, twenty sail of the line protected the West Indies, twelve the North American station, ten the Mediterranean, and the remaining sixty-one were either in the Channel or in harbour. The enemy had not a fleet equipped for active service any where this year; but their privateers and armed vessels swarmed in every sea, and made prize of some 200 vessels belonging to British commerce, while for some unexplained reason very few prizes were made upon the French. The court of Versailles, in its desire to succour Montreal, had equipped a considerable number of store-ships in the spring under convoy of a frigate. These all safely arrived on the North American coast, but understanding that a British squadron had already entered the St. Lawrence, they took shelter in the Bay of Chaleurs, where, in the course of the summer, Captain Byron with three British ships came unexpectedly upon them and captured them all, consisting of about twenty sail with considerable magazines.

It may be remembered that at the time of Hawke's engagement in Quiberon Bay in the last year, a small armament equipped by an active adventurer of the name of Thurot had escaped the vigilance of the British commanders, and directed his course from Dunkirk into the North Sea. His instructions were, to make occasional descents upon the coast of Ireland, and by dividing the military force and distracting the attention of the government in that kingdom, to facilitate the projected descent of M. de Conflans, which Hawke's victory altogether prevented. Thurot's original squadron consisted of five ships, one of which, the "Maréchal de Belleisle," mounted 44 guns, and the rest about 30 each. He had 1270 soldiers on board of them besides

700 marines. In October, 1759, he reached Gottenburg in Sweden, and thence proceeded to Bergen in Norway, where he lost one of his ships in a storm. The latter end of January, 1760, however, brought them upon the northern shores of Ireland, but they were again driven out to sea and lost another vessel. In hopes of provisioning the remainder Thurot made for the island of Islay, landed his troops there and obtained cattle and supplies, for which he duly paid, and behaved altogether with great moderation. From thence he again sailed for Ireland and made a descent on the shores of the Bay of Carrickfergus with 600 men on the 21st of February. This town was an open place, for the old earthworks were utterly ruined and had no other garrison than four companies, of raw undisciplined men under Colonel Jennings: these attempted no opposition to the Frenchmen's landing, and when attacked by them retired at once into the castle, where they had neither provision nor ammunition nor even a continuous enceinte to the walls, so that they were obliged to surrender on terms that the town should not be plundered, but that the authorities should supply provisions on requisition. The whole country round was soon on the alert, and a laudable spirit of loyalty and resolution carried men of all stations to Belfast to offer their services against the invaders. These circumstances might have been sufficient to induce them to abandon their enterprise, but the news of the defeat of Conflans by Hawke now came upon the country, and M. Thurot hastened to quit his conquests, having put Carrickfergus under contribution. But he had scarcely quitted the bay when, on the 28th of February, at four in the morning, he fell in with the "Æolus," 32, Captain John Elliot, accompanied by the "Pallas," 36, Captain Clement, and the "Brilliant," 36, Captain Loggie, all under the command of Captain Elliot, who had been sent by the Lord Lieutenant, the Duke of Bedford, to cruise for the enemy, and had obtained information of their whereabouts at Kinsale. Thurot endeavoured to run for it, but Elliot came up with the chase at nine in the morning and brought the 44-gun ship to close action, though considerably his superior in strength of men, number of guns, and weight of metal. In a few minutes more his two consorts were engaged with the other two ships of the enemy. After a warm action, maintained with great spirit for an hour and a half, the "Belleisle" was boarded and struck her colours, which might not have so soon happened, although the vessel was already in a sinking state, but that the gallant Thurot had been struck, and died nobly in defending his ship. The French ships had all surrendered by half-past ten. The loss of the English did not exceed forty killed and wounded, but the decks of the French ships were covered with the slain. The name of Thurot had become so terrible to the trading community, that the defeat and capture of his privateering squadron was celebrated with hearty rejoicings in all the ports of the kingdom.

The "Biddeford," Captain Skinner, and "Flamborough," Captain Kennedy, both frigates, had sailed on a cruise from Lisbon, and on the 4th of April fell in with a fleet of French merchantmen under

convoy of two large frigates. The British cruisers immediately resolved to engage, and the enemy did not decline the battle, which began at half-past six in the evening and raged with great fury till eleven at night. The ships lost sight of one another in the night, but Captain Kennedy pursued one of the frigates in the "Flamborough" till noon next day, when she got away. The "Biddeford" also had compelled her antagonist to flee, but Captain Skinner was killed an hour after the action began, and the command devolved on Lieutenant Knollis, son of the Earl of Banbury, who maintained the contest with great spirit till he was wounded, and afterwards until he received a second shot in his body which proved mortal. In September the "Temple," Captain O'Brien, and the "Griffin," Captain Taylor, on a cruise off the Grenadines in the West Indies, having received intelligence that H.M. sloop "Virgin," which had been captured by the enemy, was lying, together with three privateers, in a bay of the island of Martinique under protection of some forts, determined to go in quest of them. Accordingly both commanders ran close along shore until they came alongside the forts—one of eight guns, one of six, and another of two, in a double battery flanking one another. The attack was begun and carried on so vigorously for several hours that they silenced the enemy's guns and demolished both forts and batteries. They then entered the bay and remained there four days, firing morning and evening guns to assert their ownership. Finally they departed carrying off the three ships as prizes. They had not lost a dozen killed and wounded in the whole affair.

On the 17th of October the "Hampshire," 50, Captain Norbury, the "Boreas," 28, Captain Uvedale, and the "Lively," 20, Captain the Honourable Frederick Maitland, chased five French frigates. The "Boreas" came up about midnight with one of them, the "Sirène," 32, Commodore Mucartie, but in a short time was so disabled as to drop astern. Having repaired damages, however, she again closed with her antagonist at two A.M. on the 18th, and after two hours' hard fighting, compelled her to surrender. The remaining frigates were pursued by the "Hampshire" and the "Lively," the latter of which was enabled to bring the sternmost to action, which struck after a contest of some hours at eight o'clock. The "Hampshire" followed the other three, and at half-past three brought the "Duc de Choiseul" to action, but she effected her escape into Port-au-Prince; the "Prince Edouard" and the "Fleur de Lys" ran on shore, and being set fire to by their crews, blew up.

In December the boats of the "Trent" and the "Boreas," commanded by Lieutenants Miller and Stuart, boarded and carried into Cumberland harbour the "Vainqueur," 10, with a crew of ninety men, and the "Mackau," a small vessel of six swivels and fifteen men. As soon as they had taken these two vessels they pushed on after "La Guêpe," 8, which lay higher up in the lagoon, but on their approach the enemy set fire to and destroyed her.

The bravery of five Irishmen belonging to the crew of a ship from



Waterford merits commemoration. Captured by a privateer about the middle of April, the captors availed themselves of their services to assist in navigating the vessels into a French harbour. These stout fellows, however, formed a plan of resistance and executed it with success. The French mariners were nine in number, four below, three aloft, one at the helm, and another walking the deck. A man named Brian, who was at the head of the enterprise, suddenly tripped up the steersman and knocked down the man on the deck. He then called to his confederates below to assail the men in their cabins with their own cutlasses, and close the hatches. On this those in the rigging called for quarter, and the Irish got possession of the ship. Unluckily they were all utterly ignorant of navigation, and indeed were so illiterate that they could neither read nor write; so all they could do was to keep the ship's head on her course, which they did, and fortunately succeeded in getting her safely into Youghall harbour.

#### 86. REFLECTIONS.

Upon a review of the power of Great Britain by sea and land at this period, it plainly appears, that on her own element she was more than a match for all the maritime powers of Europe combined.

"This was her realm—no limit to her away,  
Her flag the sceptre all who meet obey."

Triumph had followed triumph. The minister, Pitt, had imparted to the commanders he employed both by sea and land his own impetuous, adventurous, and defying character. They, like himself, were disposed to risk every thing, to play double or quits to the last, to think nothing done while any thing remained undone, to fail rather than not attempt. The fops and intriguers who at this period were the degenerate commanders selected by the female coterie of Louis XV.'s cabinet, were appalled and bewildered by the vigour of their old antagonists; they began already to consider it a settled thing that they were to be beaten. Whenever the forces of the two nations met, it was with disdainful confidence on one side, and with a craven distrust on the other. In the space of three years the French had been defeated in every part of India; and conquests, equalling in rapidity, and far surpassing in magnitude those of Cortez and Pizarro, had been achieved in the East, where the English had now founded a mighty empire. In the West, also, the Canadas had been subjugated and added to the British empire, and the French fleets had undergone a succession of disasters in every sea. Even on the continent of Europe, against all odds, the energy of Great Britain had been shown by the triumph of her armies at Creveldt and Minden. The nation in the mean time exhibited all the signs of wealth and prosperity, and in the words of the fine inscription set up by the citizens of London to honour the administration of Pitt, "Commerce had been united with, and made to flourish by war." To him was given the greatest share in all these triumphs of his country; of whom it has been said, "There was in the great conqueror something

that could create, subvert, or reform; an understanding, a spirit, and eloquence that could summon mankind to society, or break the bonds of slavery asunder, or rule the wilderness of free minds with unbounded authority; something that could establish or overwhelm an empire, and strike a blow in the world that should resound through the universe."

### 37. DEATH OF GEORGE II. OF ENGLAND.

On the 25th of October died, at the age of 77, George II., King of Great Britain, after a long reign of thirty-four years, distinguished by a variety of important events and chequered with a vicissitude of fortune. He had very nearly died a year or two before, and people were sure he would have died at that time, "for the oldest lion in the Tower, much about the King's age, had died a fortnight before." His Majesty however was tougher than the old lion, and disappointed the superstition of his subjects<sup>1</sup>. Of his character it is only in these pages our province to speak of that portion which relates to war. He was fond of military pomp and parade, and was personally remarkably brave: he loved war as a soldier, he studied it as a science, and corresponded on the subject with some of the greatest officers of the day. He had served in the campaign of 1708 under Marlborough, and distinguished himself at the battle of Oudenarde. In after years he himself took the command of the British troops on the continent of Europe, and was successful against the French on the 26th of June, 1743, when he gained the glorious victory of Dettingen. He closed his reign amidst a blaze of victory. Triumph after triumph had attended the arms of his soldiers in Europe, Asia, Africa, and America. Minden, Warburg, and many other glorious adventures had distinguished his troops under Prince Ferdinand of Brunswick on the continent of Europe; Clive had added to his dominions a whole empire by his victories in India; Senegal, Gorse, and other places on the coast of Africa had been ceded to the British arms; and the French were utterly driven from the sea, and conclusively expelled from Canada and almost the entire continent of America. He was succeeded by his grandson, George III., who gave the most public assurances of his resolution to continue the war with all its former vigour; and he retained Pitt in his councils, where he was the heart and soul, and enjoyed the unbounded confidence of the nation.

1761.

1. WAR IN INDIA—COMBATS AT FATNA.—2. INVASION OF INDIA BY THE AFGHANS—AHMED ABDALLAH SHAH.—3. NAVAL WAR.—4. THE SIEGE AND CAPTURE OF BELLEISLE.—5. CAPTURE OF DOMINICA.—6. STATE OF EUROPE IN RESPECT TO THE WAR.—7. THE CAMPAIGN BEGINS.—8. THE AFFAIR AT LANGENSALZA.—9. OTHER ENTERPRISING AFFAIRS.—10. THE BATTLE OF VIL-

<sup>1</sup> Mahon.

LINGSHAUSEN.—11. THE DUKE DE BROGLIE RECALLED, AND THE PRINCE DE Soubise COMMANDS THE FRENCH ARMY.—12. THE AUSTRIAN AND PRUSSIAN ARMIES.—13. THE RUSSIAN ARMY UNDER MARSHAL BUTTURLIN.—14. LOUDON TAKES SCHWEDNITZ BY ASSAULT.—15. ATTEMPT ON THE LIFE OF FREDERICK.—16. COLBERG IS BESIEGED AND TAKEN BY THE RUSSIANS.—17. ATTEMPT ON MAGDEBURG.

### 1. WAR IN INDIA—COMBATS AT PATNA.

Our attention has been so completely engrossed with the wars of the great European powers throughout the world, that the Indian contest has been very much limited in these annals to the wars in the Carnatic that terminated with the expulsion of the French from the south of that peninsula; but Bengal had also been the seat of war between Great Britain and the native powers, to which we must now revert. Though the French had lost all power and all government in Hindostan, yet her influence and her intrigues, under the active management of Bussy, still pervaded Oriental politics. Before Clive quitted the British government, he had established Meer Jaffer in the nabobship. This prince lost his eldest son Meeran by a stroke of lightning in a dreadful storm that passed over the British camp, in which he served. Naturally weak, timid, indolent, and indecisive, Jaffer was unmanned by this affliction, and had no sooner lost the strong mind of Clive to whom he looked for counsel, than he fell under the intrigues of Meer Cossim and was deposed. In the mean time the Shazada (as the son of the Emperor was called) had ascended the throne of the Great Mogul through the death of his father, and assumed the name of Shah Alum. He encountered and overthrew Ramnoraïn, the Rajah of Berar, who, in defiance of the prudent advice of the officer in command of the English contingent, opposed him, and was in consequence almost annihilated. He then immediately took the field against the English and their ally, Meer Jaffer, but was confronted by Colonel Calliaud, who effectually defeated him near Patna on the 22nd of February, 1760. After this he sought to strengthen himself against the British, and negotiated with a handful of French troops, which having escaped from the factory of Chandernagore, had since resided peacefully in Onde. These, under M. Law, readily came into terms to make the Emperor a tender of their services, which were gladly accepted, and they immediately began their march to join him, and the siege of Patna was forthwith undertaken. Calliaud despatched a light corps under Captain Knox to prevent the junction and avert the danger that threatened this city. Knox was one of those men whose extraordinary activity astonishes most people, but especially Orientals, and which is indeed almost incredible to ourselves, when we consider the nature of the Indian climate. He succeeded by great exertion in entering Patna covered with dust and sweat, yet, giving his overwrought but gallant followers the rest of only an hour or two, he forthwith attacked the enemy's lines. He chose the period in the afternoon when the natives of warm climates generally take their repose, and was completely suc-

ward. Astounded and surprised, the Indian army instantly retreated, and without the loss of a moment Knox crossed to the opposite bank of the river, then with only 200 Europeans, one battalion of sepoy, and five light pieces of artillery, with some 300 horse, fell upon 12,000 men, with thirty guns, and gained a complete and decisive victory.

Major Carnac took the command of the army on the 1st of January at Patna, and without loss of time marched, accompanied by Ram-norain and his army, to Gyal Maunpore, where Shah Alum with his French confederates lay encamped. On the 15th he gave them battle, and not only defeated them, but took Law the French leader prisoner, who had been deserted by his countrymen, and was found by Carnac sitting patiently astride upon a gun awaiting his fate. The capture and dispersion of this force removed the white flag from Bengal as it had been already struck in the Carnatic.

## 2. INVASION OF INDIA BY THE AFGHANS—AHMED ABDALLAH SHAH.

Ahmed Abdallah was originally a domestic slave in the family of Nadir Shah, who had freed him and raised him to power and eminence. After the assassination of his sovereign in 1747 he separated himself with the Afghans from the Persian army, and during the disensions of that empire he effected their independence, and was raised by the Afghan people to be their chief at Candahar, Kaboul, and Lahore. He now assumed the title of Ahmed Shah or Door-doraun (pearl of the age), whence is derived the name by which the ruling tribe of this people is called, Dooraunec. His ambition soon led him towards the capital of Hindostan, when he was met and encountered by the Vizier at the head of a numerous army at Sirhind in 1748. Though he found it expedient to abandon this enterprise after slaying the Vizier in battle, he obtained the following year, after a brilliant victory and the actual possession of Delhi, the formal acknowledgment of his independent kingdom from the Indian Emperor. The Mogul Empire was at this time in the most decrepit state; every viceroy and petty chief assumed his independence, and governed his province as he chose. The Decan had become, as we have seen, in a considerable degree under the independent government of the English. The Mahrattas had also actual possession of a considerable kingdom. From this time forth the great struggle for empire was between the Mahrattas and the Afghans. The Rohillas were exposed to the enmity of the Mahrattas, and sought the protection of the Afghans. The Emperor called in the aid of the Mahrattas to repel the Rohilla Afghans. A desperate battle took place between all these tribes near Delhi, after which the capital remained to the Afghans. The Mahrattas now collected 140,000 cavalry and a numerous artillery, together with several battalions disciplined after the European fashion, and advanced upon Delhi. Ahmed Shah after his great victory had quitted the capital and crossed over the Jumna, to repose his army in a province less devastated by war. The city accordingly offered no resistance, and

the Mahrattas captured it, and committed there the most fearful excesses. The Shah prepared a fearful vengeance, and in the year 1761 prepared to advance again on Delhi, but finding the Jumna unfordable, he swam the torrent at the head of his adventurous warriors. The Mahrattas were so alarmed at this vigorous assault, that although thrice the number of the assailants, they fled away as far as Paniput. Thither they were pursued by the Shah. After taking counsel among themselves, they now advanced against the enemy with all their artillery in front, levelling the works they had thrown up for their defence. Ahmed Abdallah permitted them to advance a considerable distance without opposition, but at length the Afghans rushed upon them with such fury and suddenness as not to give them time to fire their cannon. The Bhaow, nephew to the Peischwah, who commanded the Mahratta army, was killed in the onset, and his troops instantly fell into confusion and fled; many other chiefs were soon struck down, and the rout became general. The sepoys made some stand, but were overpowered and cut to pieces. The field floated with the blood of the slain. The prisoners, men and women, counted 22,000. The plunder of the intrenched camp exceeded all valuation—a great train of artillery, 50,000 horses, 500 elephants and as many camels, with 200,000 cattle. Delhi again fell to Ahmed; but after enjoying some months there in quiet he abandoned India and departed for Kabul, resolved to interfere no more in Indian politics. The Dooraunee Empire, however, still continued until Ranjeet Singh overturned it in our own times.

### 3. NAVAL WAR.

This year our enemy's fleets had almost disappeared from the ocean; but occasional actions would occur between the British and French, when single ships, or two or three on each side, at the most, met in mid sea. Thus, on the 8th of January the "Unicorn," Captain Hunt, met "La Vestale," a frigate of 30 guns and 220 men. The enemy was chased for two hours before she was brought to action, and at the third broadside Captain Hunt had his right thigh shattered, which occasioned his death an hour after the action closed. The French captain, Boisbertelot, was also mortally wounded. The action lasted about two hours, when the "Vestale" surrendered, and was added to the British navy under the name of the "Flora." The following day the "Seahorse," 20, Captain Smith, engaged "Le Grand," 34; the action continued with great spirit for one hour and a quarter, and the superior metal of the Frenchman might have told, but the "Unicorn" coming up during the action to the assistance of the "Seahorse," the "Le Grand" drew off and effected her escape. On the 23rd, Captain Hood, afterwards Lord Bridport, in command of the "Minerva," 32, off Cape Pinas, gave chase to a large ship that proved to be the "Warwick," pierced for 60 guns, which had formerly been captured from the British. She now carried 34 guns, and had on board 295 men, bound for the Isle of Spain with troops, stores, and ammunition. The "Minerva" came up with her to a close engagement at twenty minutes after ten, but

a heavy sea and the damage done to their rigging on both sides obliged the combatants to part. Hood, however, pushed after the retreating ship and again engaged her at four o'clock, when she struck with the loss of fifty killed and wounded. So severely, however, had Hood's ship been handled by the enemy, that her gallant commander concludes his despatch thus: "At nine o'clock the main-mast of the 'Minerva' gave way, at eleven the mizen-mast followed it, but nevertheless Captain Hood succeeded in reaching a friendly port with his prize." On the 24th Captain Elphinstone, in the "Richmond," 32, whilst cruising off the coast of Flanders, received intelligence that a French frigate had the day before taken a British merchant vessel. He went as soon as he could in quest of the enemy, which proved to be the "Félicité," of 32 guns, and he immediately gave chase under a press of sail, through the night; but it was not until half-past ten in the morning that he could bring her to close action. Both ships stood in towards the land, near the Hague, when a little past noon they took the ground, and continued the action with unabated vigour, in sight of hundreds of spectators upon the shore. On the rising of the tide the "Richmond" floated off, and the dispute was soon closed by the surrender of the frigate, whose Captain, Dounel, fell in the action, with 100 killed and wounded. The "Richmond's" loss was under twenty. The "Félicité" was bound to the West Indies with a rich cargo valued at 30,000*l.* On the 30th the "Venus," 36, Captain Harrison, and the "Juno," 32, Captain Philip Torry, cruising off Scilly in company, sighted "La Brune," a remarkably fine French frigate of 32 guns. The "Venus," having a great superiority in point of sailing, came up with the enemy and engaged her for two hours before the "Juno" could get within gun-shot, but almost immediately that she did so "La Brune" struck her colours. The "Venus" had four killed and eighteen wounded, among the latter her commander. This prize was commissioned as a British cruiser under her former name. On the 13th of March the "Vengeance," 28, Captain Gamaliel Nightingale, captured, after a long and spirited action, "L'Entreprenant," a large French ship equipped for war or merchandise, pierced for 44 guns, but carrying only 26, and armed *en flûte*, with a crew of 203 men. Captain Nightingale began to engage her about five in the afternoon of the 13th, and got so close alongside that his ship was five times on fire from the enemy's wads, and his sails and rigging got so shattered that it was no longer under command; so that the "Entreprenant" ran her bowsprit over the taffrail of the "Vengeance," intending to board her, but Captain Nightingale dropped astern, and having refitted and repaired her rigging and sails as well as time and circumstances would permit, he renewed the attack with so much vigour, that the "Entreprenant" sheered off and got before the wind. At length the "Vengeance" came up within pistol-shot, and after a spirited contest compelled her to surrender. The "Bedford," 64, captured on the 16th of March the "Comète," French frigate, 32, after a chase of nine hours off Ushant. On the 13th of April the 50-gun ship, the "Isis," Captain Wheeler, fell in with the French ship

"Oriflamme," mounting 40 guns, off Cape Tres-Forcas on the Barbary shore. The fight began at six in the evening. Captain Wheeler was killed soon after the beginning of the action, when the command devolved upon Lieutenant Cunningham, who finding the Frenchman endeavouring to get to the northward of him, and escape over to the Spanish shore, ran on board of her with no other damage to either ship than the loss of one of his own anchors, very soon after which the "Oriflamme" struck. She had upwards of 370 men, of whom fifty were killed or wounded. On the 5th of June the French 64-gun ship, "St. Anne," was captured in Donna Maria Bay, Port-au-Prince, by the "Centaur," 74, and the "Hampshire," 50, belonging to Rear-Admiral Holmes's squadron. She was conveying home a rich cargo of indigo, coffee, and sugar, valued at nine millions of French livres. On the 17th of July the "Thunderer," 74, Captain Proby, who had been sent with the "Thetis," 32, Captain Mountray, and the "Modeste," to cruise off Cadiz in order to intercept the "Achilles" and "Bouffon," fell in with these ships, and commenced a very sharp action. In the action one of the "Thunderer's" guns burst and blew up a part of the poop, killing and wounding many men: by great exertions the danger was stayed, but the "Achille" ran on board of her, when Lieutenant Charles Leslie at the head of 150 men gallantly sprang upon her deck, boarded the assailant, and after a sharp resistance captured her. The "Thetis" and "Modeste" made short work of the "Bouffon," which they captured in half an hour. Captain Proby and his two lieutenants were wounded, and about 130 men killed and wounded on board the "Thunderer." On the 14th of August the "Bellona," 74, Captain Faulkner, in company with the "Brilliant," 36, Captain Loggie, fell in with the French men-of-war, "Le Courageux," 71, Captain Dugue Lambert, and 700 men, together with "La Malicieuse," Captain Longueville, and the "Hermione," Captain Montigney, 32 guns each, and a desperate action ensued. At six in the morning the "Brilliant" began to engage both frigates, and twenty minutes afterwards the "Bellona" came to action with "Le Courageux" as near as possible. The water was smooth and every shot told on either side: both ships lost their mizens, which were cut away early in the action. About seven A.M. Captain Faulkner determined to lay his antagonist on board, and taking advantage of the moment when the "Bellona" wore, he struck the starboard quarter of "Le Courageux," and poured all his larboard guns with such destructive effect into the stern and quarter of the enemy, that in twenty minutes she hauled down her colours. The "Brilliant" continued to engage the two frigates, but at half-past seven they bore away, and neither ship was in condition to pursue them. Captain Dugue Lambert received a wound in his back, of which he died ten days after the action. "Le Courageux" was a rich prize valued at 32,000*l.*, and had on board the ransom of five prizes in specie, amounting to 8200*l.* The British cruisers were thought to have taken this year merchant ships ransomed to the extent of 820,000*l.*, and since the commencement of hostilities the following French ships of war were taken by the British: four of 84

guns, nineteen of 74, two of 66, seventeen of 64, one of 58, two of 56, one of 54, six of 50, four of 44, two of 40, nineteen of 36, one of 34, thirteen of 32, three of 28, two of 26, seven of 24, three of 22, seven of 20, one of 18, seven of 16, four of 14, two of 12, one of 10, and eight of 8 guns. Total, 131 ships, comprising 5800 guns. According to a list of the French navy published by the government in June, 1756, at the beginning of the war, their whole number at that time was 111 ships. The British navy actually in commission were 372 ships, and the Spanish navy by the latest accounts had 101 sail.

#### 4. THE SIEGE AND CAPTURE OF BELLEISLE.

The great naval enterprise of the year was that directed against the coast of France. On the 29th of March an armament consisting of ten ships of the line under Commodore Keppel, and 10,000 land forces under the charge of General Hodgson, sailed from Spithead, and it was soon learned that Belleisle was the object. This is the largest of all the islands on the coast of France belonging to that kingdom, being twelve or thirteen leagues in circumference. It lies off the coast of Bretagne, between Port Louis and the mouth of the Loire, and abreast of Quiberon Bay. It contains only one town called Le Palais, with about 5000 inhabitants, in the whole island. It might be doubted whether the possession of such a conquest was worth such an armament, but it was considered to be a nest of privateers, and that though the harbour was bad, yet the possession of it might be of service to the fleets of England, and a grievous wound to the pride of France. The expedition arrived before it on the 7th of April. A descent was immediately attempted at three different places. Not an enemy showed himself, nor had the French fired a cannon, when as soon as the boats touched the shore they suddenly appeared behind their intrenchments and opened a destructive fire. Major Purcell with 200 of the Scots' Fusiliers stood their ground, and Captain Osbourne with Erskine's grenadiers got undiscovered on the enemy's flank, but the French sallied, and the English to the number of sixty laid down their arms, the rest having got back to their boats with the loss of 500 men. The island was a natural fortification, and what nature had left undone to make it strong, had been amply supplied by art. It was some time before the weather gave the commanders the opportunity of a second trial; but at length, not discouraged by their former failure, they sought a more favourable point of attack, and pitched on a bold rocky shore near the point of Locmaria, where the excessive steepness and difficulty of the rocks rendered the enemy less watchful and attentive in their defence of it. Feints were made at other points, and the men-of-war directed their fire with great judgment and effect on the 21st, when the troops were enabled to be put on shore in various places. The enemy opened fire from a battery at the north end of the bay, and from a bomb-battery which had not previously been discovered, but at too great a distance to touch the ships. On the 25th an advance under Captain Paterson of the grenadiers of the 19th regiment clambered up the hill, and having formed in good



order without delay, was thus enabled to hold at bay some 800 men, whom they resisted with resolution and maintained their advantage until Brigadier-General Lambert with the 80th regiment and marines had ascended in like manner, and arrived to their assistance. The landing of all the troops was made good in a short time, and as soon as the light horse was disembarked, the army advanced, drove the enemy into the town of Palais, and obliged them to take refuge in the castle. A serious attack was now made upon the enemy's lines that covered the town, and in this Major-General Crawford was taken prisoner, but the lines were carried without much loss, principally by the uncommon intrepidity of a corps of marines. No action of greater spirit and gallantry had been performed during the whole war. The French garrison was commanded by the Chevalier de St. Croix, a brave and experienced officer, who was well provided for an efficient defence. The castle or citadel was the work of the famous Vauban, and consisted of a hornwork provided with two dry ditches, rendering very secure the body of the place, which is divided from the town by an inlet of the sea. It was obvious from the first that our fleet must prevent all hope of relief, and therefore, after six weeks' open trenches, during which the greatest difficulty consisted in bringing forward the cannon over a rugged and broken road for two leagues, a practical breach was made in the works, when the Governor thought he had done all that honour demanded, and judged it prudent to capitulate on the 7th of June rather than incur a greater loss of life. On the part of the English thirteen officers and 300 men were killed, and twenty-one officers and 480 men were wounded.

#### 5. CAPTURE OF DOMINICA.

It happened that almost on the same day a combined expedition, naval and military, under the command of Commodore Sir James Doyle and Lord Rollo, sailed from Guadaloupe to attack the island of Dominica. On arriving off Roseau they summoned the Governor, M. de Longprie, who, however, prepared for a defence. Orders were therefore given to the troops to land, which was effected about five in the evening of the 6th of June, not one shot being fired till all were on shore. The troops formed quickly on the beach, and although the enemy had four intrenchments upon the face of a steep hill with two 9-pounders in the approach, Lord Rollo at the head of the troops, and Colonel Melville at the head of the grenadiers of the 4th and 22nd regiments, with a surprising alertness and intrepidity drove the enemy from all their intrenchments with a loss to the British of only eight men killed and wounded. The troops lay on their arms that night, and in the morning the whole island submitted.

#### 6. STATE OF EUROPE IN RESPECT TO THE WAR.

After a general war of five years carried on with the greatest effusion of blood and the most extraordinary expense ever known to attend a war of that continuance, it was thought that if the

animosity of the belligerents was not abated, at least a great part of the fuel which upholds war had been consumed. It has been calculated that almost every regiment in the Prussian service had been recruited to the amount of at least 3000 men during the continuance of the war, and men and provisions now began alike to fail; whilst the death of George II. was calculated to endanger very much the yet more important question of money, for the new English minister, Lord Bute, was averse to subsidies, and but for the public voice, would have withheld them altogether. The time seemed, therefore, to have arrived for giving peace to Europe. The war which was truly and originally German had become thoroughly European, and every government was more or less interested in it, although the very existence of a King of Prussia certainly depended upon the result of it; but Frederick, though sadly overmatched by enemies, was enabled by the force of his genius and activity to arrive by the end of 1760 pretty much at the point where he was in 1756. The dominions of the house of Austria, though free from any occupation by an enemy, were nevertheless much wasted. The Russians and Swedes had become tired of a war in which they had acquired neither honour nor advantage. The Elector of Saxony was still in distressed circumstances as ever, and his Polish subjects obstinately refused to interfere on his behalf. France was reduced so low in her finances that she declared her inability any longer to discharge her pecuniary engagements to her allies. Her navy was ruined, her affairs in America and India had become irretrievable, and the West India islands lay at the mercy of the English fleets. Negotiations were accordingly, as usual, set on foot during the winter, and it was proposed to discuss the purely German interests in a Congress at Augsburg. Ambassadors were therefore sent to London and Paris to settle the dispute between Austria and Prussia, but Pitt saw that it would not do for him to propose giving up the conquests he had acquired merely to obtain favourable terms for the German allies of the King, and so he determined to keep the negotiations separate. The Congress of Augsburg, however, never took place, and it was soon obvious that if France pretended to a desire for peace she had every disadvantage in a treaty when she came to be separated from the general cause, since she had suffered every loss during the war, and could scarce avoid making concessions which to her would have been sufficiently mortifying. The death of the Marshal de Belleisle, the most determined partisan of the war, who expired the first day of January, naturally affected the negotiations. The Duke de Choiseul, who now united the vacant portfolio of war with the post of Foreign Minister, and was already deep in the trammels of the "Family Compact," was urgent with the King to imitate the example of his great grandfather, who had resisted his misfortunes till fortune favoured him. He soon therefore proved the insincerity of all his proposals, by endeavouring to entangle the negotiation with the long-pending disputes between England and Spain, relative to the restoration of ships captured during the last war, the cutting of logwood, and the privilege of fishing on the banks of

Newfoundland. All this was artfully brought forward to bring Spain into the quarrel, who, he hoped, could not look with indifference on the humiliation of the elder house of Bourbon.

#### 7. THE CAMPAIGN BEGINS.

The French had obtained at the close of the last campaign the entire and undisturbed possession of the whole territory of Hesse, and had amassed immense magazines in the most convenient situations. The position the French army occupied in Germany was that of an immense crescent, the two advanced points of which were at Göttingen on their right, and Wesel on their left, holding the commerce of the Lower Rhine, and occupying Gotha, Giesen, Mulhausen, Munden, Fritzlar, and Marburg. De Broglie collected from this district a plentiful supply of horses and flour sufficient for five or six months. The Prince de Soubise had full possession of the Lower Rhine, at the head of 110,000 men, and was opposed by the hereditary Prince. Duke Ferdinand fronted the Upper, but De Broglie desired to unite both the French armies, which amounted to 150,000 men, in order to accomplish some grand result. In the midst of these negotiations the campaign of 1761 began. The Duke was nevertheless sensible of the advantages the enemy had over him, and that it was difficult for him, with his numbers and situation, to look for any signal success by which to relieve himself from the hazards of his situation. He knew, however, from experience that the French were ill qualified for winter operations in Germany, and that his own soldiers (besides their superior hardiness) could suffer but little more even from field service than they would endure from the badness of their winter-quarters; at all events nothing could be worse than inaction in a dangerous condition. Having therefore resolved to act, he lost no time in doing so with vigour. His army assembled on the 9th of February without the enemy having any previous notice of their intention. The centre was to be held by his Serene Highness in person, to penetrate directly into Hesse and make its way towards Cassel. The hereditary Prince was to leave the country of Hesse to the eastward, and push forward with the utmost expedition into the heart of the French quarters. General Spörcken, who commanded a corps at a great distance to the left, was to penetrate into Thuringia. The right and left of the army were so disposed as fully to co-operate in the general plan of operations, which were very extensive; for the alarm was not only to be sudden, but as widely diffused as possible, and the object of the movement was to break the communication of the French with the army of the Empire, and to cut off all communications between the French grand army and their garrison at Göttingen, consisting of 7000 or 8000 men. The whole were provided with provisions for nine days. The King encouraged the project, and promised to send General Syburg with 7000 Prussians to join in it. On the 11th of February all the columns advanced: Duke Ferdinand fell so suddenly and unexpectedly on Cassel that the French in that town were compelled to fly in hot haste. This sudden, extensive, and vigorous attack threw the

French into the utmost consternation; they retreated, or rather fled on every side, and it is highly credible that if they had occupied an open country, without sufficient strong posts in their rear, they would have failed to secure their retreat and would have been totally destroyed. Such is the sport of fortune in war, that an army which had but just closed a campaign with so much success, was now driven before an inferior and beaten force without any apparent change in their circumstances. They did not, however, in their retreat neglect to occupy Cassel, into which they threw a garrison equal to a moderate army. The hereditary Prince, whose party was always first in action, made an attempt to surprise Fritslar, but the garrison was prepared and resolute, and though attacked with the Prince's usual spirit, he was obliged to bring up cannon and mortars against it, and it did not surrender till the 15th, when it obtained honourable terms. A large magazine was found here. Marburg was attempted in the same manner, but not with the same success; and General Breidenbach, a Hanoverian of great bravery, experience, and reputation, who commanded, lost his life in the attempt. The Marquis of Granby with the British force was employed to reduce other castles and forts, and the allied army resolutely advanced. As they went forward the French retired, abandoning post after post almost as far as the Main. They destroyed many magazines in their retreat, but the allies advanced with so much rapidity, that many were saved. One alone contained no less than 80,000 sacks of meal, 50,000 sacks of oats, and 1,000,000 rations of hay. These were requisites of immense advantage to the allies, and wonderfully facilitated the progress of the army, which, as it advanced, still found subsistence. The great object of this operation was, however, Cassel, which was to be reduced, and the siege could not be delayed, so that when Prince Ferdinand forced the enemy out of Hesse, he ceased his advance in order to take it. Cassel was garrisoned with seventeen battalions under Count de Broglie. The fortifications were of an old character, but consisted of very strong and high works. There was no doubt but that the place would be defended to the utmost. The allies were cantoned between the rivers Lahn and Fulda, so as to watch the motions of Marshal Broglie's army and cover the siege of Cassel. This was entrusted to the Count of Lippe Schaumburg, a sovereign Prince of the Empire, and esteemed one of the ablest engineers in Europe. Trenches were opened on the 1st of March, but the guns were not ready to open till the 10th. On the 7th a strong sally was made under Count de Broglie, who took three mortars and destroyed several guns. The Governor had made every preparation for a long defence, and had, comically enough, laid in a supply of salted horseflesh in case of need, although it would have been as easy before the siege began to lay in beef or pork: nothing, however, was omitted that could prolong the defence, nor were the beautiful gardens outside the town spared, but were levelled with the ground that they might afford no shelter to the enemy. The left detachment of the allies under Spörcken advanced with a rapidity equal to that of the other two divisions, and with an intrepidity not inferior to the

rest. They were joined on the way by a corps of Prussians, under General Syburg, and the united force cleared all the country between the Werra and the Unstruth, of the bodies of French and Saxons, who fell back and occupied the most important posts on those rivers. As these could readily defend themselves, and be supported on one side by the garrison of Gottenburg, they maintained their ground, and this brought on a sharp action on the 15th of February, at Langensalza, with the Saxons and troops of the Empire, who sought to prevent the approach of the allies to the Saxon frontier.

### 8. THE AFFAIR AT LANGENSALZA.

On the 9th of February at this village on the Unstruth the confederate force under De Stainville was advantageously posted when they were attacked by the allies commanded by Spörcken. After having drawn Syburg's corps of Prussians to his assistance, they advanced on the 14th to the heights of Langensalza, which were occupied by 3000 Saxons. Spörcken occupied the village with the troops of his first line; and it was agreed that he should pass the Unstruth at Thomasbruck, whilst Luckner passed it at Bolstadt, and Syburg at Merchleben. With great difficulty, owing to a rapid thaw which inundated the banks of the river, the troops all got across, and fell upon the enemy. Three whole battalions of Saxons surrendered to the Prussians, and two battalions were made prisoners by the Hanoverians. The enemy's loss was computed at 5000 men, with several pieces of artillery and a large magazine. The blow was well followed up; one body of the allies pushed on to Eisenach and Gotha, whilst another by forced marches got to Fulda; the French gave way on their right; and the army of the Empire, on the left, fell back to Bamberg, totally abandoning a very large tract of country. But, prosperous as had been the operations of the allies, Spörcken was so much in advance of any sufficient line of defence, or, in modern phraseology, of any base of operations, that when Count de Vaux, who commanded the garrison at Göttingen, perceived that this detachment of the allies was pushing on too far, he marched out with a strong force and attacked and routed on its march a Hanoverian convoy, and even occupied the town of Duderstadt, so that Spörcken found it necessary to withdraw his troops, but not before he had fallen on a corps of Imperialists at Saalfeld, under the command of the Austrian General, Clefeld, whom he routed with the loss of 1100 prisoners, nine cannon, and five pair of colours.

### 9. OTHER ENTERPRISING AFFAIRS.

Marshal Broglie now called in his most distant posts, and resolved to collect a considerable force in order to act upon some single point of Duke Ferdinand's line, which had upon its hands more than it was reasonable to expect it could accomplish. Accordingly, as soon as he had collected a sufficient force, he fell upon the hereditary Prince with all his might near the village of Stangerode, in the neighbourhood of Grünberg, where his Highness was advanced in a somewhat

isolated position before the line of the allied army. The attack was commenced by the French cavalry, which at the first shock broke nine regiments of Hanoverian, Hessian, and Brunswick foot, and made 2000 prisoners, though few were killed or wounded on either side. The nature of the ground was favourable to the French, and the great superiority of their numbers gained them the day, with the trophies of ten guns and nineteen stands of colours. The immediate effect of this engagement was to raise the siege of Cassel after twenty-seven days of open trenches. Duke Ferdinand did not deem it advisable now to continue the siege he had undertaken, but again withdrew behind the Diemel, and evacuated the whole country of Hesse, falling back nearly to the cantonments he occupied before this undertaking, which, though it had failed in some of its objects, crippled very much the future movements of the French by the destruction of their great magazines.

It was the 20th of June before the French army was in a condition to resume the offensive; and De Broglie then assembled his army at Cassel, and moved towards the Diemel in order to effect a junction with the army of the Prince de Soubise, who moved up from the Lower Rhine for this purpose. The whole French army received the conqueror of Bergen with such joy that Soubise was jealous of it, and told him he should take an early step to make himself known to those who had not yet had an opportunity of knowing him. He was most impatient to justify the confidence of the two armies, and not a little eager to make his rival the witness of his success. General Spörcken was posted with a strong detachment of 10,000 men in front of the allied army, and was endeavouring to retire before the advance of the French, when the enemy came upon him with so much rapidity that on the 29th of June they overtook his rear, attacked and routed it, taking 800 prisoners, ten pieces of cannon, with 400 horses and 170 waggons. On the same day that they crossed the Diemel Prince Ferdinand fell back to Lippe, and the French Marshal, still advancing, made himself master of Warburg and of Paderborn on the 2nd of July. General Luckner with his partisan troops, and other leaders of the same description, harried the rear of the advancing enemy, routed their convoys, destroyed their magazines, and carried off supplies from the very gates of Cassel. Marshal Broglie had in the mean time got between Prince Ferdinand and Hanover, which induced his Highness to move to the south of the Lippe between Hamm and Lippstadt, in order to get between the Prince de Soubise and the Rhine, so that if the Marshal attempted any move towards the King of England's dominions, he might fall on territory as important to the French as Hanover was to him. Thus while he seemed to abandon the great object of his care he in effect provided for its security, and Marshal Broglie, having united his troops to those of the Prince de Soubise, resolved to attack the Prince of Brunswick. As soon as Ferdinand was aware of this determination he took up a strong position at Hohenover, in which he intrenched himself. The high road from Lippstadt to Hamm passes between the rivers Lippe

and Aest, which are in some places not half a mile apart. It was of the utmost importance to the Prince to keep possession of this isthmus, by which alone he could retreat, if necessary, or command the adjacent country. With this view he established his left on this narrow neck of land. The left extremity of this wing, under General Wutgenau, somewhat in front of Dinkerberg, leaned on the Lippe, where it was perfectly secured by intersected ground and several ditches. The right wing was placed on the heights of Hilbeck, where there were some thick woods and a morass. The centre was before Wambelny and protected by the Saalz rivulet, and here General Conway and the hereditary Prince occupied the ground extending to the left, while General Spörcken supported the left wing with seven battalions and six squadrons. The remainder, under the Marquis of Granby, was posted on the Aest, supported by the village of Kirch-Dinker, where the Saltzbach, a small but very deep river, joins the Aest at a right angle. Nothing could be more advantageous than this position of the army, which was such that the centre and right had a river in front, and the left had rivers on both flanks. Here were placed the strength and flower of the army; and the Count of Lippe had here placed also the greatest portion of his artillery, which defended the most important situations, but was most exposed in front, consequently most likely to be the object of the enemy's most considerable efforts. Such were the dispositions, when on the 15th and 16th of July took place

#### 10. THE BATTLE OF VILLINGSHAUSEN.

About six o'clock on the evening of the 15th a very furious attack was made on Lord Granby's corps. The troops under Wutgenau were not arrived in position, so that his Lordship had to sustain the torrent of impetuosity which the French always throw into their attack by the intrepidity and firmness which characterize the British, and which that gallant officer knew so well how to prize. Granby taken aback defended himself courageously, but was ultimately forced to retreat to the wood before the village of Villingshausen, until Wutgenau having come up, the French were driven back. The allied and French forces attacked and repulsed each other several times with various success till the approach of night, when fresh reinforcements coming up to the French, the English troops abandoned the village, which was immediately occupied by the French.

In this position both parties remained till morning. The left wing of the allies was in the course of the night reinforced by General Wolf's division, and Prince Ferdinand ordered the village to be attacked at break of day, and carried it at the point of the bayonet. Soubise in the mean while came in contact with the right wing of the allies, and finding them stronger than he expected, sent word to De Broglie that he stood in need of Condé's corps, which he requested might be sent to him, but the Marshal refused to send it. For five hours a severe and continued fire was endured without any perceptible effect on either side. The weight of this attack was sustained by Wutgenau's corps, now in position, and it was supported by a degree of bravery that could

not be surprised. About nine Prince Ferdinand discovered that the enemy were erecting batteries on an eminence to command the Marquis of Granby's position; and sensible of the pressing necessity of preventing this, the Prince called from the other side of the Lippe the troops under Spörcken, and with them and the nearest troops at hand he advanced at once upon them. The movement was decisive; the enemy gave way, fell into confusion, and retired with precipitation. Their centre and left had vainly endeavoured to cross the Saltzbach, but were in good order, and now, retiring with the rest, effectually covered the retreat, so that they could not be pursued with any effect, especially as the ground was not favourable for cavalry, the country being much intersected with hedgerows. The loss of the French was thought to be 5000 killed, wounded, and prisoners. The entire regiment of Rouge, consisting of four battalions with their guns, laid down their arms. The loss of the allies did not exceed 1500 or 2000. They kept the battle-field for some time, while the French retreated, Marshal Broglie on Cassel, and the Prince de Soubise over the Böhr. The former was very nearly taken prisoner; for as he was crossing a hedge one of the Prussian hussars caught him by the collar of his coat, but the hussar's horse fell, and De Broglie escaped. The allies afterwards extended their line towards Hammelin, in order to secure the course of the Weser. A curious occurrence took place in this march. Both armies were moving in a thick fog at a short distance from each other. In the obscurity a French dragoon found himself in the midst of one of the columns of the allies, but discovering his mistake, saw at once that quickness and determination alone could save him. Seeing an English officer near him riding carelessly along, he suddenly seized him, and, holding a pistol to his head, cried out, "Submit, or you die." The astonished officer, thinking he had strayed into the enemy's lines, submitted; but soon discovered that he was deceived, when he turned to the trooper and asked him how he could think of seizing him in that manner. He replied, "I know the danger I am in, and am determined to try to escape. If I can succeed, you are my prisoner; if I cannot, I shall be yours." The officer not liking such a contingency, but still held fast by the Frenchman, offered his watch and his purse for liberty in vain. The dragoon was inexorable, and succeeded in joining his own corps with the officer as his prisoner.

In a very short time the French again advanced, and the Prince de Soubise laid siege to Munster: accordingly Ferdinand, though desirous to avoid another battle, came to this Prince's front, and a number of very smart skirmishes ensued. In one of them the young Prince Albert Henry of Brunswick, brother to the hereditary Prince, was mortally wounded by a musket-ball on the 20th of July: the whole army sympathized with the uncle and brother on the loss of one whose rising promise so nobly supported the martial spirit of his family, and the Prince de Soubise sent the two best surgeons of the French army into the allied camp to try to save him. On the 30th of August the hereditary Prince assaulted Dorsten, garrisoned by a battalion of French troops, who were obliged to



surrender themselves to his resolution and perseverance. Here he destroyed some ovens; and in similar enterprises he pushed as far as Fritzlar. But though he succeeded in destroying many lesser magazines, yet all the fortresses were now in the hands of the French, where the grand magazines were well secured. In October the French bombarded Wolfenbittel with one corps d'armée, and invested Brunswick with another under Prince Xavier. Ferdinand with all the expedition in his power detached the young Prince Frederick to the relief of those important family residences. With the aid of the partisan Luckner, he fell upon the enemy, who expected no such attack, and compelled him to abandon both the one and the other.

Whilst De Broglie's detachments succeeded thus in distressing the country to the eastward of the Weser, the Prince de Soubise, who by the removal of the hereditary Prince saw no longer any thing to oppose him, spread his army by detachments all over Westphalia, and ravaged it in the most cruel manner. He took Osnabrück, and gave the place to pillage. He invested Embden, which was garrisoned by two English invalid companies, who at the desire of the timid inhabitants capitulated, but the town and the whole country of East Friesland was nevertheless laid under a ruinous contribution. Their exorbitances attained to such an extremity that the boors rose against the French troops, and with such arms as their rage supplied fairly drove them out of their country. A corps under the Prince de Condé laid siege to Meppen-on-the Ems, where there were some magazines; but in three days it was reduced, and on the 3rd of October the garrison of 500 men surrendered it to the enemy. The city of Breuen was a great trading town advantageously situated on the Weser, and here the allies had amassed immense magazines, but it was defended by a weak garrison. The possession of it would have given the French the command of the river by which the allies derived all their subsistence; and, had it been lost, the English would have been locked up in the heart of Germany, deprived of every resource from the side of the sea. The inhabitants, exasperated by the example of French violence and rapine that was going on every where around them, joined themselves to the garrison, whom they encouraged and aided to defend the place: and the French were obliged to retire before a strong reinforcement that was immediately sent to rescue this important city, while some English battalions were joined to the garrison to prevent a repetition of the attempt. The Prince of Brunswick, settled in his head-quarters at Buhne, contented himself with sending out such detachments as he could spare successively to the relief of the places attacked, and calmly awaited the approach of winter. In his position he held the course of the Weser well secured, and prevented by his accustomed firmness any aggressive attempt on the part of the enemy opposed to him. About the middle of November the Prince de Soubise's army went into winter-quarters behind the Rhine.

### 11. THE DUKE DE BROGLIE RECALLED, AND THE PRINCE DE SOUBISE COMMANDS THE FRENCH ARMY.

Since the fight at Villingshausen the two French generals separated their armies, otherwise it is most probable they would have driven the allies out of the country; but a deep-rooted enmity existed between them, and after the defeat of the 16th of July they made representations to their court against one another. Broglie blamed Soubise that he had not supported him; and Soubise, on the other hand, averred that Broglie neither consulted nor apprised him of his intention to fight, out of a desire to obtain a victory without his help. The matter was referred to the judgment of the marshals of France, and the court declared for Soubise, while the public and the army pronounced for Broglie, who by the influence of Madame de Pompadour was disgraced and exiled. When this was made known at Paris the tragedy of Tancrède happened to be given, in which were these lines:

“ On dépouille Tancrède, on l'exile, on l'outrage;  
C'est le sort d'un héros d'être persécuté.”

The public seized the allusion, and called for its repetition. Such public demonstrations weakened the influence of France, whose real interests and good name were sacrificed to a disgraceful court *camarilla*, in opposition to the popular judgment.

### 12. THE AUSTRIAN AND PRUSSIAN ARMIES.

Until this year the operations of the Prussian grand army had taken the lead in interest and importance before all the other events of the campaign, but the King seemed fatigued with his efforts, and mortified by his undecisive victories, so that an inactivity and languor was now diffused over all his proceedings. He was in fact reduced to a more strict observance than ever of his system of defence. Obligated to await the attacks of his enemies, and watch for such errors as they might make, reserving his strength as much as possible for decisive moments, he seemed to have adopted the caution and slowness which had been so long opposed to his vivacity by Marshal Daun. The unexpected withdrawal of the English subsidies by the new British ministry doubtless had some effect in the determination of Frederick to act on the defensive in this campaign; but such caution on the part of the King, to which his enemies had never been accustomed, was regarded with the more suspicion, and as a feint to carry some point with more certainty. Frederick was intrenched in a very strong position at Bunzelwitz in Upper Silesia, not far from Schweidnitz. From the nature of the ground, from the situation of the hills, and course of the rivers, and from the marshy nature of its approaches, it was almost impregnable, and was defended by 466 pieces of artillery and 182 mortars. Prince Henry was likewise strongly intrenched under Leipsic. He had occasional skirmishes with the Imperial army who were in position near Reichenbach, much distressed for provisions, and, therefore, not able to undertake any thing against him, so that

on the 16th of August he was enabled to detach a Prussian corps to oppose the Swedes, who threatened to advance a force towards Berlin. Marshal Daun remained quiet in his camp at Dresden till the end of September, when he prepared to attack the Prince, but waited for reinforcements from Loudon. To this general had been entrusted the sole command in Silesia, where he was to be joined by the Russians under Marshal Butturlin, the successor of Soltikow. But Loudon had caught the infection of his adversary, and remained for two months in the strong position of Brannau inactive. He who had distinguished himself by a degree of intrepidity approaching to rashness was now shackled by instructions from the council of war at Vienna, and was fearful of withering the laurels he had acquired in the preceding campaigns, and which had made him many enemies, who were jealous of his rapid and unexampled rise. Above all, he was embarrassed by the capricious and dilatory conduct of the Russians, arising from the uncertain state of the court and cabinet of St. Petersburg.

### 13. THE RUSSIAN ARMY UNDER MARSHAL BUTTURLIN.

The Czarina Elizabeth was fast sinking into her grave under a mortal disease. Her favourite was devoted to France; her successor, the Grand Duke Peter, was an enthusiastic admirer of the King of Prussia; Marshal Butturlin was of this latter party, and was therefore in no hurry to crush Frederick, but durst not resist the specific orders of the Empress, and was anxious not to commit the honour of the Russian army. Loudon passed the early part of the campaign in different manœuvres to seize Neisse or some fortress on the frontiers of Silesia, as a support to his line of operations. Sometimes he advanced as if he meant to join the Russians; sometimes his motions indicated a design on Schweidnitz; now he made a feint as if he was prepared to fall upon Lower Silesia, but he was baffled by the King's skill and activity. General Goltz was posted near Glogau with a Prussian corps of 12,000 men, and in consequence of Loudon's movements he fell back under the walls of Schweidnitz in the month of April. As soon as the King heard of this he gave the defence of Saxony over to his brother, and on the 3rd of May crossed the Elbe near Strehlen, and hastened to the assistance of Goltz. The advance of Frederick obliged Loudon to go back into Bohemia on the 15th to await there the promised co-operation of the Russians. The Prussian general was accordingly sent to watch the advance of Butturlin, but Goltz just at this moment died suddenly and the command was given to Ziethen, who forthwith advanced into Poland, but although he came to some slight encounters with the Russians, he was forced to retire before them, and they advanced as far as the Oder to try and effect a junction with Loudon. The remarkable droughts in the beginning of the season, which had greatly lowered the waters of the Oder, facilitated a junction of Butturlin's and Loudon's armies. Frederick did all he could to prevent it, but had only 55,000 men to oppose to their united force, and

could not make head against them. At length on the 8th of August Butturlin bombarded Breslau and succeeded on the 17th in crossing the Oder near Leubus; then effecting a junction with the Austrians between Jauer and Striegau, the combined troops formed a force of 130,000 men. Unwilling to trust himself "en rase campagne" to such superior numbers, the King took possession of his famous camp of Bunzelwitz near Schweidnitz, where, as above stated, he had intrenched himself so judiciously, that the united armies could do nothing against him, until at last they were driven away through want of the supplies that so immense a force required.

While these things were taking place in Silesia the other grand divisions of the Russian army advanced without opposition into Pomerania. General Todleben had been removed from the command, suspected of being in a secret understanding with Frederick, and General Romanzow had succeeded him. A strong fleet consisting of forty sail of all kinds assisted his movements, and while these blockaded Colberg by sea, the army formed the siege of the place by land. A Prussian corps of 6000 or 7000 under General Werner and Prince Eugene of Wurtemberg lay, however, intrenched under the cannon of the fortress. The King was extremely alarmed at the danger of this momentous post, which, from the beginning of the war, had occupied his most anxious attention. It was the key of his dominions to the north, and yet he was, as it were, chained down at an immense distance from proceeding to its relief. Though Loudon and Butturlin united were enough to demand all his force, yet he resolved to send a considerable detachment under General Platen to the assistance of Colberg. The fertility of his genius suggested to him a double advantage from this single expedient. He directed their march through Poland, with directions to destroy the Russian magazines which had been amassed on the frontiers of that kingdom, and from which their army in Silesia drew their whole subsistence. The event entirely answered to his wishes; Platen ruined three principal magazines of the enemy. On the 11th of September, at Koblin, he attacked Brigadier Czerepow, who with 3000 men protected a flying convoy of 500 waggons, which he destroyed, and burned or scattered the supplies they carried. The men who formed this convoy were at the same time attacked by the bayonet, and the Brigadier with 1800 men made prisoners. After this bold and successful exploit General Platen resumed his march with the utmost diligence to the relief of Colberg, which Romanzow closely invested, while Polesky bombarded it from the Russian and Swedish fleet, consisting of fifty-four vessels of war, and made several descents, which, however, Prince Eugene repelled successfully. The blow at their supplies struck the Russians with the utmost consternation, and compelled Butturlin and Loudon to sever the union they had so lately and with so much difficulty compassed; for as the Austrians could not furnish the Russians with subsistence, these feared lest their future provisionment should become wholly precarious. Marshal Butturlin, therefore, on the 10th of September, marched away, and on the 13th crossed the Oder again, leaving Czernichew with 20,000 men to

remain with Loudon, who was of course obliged to raise forthwith the blockade of Frederick's camp at Bunzelwitz.

#### 14. LOUDON TAKES SCHWEIDNITZ BY ASSAULT.

On the retreat of Butturlin the King imagined himself at liberty. Loudon retired in chagrin towards the mountains, and Frederick, after remaining fourteen days in his camp, thinking to be better supplied if he approached nearer the Oder than he was at Schweidnitz, and in no fear now of his enemy, drafted 4000 men out of the garrison of that fortress to save its supplies, feeling confident that if a siege of it was threatened he should have time and opportunity to provide for the safety of that important post. These considerations induced Frederick to break up his camp at Bunzelwitz and advance to Münsterberg, two days' march from Schweidnitz. He thought also by this movement to drive Loudon away from Freyberg and to open himself a passage back into Saxony. Of the 3000 men who now formed the garrison of Schweidnitz many were deserters, or peasants compelled to enter the service. It likewise contained 500 Austrian prisoners, one of whom, Major Rocca, an Italian partisan, had been imprudently indulged with great liberty by the governor, Zastrow. This officer found leisure to examine the fortifications, and having observed the negligence that existed in the service of the garrison, he devised means to communicate this to Marshal Loudon. The Marshal, therefore, was no sooner aware of the King's departure than, instead of following him, he sent General Draskowitz with a detachment to observe his movements, and resolved to attempt the assault of this strong place by a coup-de-main. He communicated his intention to the troops, to whom he made an earnest appeal that they would not pillage the town. The Walloon grenadiers immediately replied, "Lead us on to gain glory, we do not want money." On the night of the 30th of September he moved from his position with twenty battalions, and at three in the morning of the 1st of October found himself before the fortress, when he divided his force into four bodies, and prepared to attack the gates of Striegau and Breslau, Waterfort and Benkendorf. This assault was to be made on all the four outworks at the same time, and the troops approached with so much precaution that not a gun was discharged, and they were wholly unperceived by the garrison. The commandant, General Zastrow, had become informed of the intentions of the enemy, or was suspicious of some intended enterprise, and ordered the garrison to be under arms on the ramparts, but omitted to send out patrols or throw light balls within range. The Austrians, therefore, advanced quietly to the palisades, and scaled all four gates at one and the same moment, so that the troops who defended them had scarce time to fire. In one place alone they experienced a desperate resistance. The regiment of Loudon was twice repulsed, when Count Wallis, who led them to the assault, exclaimed, "Comrades, we must scale the fortress, or I must here perish; such was my promise to our commander; our regiment bears his name, and we must conquer or die." This appeal did wonders; the soldiers by desperate efforts mounted

the ramparts. All was done by the bayonet, for the Austrians brought no artillery with them. In one of the outworks the fire of the small arms set fire to a powder magazine, which blew up and destroyed about 300 of the Austrians and as many Prussians. As soon as the outworks were carried they prepared to assault the body of the place. The confusion of the garrison was increased by the Austrian prisoners, who burst open the doors of the casemates in which they were confined and took possession of the bridges. By break of day Schweidnitz with its governor, General Zastrow, and five battalions, or 3300 Prussian troops, were in the hands of the Austrians, who did not lose more in this attempt than 1600 men, most of whom were killed by the explosion of the magazine. In this attack a Russian detachment, which was with the besieging army, gave one of those dreadful proofs of bravery peculiar to that nation: stopped unexpectedly by a deep wet fosse, the foremost rank precipitated themselves into the water, where they were suffocated, when their comrades formed a bridge of their dead bodies and passed over. There was no capitulation, and the place was accordingly given up to pillage for four hours. Zastrow, the Prussian commandant, was tried by court-martial at the conclusion of the war, and sentenced to be deprived of his military rank, and to be imprisoned in a fortress. At the conclusion of his imprisonment he entered the service of Hesse. For this success Loudon also had well nigh earned punishment as he did lose favour. He had not consulted the Aulic Council at Vienna before undertaking the enterprise, and had the indiscretion to communicate the result to the Emperor, whom Maria Theresa desired to exclude as much as possible from participation in public affairs, but who happened to be the first to hear it and communicate it to his consort. The Empress Queen was persuaded to do as much as thank her general, and to order a gratuity to each of his soldiers; but as long as she lived, that is, for seventeen years afterwards, Loudon was in disgrace at court, and obtained no promotion. Such is the fate sometimes of even a successful soldier, nor were there wanting courtiers who called this brilliant and most important enterprise a mere affair for Croats, of which corps Loudon had been a major at the commencement of the war.

Loudon had however gained a most important advantage by this daring blow, for it gave the Austrians a firm footing in Silesia. Frederick lost by it the key of that much-coveted province, and he felt the mortification acutely. He was now in a worse situation than at the close of any former year. The loss of Schweidnitz deranged all his projects; he saw that while the Austrians held this place he could make no motion for the relief of any part of his dominions without exposing Breslau. In order, therefore, to cover this important place still left to him with Neisse and Brieg, he fell back to Strehlen on the Ohlau, having despatched General Schenkendorf to see to the means of defence of those places.

The sad effect which the dispiriting news of the loss of Schweidnitz had upon his army Frederick dispelled by an address, in which

he appealed to their patriotism, and breathed fresh courage in their hearts. He did not allow his own to despair, but he saw disease, want, and despair creeping into the camp. He did all in his power to sustain the courage of his men. The sound of his voice, the glance of his eye, inspired his soldiers always with confidence, and now kept up their drooping spirits. They were frequently heard to say among themselves, "Fritz is still with us, he is better than 50,000 men." Nevertheless there was just at this moment extreme danger of losing him.

#### 15. ATTEMPT ON THE LIFE OF FREDERICK.

Whilst the King of Prussia remained in his camp about 150 paces from Strehlen, guarded by a single company of grenadiers, he narrowly escaped an act of the blackest treachery. A Silesian gentleman living a few miles distant, a Baron Von Warkotsch, had served in the early years of the war as captain in the Austrian army, but had been received with much kindness by Frederick, and had been a frequent visitor to his head-quarters. This enabled him to study the strength of the post, and the number of its defenders, and on communicating its weakness to the Austrian commanders, they closed with him to effect the capture of the King for 100,000 livres. A Roman Catholic priest of the name of Schmidt was also in the plot, and a Colonel Wallis. One Kappel, a servant employed in the correspondence between these parties, entertained suspicions or had some curiosity to know what the frequency of his being sent with messages denoted, and opened one of the letters. Thunderstruck with the information he had acquired, he immediately repaired to Dr. Gerlach, the Protestant minister of the village. Gerlach recommended that he should be forthwith carried to the King; but to save the discovery from any danger, he copied the letter, and another messenger was sent with the copy. Kappel, at eight in the morning of the 30th of November, and not without difficulty, got admission to the King and delivered into his hands the original letter. Warkotsch and Schmidt were seized, but found means to escape; they were nevertheless tried *par contumace*, found guilty of high treason, and sentenced to be executed in effigy. When the sentence was brought to the King he took a pen and signed it, saying, "Let it be done, for the portraits are probably of as much value as the originals." Kappel was well rewarded for his share in this transaction, but the King said to him, "You have not been acting from your own impulse, you have been decidedly an instrument for my safety in the hands of a higher power." Nevertheless the King's spirits were much affected by all these events, and he did not conceal his feelings from his old friend Ziethen, who shared with him all the toils of the camp, and was not unfrequently applied to for consolation. He asked him ironically if he had a single ally left. "No," replied Ziethen, pointing above, "except that old one up there; He will not abandon us." "Ah!" sighed the King, "He works no more miracles." "We don't want them," replied Ziethen, "but He fights for us, and does not allow us to sink." The camp at Strehlen was however destined

to obtain another historical notoriety. In the course of the month of October an embassy arrived there from the Tartar Khan of the Crimea, who, as a decided foe to the Russians, made offers to the Prussian King of furnishing troops to him at a stipulated price. The ambassador was received with fitting honour, and a treaty concluded by which 16,000 Tartars were to enter Silesia the following year, whilst a simultaneous incursion on Russia was to be undertaken by the Khan with 24,000. With the Turkish Sultan also, after several abortive attempts, a treaty was concluded at this time, and the Porte forthwith collected at Belgrade a considerable host to oppose Frederick's enemies. Both these treaties were much desired by Frederick in order to create a diversion, but circumstances prevented their ever taking effect.

#### 16. COLBERG IS BESIEGED AND TAKEN BY THE RUSSIANS.

The misfortunes of Frederick were, however, not yet ended. General Werner, on whom he relied for giving assistance to Colberg, having imprudently preceded a reinforcement that he was leading to the place, was taken prisoner; and General Platen quitting the intrenchments which he had maintained in conjunction with the Prince of Wurtemberg, in order to protect this reinforcement from the strong detachments of Russians who overspread the whole country, had the misfortune to meet an infinitely superior body of the enemy, who defeated him and captured a part of his detachment, leaving him with the remainder of his troops to escape with difficulty to Stettin. General Knollock had established himself at Treptow to serve as a resting-place for these convoys, but on Platen's defeat he was also assailed by Romanzow with a vastly superior force, so that he was compelled to surrender, and he and 2000 men with him became prisoners of war. These advantages inspired the Russians, and enabled them to contend with the extreme rigour of the season in this northern latitude, and to continue the siege of Colberg. All hope of introducing supplies into that place by land was now rendered futile, and though the Russian fleet had been driven away from the coast, any succour from the sea was too precarious to be depended on. In this desperate situation Prince Eugene of Wurtemberg became apprehensive lest his army, which was quite unable to retain the town, should share its fate from the famine that was impending over them, if he delayed any longer to remove from its works. He therefore resolved to break through the investing army and leave Colberg to make the best terms the circumstances would permit, which design he accomplished on the 14th of November, happily with little or no loss. The plan was well formed and cleverly executed, and this retreat, which might have been regarded as impossible in the face of so large an investing force, was accomplished without loss, and may be classed among the most extraordinary military adventures that have been recorded in history. Prince Eugene had indeed maintained his camp before Colberg for twenty-three weeks, greatly to the surprise and much to the satisfaction of Frederick.

The brave General Heiden commanded in this garrison, and had



held out an incredible time against an united fleet and besieging army; but now, when hopeless of all relief, his garrison was exhausted and reduced to the last loaf, he was summoned to surrender, his reply was, "We will defend ourselves as long as we have ammunition and bread." By an ingenious expedient of watering the ramparts, which immediately froze, he prevented every attempt at an escalade; but at length on the 16th of December, all his provisions being exhausted, he capitulated, and the garrison were made prisoners, marching out with honours after a most remarkable siege which had lasted four months: the 300 men, who were all that were left with Heiden, were paraded in triumph as a curiosity at St. Petersburg.

The loss of Schweidnitz and Colberg enabled the Austrians to winter in Silesia, and the Russians in Pomerania. By the possession of Colberg they were become masters of the Baltic, for there was no fleet there to oppose them, and they thus obtained a post at which they could form magazines without conveying them through Poland. The road also now lay open before them into the heart of Brandenburg; Stettin alone stood in the way, and it was obvious that nothing but the advanced season could save it from the fate of Colberg.

Generals Stuttenheim and Belling had had many smart skirmishes with the Swedes under the command of Ehrenschwerd, but they were unimportant. On the 5th of November Marshal Daun, whose army consisted of fifty battalions, twenty-six regiments of cavalry, and two pulks of Uhlans, advanced against Prince Henry and drove in his advanced posts; but it was already too late in the season for active operations, and the Prince had fairly acquired the glory during this campaign of maintaining himself successfully against the army of Marshal Daun and that of Serbelloni and Stolberg, as well as against that of Saxony with Prince Albert at its head. All these troops now sought winter-quarters—Daun at Dresden, Freyberg, and Nossen; and Prince Henry in the neighbourhood of Meissen and Muegeln; Loudon took up his quarters at Schweidnitz and its neighbourhood; and Frederick cantoned his army along the Oder from Brieg to Glogau.

#### 17. ATTEMPT ON MAGDEBURG.

About this time a misfortune threatened Frederick, which was even greater than any that had hitherto happened to him. Magdeburg was the citadel of the Prussian monarchy. Within its unassailable works Austrians, Russians, French, Saxons, and troops of the Empire were confined as prisoners. Here were deposited the public archives, the King's treasure, and a vast amount of private property. Here also were the magazines, provisions, and ammunition for the different Prussian armies. Among the foreign prisoners here was the famous Frederick Baron Trenck, who was loaded with chains and confined in one of the dungeons of Magdeburg. By means of his indefatigable activity, and by the aid of money, which his friends found means to convey to him, he formed a plan to release 16,000 Austrian prisoners, and by their aid to overmaster the garrison, which did not exceed 900, amongst whom were

officers friendly to Trenck. Some treachery at Vienna discovered this formidable conspiracy.

It is remarkable that this whole campaign passed without one regular battle having been fought between the King and any of his enemies, and that without it the affairs of the Empress Queen had been more prosperous than during any preceding period of the war. Her sanguine hopes seemed almost realized, and were only equalled by the despondency of her rival. Frederick repaired to Breslau to hasten the completion of an intrenched camp which he had ordered to be commenced there. He secluded himself from society. He had been too long the intimate companion of death, had too frequently seen destruction around him in every shape, to flinch or feel nervous at coming disasters. His resolution had been long since taken, and he determined in his last extremity to terminate his career with glory under the walls of the capital of Silesia.

1762.

1. WAR DECLARED BETWEEN GREAT BRITAIN AND SPAIN—THE FAMILY COMPACT.—2. DEATH OF THE CZARINA AND WITHDRAWAL OF THE RUSSIAN TROOPS FROM GERMANY.—3. CONSEQUENCES OF THE RUSSIAN CHANGE OF POLICY ON THE WAR.—4. PRINCE HENRY ATTACKS GENERAL SERBELLONI.—5. THE KING ATTACKS DAUN NEAR SCHWEDNITZ.—6. CATHARINE, EMPRESS OF RUSSIA, ORDERS HER TROOPS TO QUIT FREDERICK'S ARMY.—7. BATTLE OF SCHWEDNITZ.—8. THE WAR IN WESTPHALIA—FIGHTS AT WILHEMSTHAL, LUTTERBERG, AND JOHANNISBERG.—9. BLOODY AFFAIR AT AMONEBURG—SIEGE AND CAPTURE OF CASSEL.—10. THE KING OF PRUSSIA BESIEGES AND TAKES SCHWEDNITZ.—11. THE BATTLE OF FREYBERG, THE LAST OF THE SEVEN YEARS' WAR.—12. THE WAR IN THE PENINSULA.—13. WAR IN THE WEST INDIES—CONJUNCT EXPEDITION AGAINST THE FRENCH AND SPANISH COLONIES.—14. THE SIEGE OF THE HAVANNAH.—15. EXPEDITION AGAINST THE MANILLAS.—16. NAVAL WAR.—17. SUCCESSFUL OF THE SPANIARDS AGAINST THE PORTUGUESE.—18. THE FRENCH ATTACK NEWFOUNDLAND.—19. DEATH AND MILITARY CHARACTER OF ADMIRAL LORD ANSON.—20. FREDERICK CONCLUDES A TRUCE FOR SAXONY AND SILESIA, AND RAVAGES FRANCONIA.

1. WAR DECLARED BETWEEN GREAT BRITAIN AND SPAIN—THE FAMILY COMPACT.

Considerable altercations had been going on between Britain and Spain for some time, which now at length ended in a rupture, and war was formally declared on both sides on the 4th of January, for the Family Compact which had been concluded about the middle of last August between the Bourbons of France and Spain, was now declared. This treaty was in its element most dangerous and

objectionable, since it turned upon family and not national interests. The Earl of Bristol, the British ambassador, had accordingly quitted Madrid in December of last year. Since Great Britain was a kingdom she never was in such a doubtful and dangerous situation from continental confederacies; directly or indirectly, she was engaging in a war not only with all the great military powers of Europe, but what was more material to her existence, with the most considerable part of its maritime strength. According to the computation already named, the navy of Spain counted upwards of 100 men-of-war, and although the French navy had been greatly reduced, it again became of consideration when it was to be counted together with the Spanish. This last was a power untouched in its resources of men, money, and stores, while Great Britain, exhausted of men by her many victories, was sinking under a debt of more than 100 millions. Spain, however, had a weakness in the very constitution of her force. Her resources, though very great, were not within herself, and were subject to be intercepted by the operations of the war, or to be destroyed in detail, or at any rate to be retarded *in transitu*. Endeavours were made by France and Spain to draw Portugal into their alliance. The most humiliating propositions were made to her, but in this emergency the firmness of Joseph, King of Portugal, was eminent, and entitled him to the respect of posterity. His answer was moderate but firm: he observed that his alliance with England was ancient, and therefore could give no offence at this juncture, that he resolved to adhere to so ancient and natural an alliance, and to brave all dangers and difficulties in order that he might preserve his fidelity inviolate. In a few months France and Spain jointly declared war against Portugal. The declared object of this war was to prevent Great Britain from having the military and commercial use of that kingdom, and as it was impossible to attain this object by naval operations, it was to be attempted by a military inroad into the kingdom. In this her imminent peril which she had so nobly incurred for her ally, she trusted to the resources of Great Britain, who with a just and merited magnanimity made astonishing efforts at the close of this long and ruinous war to prop up the feeble resources which Portugal could oppose to her antagonists: officers, troops, artillery, arms, ammunition, military stores, provisions, and money were freely sent over to aid the Portuguese to put forth their natural strength, and the war was at once extended to the whole Peninsula. Sunk in indolence and ignorance, and reposing under the protection of England against their formidable neighbour, the Portuguese had laid aside all their former martial spirit, and had utterly neglected all internal defence. They had suffered their army insensibly to moulder away, and that portion which remained was without discipline, without officers, and the fortresses in the worst state of defence. Endeavours were, however, made to bring this force into the field, which, although the people were of the bravest, was become thus degraded; but for this it was necessary to find a general of name and talent to place at their head. It has been remarked that although "all Europe has soldiers,

Germany alone has generals." The reigning Count of Lippe-Buckeburg was the German general now selected to be placed at the head of the Portuguese army. He was a man born to command, of eccentric character but highly educated, and one of the most renowned engineer officers: he soon established an order and discipline amongst the Portuguese troops, which gave them the ability to contend successfully with the Spaniards in this campaign, and which entitles him to distinction in all military annals. The citadel of Elvas still perpetuates his name to Portuguese gratitude, "Fort La Lippe."

## 2. DEATH OF THE CZARINA AND WITHDRAWAL OF THE RUSSIAN TROOPS FROM GERMANY.

With this poor addition to the alliance the new year commenced, and though Great Britain with her immense resources and insular situation might endure the coming struggle, neither Prussia nor Portugal seemed likely to live through it. The first parliament of the young King of Great Britain had met, and the Prussian subsidy was neither asked for nor mentioned. England, in fact, refused to Prussia all further pecuniary contributions; Frederick knew not where to find men or money, for his kingdom was reduced to the last stage of exhaustion; victories might check the progress of his enemies, but to get back the fortresses they had captured required money and preparations to which he was unequal. Nothing was more likely than that Stettin would shortly be besieged and taken, and that the whole of his Electorate would remain in the possession of the Russians who now occupied it. The King's natural despondency increased, he spoke but little, rarely appeared on parade, laid aside his poetry and his flute, and carried poison about with him in his pocket<sup>1</sup>.

The tremendous storm which seemed impending over the stout monarch was dissipated by one of those sudden and extraordinary changes in human affairs, which outstrip all human foresight, confound the reasonings of the wisest politicians, and decide pre-eminently the fate of nations. The Czarina Elizabeth, second daughter of Peter the Great, and the inveterate and inflexible enemy of the King of Prussia, died on the 5th of January. She was succeeded on the throne of Russia by her nephew, Peter the Third, a prince who in his early life had visited Berlin, and was then struck with the admirable discipline of the Prussian army, while the splendid successes, the unshrinking fortitude, and the heroism of Frederick, inspired him with the most enthusiastic admiration of him. The King had made him a Knight of the Prussian order of the Black Eagle during the war, and in writing at the time to the British minister at St. Petersburg, he said, "Is not this a very extraordinary Knight to feed 80,000 men at my expense? I beg you will tell him it is against the institutes of the Order for a Knight to eat up his Grand Master." The Czar Peter had scarcely received

<sup>1</sup> A narrow glass tube, with five or six pills in it of a deadly poison, was found, still untouched, after his death, and was supposed to have been the means of self-destruction carried about by the King in his pocket at this time.

the oath of allegiance from his subjects, before he ordered his troops to abstain from hostilities against the King of Prussia, and to quit the Austrian army. He sent back all the Prussian prisoners he had in his power, and in restoring General Werner to liberty presented him with a purse of 1000 ducats.

### 3. CONSEQUENCES OF THE RUSSIAN CHANGE OF POLICY ON THE WAR.

This change of politics at St. Petersburg occasioned a similar resolution in the court of Stockholm. Sweden, which appeared most endangered by this new friendship between Russia and Prussia, was the first to recognize her altered interests, and as the Queen was Frederick's sister, she was naturally eager to open negotiations for peace. Sweden, since she had recovered her liberties, had lost all political importance, and acted entirely under the direction of Russian counsels, nevertheless her accession to the alliance deprived Maria Theresa of another ally. But besides the extravagant admiration of Peter for Frederick, he was desirous of recovering from Denmark the duchy of Sleswick, to which he had pretensions as Duke of Holstein, so that new subjects of dispute and new parties were brought into the war by his accession to the Russian throne, and while the Czar offered the King of Prussia in his great distress every thing he could have hoped from a series of victories, and forthwith united his forces with those of that monarch in Silesia, he stipulated for a little war of his own in Denmark, and caused an army to march towards Holstein. The King of Denmark, though threatened by so formidable a power, was not terrified into any mean concessions, but recruited his army, repaired his fortifications, and since he could neither obtain money from so poor a kingdom as his own, nor borrow it in Europe, he determined to revive a claim of sovereignty over the free city of Hamburg, and therefore commenced the war without any previous notice by calling on Hamburg for a large contribution, while he anticipated the Czar by the march of his little army to enforce it. So sudden a change in its political relations caused the world to stand aghast. The exultation of Frederick at this fortunate and long-expected contingency was equal to his former despondency. He broke from his sullen retirement, and appeared in public with all his former cheerfulness; the load of anxieties which had oppressed him, and against which he had borne up with such unexampled fortitude, was now much lightened; and he was enabled again to indulge the ardour of his genius and to act with vigour.

The Empress Queen, on the contrary, suddenly fell from her towering hopes. She had prepared herself for the recovery of her province of Silesia, and to punish her unprincipled adversary by completing the ruin of the Prussian monarchy. In consequence of her successes in the late campaign she had haughtily rejected the overtures of England to mediate an accommodation; and so certain was she of the crowning success that awaited her armies in the coming campaign, that she had, on a principle of mistaken economy, consi-

dered it advisable and safe to disband 20,000 of her army. This was a step which, although sanctioned by Marshal Daun, who was the oracle of the Empress Queen in all military affairs, was loudly exclaimed against by the generals at Vienna, and Prince Löwenstein said publicly, "Much to be pitied Empress! how badly are you advised!" To add to her distresses during this winter, a leprous disorder of a very contagious character rendered a great part of her remaining army unfit for service, and Loudon, finding himself exposed to many mortifications, threw up his command.

#### 4. PRINCE HENRY ATTACKS GENERAL SERBELLONI.

The King of Prussia lost no time in profiting by all these revolutions in his favour. Before the favourable change which had taken place in his prospects, Frederick, catching at any hope of assistance, had, as has been stated, accepted an offer from the Khan of Tartary to bring 40,000 men to his assistance. The Tartars now came into the field, and General Werner was associated with them at the head of a small Prussian detachment, and took post in Upper Silesia to threaten Hungary. Every portion of the King's army was now increased, and especially the light troops. New battalions of free bands, as well as hussars and dragoons, were raised. The Bosniacs, a body of cavalry of Turkish character, armed with lances like the Uhlans, were augmented to 1000 men, and placed under the command of Major Lange, who, on account of his being a Protestant, had quitted the Austrian for the Prussian service. The artillery was increased by 3500 men, and an innovation adopted from the Austrians was for the first time made use of. Some hundred of these artillerymen were mounted on good horses, with light field-pieces, which could be quickly limbered and unlimbered, and could advance with the hussars: this was the germ of the now much-valued horse artillery.

The King proposed to himself two grand objects in the ensuing campaign—the recovery of Dresden and Schweidnitz—and in the month of May he assembled his troops in the camp at Breslau. His brother, Prince Henry, was the first to take the field, who, on the 12th of May, made a vigorous push on the Imperial posts towards the frontiers of Saxony and Bohemia: he had with him fifty-eight battalions and ninety-three squadrons. The Austrian commander, General Serbelloni, who had fifty-seven battalions and 153 squadrons, had covered his army with a chain of posts. The Imperialist army, commanded by Prince Stolberg, consisted of thirty-eight battalions and twenty-seven squadrons. Prince Henry uniting with Belling, who came from Mecklenburg after the truce with Sweden, passed the Moldau, penetrated the chain, and prevented the junction of these two armies. He attacked Serbelloni in his line, near Döbeln, on the 12th of May, and took from him 1500 prisoners, and three guns, and several military trophies. The Empress Queen dissatisfied with Serbelloni ordered Haddick to supersede him, who, to display more energy and gain some reputation, effected a junction with the troops of the Empire. The Austrians attempted to recover their posts by

several efforts, but were repulsed with the loss of 1000 men on the 1st of June, and Prince Henry remained so much master of Saxony that it was necessary for the Austrians to maintain a large army apart from that of Silesia, to prevent, if possible, his making irruptions into the very heart of Bohemia.

##### 5. THE KING ATTACKS DAUN NEAR SCHWEIDNITZ.

Towards the latter end of June the corps of Czernichew, who had after their successes together in the last campaign, wintered with the Austrian troops, now quitted their former allies, on the conclusion of the treaty of offensive alliance between Russia and Prussia, and taking the route to Poland, joined the Prussians. As soon as this junction was formed, Frederick resolved to make a trial of what these men could do in his favour who had acted so strenuously against him. Marshal Daun took the command of the Austrian army of Silesia on the 9th of May, and occupied the heights of Burkersdorf in the neighbourhood of Schweidnitz, by which he was enabled to protect that city. His principal efforts were directed to preserve the fortress, and to render it capable of sustaining a long siege. Guasco, a distinguished general in the Austrian service, was made Governor, with a garrison of 12,000 chosen troops, and Gribeauval, one of the first engineers of the time, was placed under him. During the whole winter, peasants and soldiers had been employed in repairing and augmenting the works, and the passes in the hills were so strengthened as to render the approaches almost unassailable, and maintained a communication between the covering army and the plain. Daun on the 16th descended into the plain and encamped at the distance of six miles beyond Schweidnitz, with his right wing extending to the foot of the Zoblenberg and his left towards the Schweidnitz-Wasser. He had 166 battalions and 149 squadrons, or about 70,000 men, in his strong position at Burkersdorf. The King had twenty-three Russian and fifty-nine Prussian battalions, six Russian, and eighty-one Prussian squadrons, and 372 pieces of ordnance.

The Prussian General Neuwied was opposed to the Austrian General Brentano in Bohemia, but this General being now reinforced the King ordered Neuwied to threaten the Austrian magazines, which obliged Brentano to fall back for their defence. There were some 2000 Cossacks with Neuwied's detachment, under Colonel Reitzenstein, who, following their accustomed mode of fighting and plundering, advanced to the very gates of Prague, devastating every town and village they came near. Notwithstanding the great difference in the external appearance of the Austrian and Prussian cavalry, these wild soldiers could not be made aware of the distinction, and fought and fled sometimes with the one and sometimes with the other. In consequence of this the Prussians put feathers in their caps, an ornament which has since become an essential distinction, as it is a very graceful one, in all European armies. Neuwied's force having succeeded in obliging Daun to weaken his army by detachments which were sent to assure the Bohemians, returned to the King's army. The King whilst waiting for the junction of the

Russians retained his troops in cantonments between Brieg and Strehlen, but on intelligence of the change of position of Daun's army, he brought up his own to the neighbourhood, having his advanced posts near Brieg. Czernichew passed the Oder on the 6th of July, and the King immediately put his troops in motion to threaten the rear of Marshal Daun. General Neuwied with the vanguard advanced to Reichenau, but was instantly driven back. The Prussians then proceeded to the heights of Adelback, but were again obliged to withdraw with a loss of 1300 men. Thus Daun still kept up his communication with Schweidnitz by means of his intrenched posts, which rendered a siege against it impracticable without a battle.

6. CATHARINE, EMPRESS OF RUSSIA, ORDERS HER TROOPS TO QUIT FREDERICK'S ARMY.

Whilst, however, the King of Prussia was preparing to dislodge Daun and invest the city, unexpected circumstances again threatened him with a reverse; another revolution had taken place in Russia on the 9th of July, which promised to be as unfavourable to him as the former had been beyond his hopes beneficial, and which seemed likely to restore the ascendancy of the Austrian arms. Peter III. had disgusted his subjects by his well-meant but ill-timed innovations, and by his undignified and undisguised subserviency to Prussia, so that a conspiracy was formed against him headed by his wife, the Empress Catharine, whose affections he had alienated by his neglect and ill-usage, and by his avowed and public preference of another woman. Some apprehensions appear to have existed from his wayward character, that he intended to raise this woman to the throne and repudiate and shut up Catharine. She, whose masculine disposition and sound understanding were afterwards fully tested during her long reign, did not hesitate as soon as this design was made known to her, to mount her horse and ride with all speed to St. Petersburg, where she harangued the guards, and was by them proclaimed Empress of Russia independent of her husband. She was no sooner acknowledged than she marched at their head to a country house where the Czar was indulging his pleasure, intending to seize the person of her husband. He, however, warned in time, had fled, and had taken boat with the idea of shutting himself up in Cronstadt; when finding this fortress already in the hands of his enemies, he made an abject renunciation of all his rights and shortly afterwards disappeared—most probably he was murdered. On Catharine's accession she issued a manifesto declaring the King of Prussia the enemy of the Russian name, and ordered Czernichew to withdraw from his armies and resume hostilities: these orders arrived in camp on the 20th of July. The Russian commander related to the King of Prussia in private the revolution that had occurred, and the orders he had received. Frederick, though confounded by an event that came upon him like a thunderbolt, made no opposition to his departure, as the Empress Catharine had dreaded he would have done, but took a bold and sudden determination. He pressed Czernichew to keep the fact secret and postpone his march for three days. The Russian



General was perfectly aware that even such an act of disobedience to the commands of his sovereign might be visited upon him most severely, but as no one could ever withstand the force of Frederick's eloquence and the winning manner of his address, he overcame the Russian General by that as readily as he could have done with his sword. "Do with me, Sire, what you will, I will do what you ask, though it cost me my life; but I would gladly lose it ten times over, were that possible, to prove to you the strength of my regard." The King only asked that the troops might remain in camp, not that they should take any part in the fight.

#### 7. BATTLE OF SCHWEIDNITZ.

Marshal Daun was still ignorant of the revolution that had occurred, and of course opposed any Russians who showed themselves, and watched them with troops of his own. But time was precious to the King; he moved the very same day, the 20th of July, as soon as it was dark, to attack the Austrian army in their intrenched post of Burkersdorf. The castle was taken in the evening by General Neuwied, and a battery of forty-five howitzers and ten 12-pounders immediately prepared to open early in the morning upon the heights occupied by the Austrians. During the day there had been nothing to excite suspicion in the Prussian camp, not even an advanced post; but in the night a line of troops had been formed, which at daybreak stood in order of battle, when the battery that has been spoken of appeared as if it had risen suddenly out of the earth, and another had been erected on a corresponding height with thirty pieces of cannon. At dawn of day the Prussians opened a destructive fire from these pieces upon the Austrian cavalry posted in the ravines, who were thrown into great disorder, and driven over the infantry, the latter joining them in their flight. General Neuwied was ordered to make the first attack on what was deemed the key of the position, and Prince Bernberg advanced to Lentmannsdorf. The Austrians stationed near Michelsdorf, seeing the Prussians on both flanks, abandoned their position. As soon as intelligence arrived that General Neuwied's attack had succeeded, General Mollendorf advanced to storm the heights between Ludwigsdorf and Weistritz. They were impeded by a sortie from the garrison under the commandant of Schweidnitz, who retreated as soon as a few regiments opposed them, and the Prussians pushed forward to the abattis at the foot of the heights, which were very steep, so that the guns could with difficulty be dragged along by them. The Austrians under the Prince de Ligne, seeing the Prussians on all sides of them, retreated; for the abattis had taken fire, and prevented reinforcements from being sent to his aid. The sight of the Russians kept Daun also from sending succours to the other corps who were attacked; and the Marshal now resolved to retire, which he did to the mountains near Tannhausen, with a loss of 1400 men killed, and 800, with fourteen guns, taken. The Prussians only lost about 300 or 400 men; but they now changed their position, and occupied Weistritz and Wartwallersdorf. The King immediately invested Schweidnitz, and on the 26th took up his headquarters at

Dittmanndorf. General Tauenzien conducted the siege; and on the 7th of August the trenches were opened against it, covered on the side of Peterswalde by Frederick in person; and on the side of Reichenbach by a corps under the Prince of Bevern, which had been drawn from Upper Silesia. The Russians, who had so opportunely contributed to this event, were now gratefully dismissed by the Prussian Monarch. Czernichew, who was at the King's side during the fight, expressed his wonder at the gallantry with which the King's desperate plan had been carried out. They happened to meet a wounded soldier. The King took out his handkerchief and bound up the man's wound with it himself. "Now," said Czernichew, "I am no longer surprised at the devotion with which your troops serve your Majesty, when you act so kindly towards them."

The King's force was about equal in strength to that of Daun, when joined by the Duke of Bevern with twenty-one battalions and thirty-five squadrons, but he could only spare 12,000 men to besiege a town garrisoned by 11,000. The workmen alone consisted daily of 2320 soldiers, and the trenches were every day covered by nine battalions and 300 horses. Early on the morning of the 9th the batteries opened their fire. The enemy hazarded a sally, and the Prussians lost 310 men. Colonel Lefèvre, a Frenchman, the engineer on the side of the besiegers, was opposed to another Frenchman, Gribeauval, the engineer within the walls. They were friends, and had been companions in arms, but they were now trying to circumvent each other. On the departure of the Russians Daun attempted on the 16th of August to cut off the corps of the Prince of Bevern, which lay between the Austrian army and Schweidnitz, without any direct communication with the army of the King. He ordered Beck to advance on the side of Kleitsch and take the Duke in the rear. Lacy marched on Habendorf, having O'Donnell with his cavalry with him, who crossed the Peilbach to fall upon Bevern's right. Saint Ignon marched against the left. The Duke defended himself like a great general. Some of his generals, who saw the baggage in danger, were desirous of protecting it with their brigades, but the Duke would not allow this, saying, "If we are defeated, we shall be unable to save our baggage; but if we are victorious, we shall get it all again." Beck attacked with spirit, and the numbers of the assailants so preponderated that the Prussians were on the point of giving way, when Frederick, who had suspected Daun's intention, sent the Prince of Wurtemberg with the whole of the cavalry, who arrived most opportunely, at full gallop, with the light artillery, and was followed very shortly by the King himself at the head of a hussar regiment. These fell upon O'Donnell's cavalry and put them to the rout; and before the infantry could come up, which the King had also put in motion, Daun, finding his attempt to be a *coup manqué*, ordered the troops to return to camp. The Austrians lost in this affair 1200 men killed, and 1500 prisoners, and the next day retired to Glatz.

**8. THE WAR IN WESTPHALIA—FIGHTS AT WILHEMSTHAL, LUTTERBERG, AND JOHANNISBERG.**

The siege of Schweidnitz, however, proceeded at a very tardy pace, so that we may now turn towards Westphalia, where the opposing armies were not inactive. Here England maintained 100,000 men and expended five millions of money, and notwithstanding the coolness and want of concert with the British government, Duke Ferdinand's genius, and the dash and good heart of the hereditary Prince and Lord Granby supplied every deficiency. Here the French had resolved to make their most powerful efforts. The conduct of the French army had been now entrusted to the Prince de Soubise, who was infinitely beloved by the soldiers for his generous disposition. His army lay on the Weser, in conjunction with that of Marshal d'Estrées, while that on the Lower Rhine was committed to the direction of the Prince de Condé. Soubise was most advantageously posted, both for command of the country and for strength, near a place called Graubenstein, on the frontier of Hesse. His centre occupied an advantageous eminence, and his left wing was almost inaccessible by several deep ravines; his right was covered by the village, and by a strong detachment under one of the best officers, M. de Castries. In this situation he imagined that he had nothing to fear from Prince Ferdinand, whose army, inferior in numbers, was separated into so many distant places, that he judged it impossible it could unite in any attempt upon his camp. The hereditary Prince was posted in the Bishopric of Munster to watch the army of the Prince de Condé. The main body, under Duke Ferdinand, lay behind the Diemel; but so superior was the genius and activity of Brunswick, that under many disadvantages he was the first to commence offensive operations, and the campaign began nearly in the same place, and very much for the same object, as that of the last year. A considerable corps under General Luckner was posted near Eimbecke, on the Leine, observing Prince Xavier of Saxony, who was encamped between the Werra and Göttingen. Leaving a small party of his corps in his position to deceive the enemy, Luckner marched off in the night of the 24th of June, with the utmost speed crossed the Weser, and turned the right of the French army, which he prepared to attack, whilst Ferdinand crossed the Diemel to attack their centre. The attack on the enemy's left was confided to Lord Granby. Every thing turned out satisfactorily; the preparations were made with so much judgment, celerity, and exactness, that the Prince de Soubise found himself attacked with impetuosity in front, flank, and rear without having perceived the approach of any enemy. The fight had scarcely begun when it ended in flight. The corps of De Castries was first engaged with Spörcken. After a sharp engagement and vigorous cannonade, he alone had time to retreat in good order; but the retreat of the rest would have ended in a complete rout if M. Stainville, who commanded on the left, opposed to Lord Granby, had not thrown himself into a wood near Wilhemsthal with all his infantry, which enabled him, at the expense of the best part of it, to cover the withdrawal of

the army from the position at Graubenstein. He sustained for a long time the whole weight of the allies, and made his corps a devoted sacrifice. All but two battalions were cut to pieces or made prisoners, of which there were 2750, besides 162 officers. The English, who were at this attack, lost but few men killed, and no officer of rank except Colonel Townshend, a distinguished young soldier, who was much regretted. As soon as the enemy were dislodged from their strong post, advantage was taken to push forward a body of the English under Lord Granby and Lord Frederick Cavendish to the neighbourhood of Homburg, thirty miles to the rear. Here on the 6th of July M. de Rochambeau hastily collected some brigades of infantry and cavalry to prevent all communication of the grand army with Frankfort from being cut off. The two English commanders, however, attacked them on the 7th near Landwehrehagen with so much vigour, that, although they defended themselves with much spirit, they were in the end dispersed with considerable loss. They were obliged to evacuate all that tract of country, and the communication with Frankfort, whence the French drew their supplies, was absolutely intercepted. An attempt was also made on Göttingen by Luckner, which obliged Prince Xavier to abandon his advanced post upon the Leine; and the garrison, despairing of holding out this important place, blew up a part of the fortifications, and got away without opposition on the 16th of July, leaving it to its fate. Munden, a fortified town at the point of junction of the rivers Werra and Fulda, where their united streams form the Weser, was the position selected by Prince Xavier for his corps, now joined with General Stainville's on the right of the grand army. Full of confidence in the strength of their position, they did not take proper precautions, and were suddenly attacked by General Zastrow, who passed the Fulda under a heavy fire from their cannon, and possessed himself of Lutterberg, on the Prince's right flank. General Waldhausen at the same time seized the village of Bonnevert, which enabled him to keep the French garrison in check. These dispositions obliged Prince Xavier to give way; and Waldhausen, who watched the issue, threw in his horse upon the rear and completed the defeat. General Stainville from the intrenched camp seeing the Prince of Saxony in danger of being totally cut to pieces, hastened with 10,000 men to his relief, quitting his intrenchments with all his force; which enabled Prince Frederick of Brunswick with great quickness to seize the critical opportunity of entering the French camp immediately they had quitted it, when he entirely destroyed all their works, and took 1100 prisoners. This occurred on the 23rd of July. These successes determined the Prince de Soubise to call the Prince de Condé with the army of the Lower Rhine to his assistance, who advanced by forced marches, the hereditary Prince sticking close to the French detachment, ready to fall upon it on the march if he could find the opportunity. In the mean time Duke Ferdinand pressed upon Soubise's army. Although they were advantageously situated he offered them battle, but rather than risk an engagement the Prince decamped in the night, and

quitted, without an action, that advantageous position called the heights of Muldingen; the surrender of which gave Duke Ferdinand a great advantage. His Serene Highness knew that negotiations for peace were going on, and that they would be benefited, and perhaps advanced, by the operations of the campaign. He therefore rather strained than slackened his efforts, and pushed forward, for in order to effect a junction with Condé the grand army was obliged to uncover Cassel and quit the banks of the Fulda, falling back to a considerable distance.

On the 1st of September, the hereditary Prince, thinking he had a fair opportunity of striking a blow, attacked with his accustomed vivacity that part of the French army which was posted on the heights of Johannisberg, near the banks of the Weser. At first his success was answerable to the courage of his troops and his own hopes; he drove the enemy entirely from the high ground into the plains; but while he pursued his advantage Condé reinforced his detachment and turned the tide of victory. The hereditary Prince retreated with the loss of ten guns and about 1500 men, but Duke Ferdinand came up in time to prevent a complete defeat. His Highness the Prince received a wound in his hip-bone from a musket-ball on this occasion, from which his life was a long time in danger, whilst his recovery was tedious and lingering. Nothing could equal the concern felt in both armies on his account; both the allies and the enemy taking a common interest in a Prince who had endeared himself on all occasions by his humanity, while he was admired for his valour, enterprise, and military genius. A victory of the greatest importance could not have more fully displayed the superiority of Duke Ferdinand's capacity for war than his conduct under this slight reverse. The French were not suffered to reap the smallest advantage from their victory, nor did the allies yield them one inch of ground. The communication with Cassel was still open, and, though the French threw a garrison of 100,000 men into the place, the Duke made immediate and vigorous preparations to besiege it; but while he adjusted his army for that purpose, Soubise took advantage of his movements to repossess the Lahn near Giessen, and advanced towards Marburg. Again the Duke made such dispositions as enabled him on the 26th of September to fall upon the flank and rear of the French army, and obliged them to retrace their steps with precipitation behind the Lahn.

#### 9. BLOODY AFFAIR AT AMÖNEBURG—SIEGE AND CAPTURE OF CASSEL.

The French armies were now able to form a junction; and began to act on the offensive by besieging the castle of Amöneburg on the Ohm. The bridge over this river called Buckermühl was a post of some importance, and was protected by a fort which contained about 200 of the allies; but each army sent up reinforcements to either side, so that the engagement that ensued lasted for fourteen hours. The allies had no cover but the redoubt, nor the French any except a mill on the river. The French planted thirty

pieces of cannon for their attack, and the allies as many for the defence of the post. On the 21st of September, at dawn of day, the former attacked the redoubt, but Duke Ferdinand continued to send in assistance until seventeen complete battalions and twenty-five pieces of cannon on each side were brought into engagement. The troops fired at each other at thirty paces, and the artillery were not 300 apart. This continued without a moment's intermission until dark; neither side gave way; and at the end of this obstinate encounter the allies still held the redoubt and the French the mill, although some 1200 or 1500 men had fallen on both sides. During the attack, however, upon the bridge, the French opened a battery upon the castle of Amoneburg, and assaulted it three times without success. On the 22nd the works on both sides were repaired without the least molestation; but on the 23rd they effected a breach, and obliged the garrison to surrender; in consequence of which the enemy pushed forward in the night, and posted a body between Amoneburg and Kleinselheim.

The possession of this post was a great advantage to them, but did not enable them materially to disturb the siege of Cassel; nor were they able to relieve the place, the garrison of which began to suffer for want of provisions. This town had already been invested for two months, but the trenches were not opened against the place till the 16th of October. The defence was most courageous; and the garrison, 6700 strong, made bold but fruitless sorties. It was now commanded by General Diesbach, for Count de Broglie had resigned upon the disgrace of his brother. At length, after fifteen days' open trenches, Cassel capitulated to Duke Ferdinand on the 1st of November. He had now recovered back the whole of Hesse excepting Ziegenhagen, which he was preparing to invest, when he was informed of the signature of the preliminaries of peace on the 3rd of November; and with the surrender of this important place a campaign closed which had been both glorious and advantageous to the allies.

#### 10. THE KING OF PRUSSIA TAKES SCHWEIDNITZ.

But the King of Prussia still continued the siege of Schweidnitz. The two engineers who conducted the attack and defence had each one a theory on the subject, and each was desirous of proving the superiority of his own system. General Gribeauval maintained that any place well defended should endure a siege of at least two months; the engineer Lefèvre, who conducted the attack, maintained that a siege well conducted should never last two months. The two methods adopted by these able men consisted of mines and countermines; winding galleries were carried on according to strict rules of art, and each engineer strove to surprise or baffle his adversary. Lefèvre, on the Prussian side, had paid great attention to the composition of shells, and on the 8th of September, during the night, exploded a sort of artificial volcano of fifty quintals of powder, which he called *globes de compression*. It opened up the earth to five toises in diameter. At the same time a grenade thrown by the

besiegers set fire to a magazine inside the fortress, which destroyed a whole bastion, in which were collected eight officers with two companies of Austrian grenadiers. Preparations were now made for the assault, but Guasco tried to make terms for the garrison; and at length, after having cost the King a great deal of time, many laborious efforts, and a number of men, Schweidnitz with its brave garrison of 8000 soldiers surrendered on the 9th of October, after sixty-four days, or just two months after the trenches were opened—so that Gribenauval was right; but Lefèvre would have been right too if the Governor had not tried to make terms. Thus terminated the campaign in Silesia, of which Frederick now recovered the whole, with the exception of Glatz.

The King, leaving a body of troops under the Prince of Bevern, now hastened into Saxony, where he found that fortune, which had so long deserted him, had become again his friend. The Austrians had exerted themselves under Generals Haddick and Stolberg with so much spirit as to gain considerable advantages in several encounters with the troops under Prince Henry, and had pushed back the Prussians as far as Freyberg, the possession of which place they were accordingly prepared to dispute.

#### 11. THE BATTLE OF FREYBERG—THE LAST OF THE SEVEN YEARS' WAR.

The Prussians had been driven out of their camp on the 17th of October, and now, having received reinforcements, Prince Henry determined on the 29th of October to attack the united army of Imperialists and Austrians under the Prince von Stolberg, who occupied an entrenched position. General Kleist commanded the vanguard, the right wing was under the orders of General Seydlitz, and the left was under General Stutterheim. General Kleist early in the morning attacked Oberschone; Seydlitz followed him, and drove back the Austrian light troops. Stutterheim advanced to Wallersdorf and through the Spettel forest, where he captured a redoubt after a heavy cannonade. Generals Manstein and Duringshofen were opposed to Maquire near Brand. The enemy retreated to Tuttendorf to reassemble his forces. Prince Stolberg finding Maquire also driven from behind Brand, did not think he could any longer dispute the victory, and ordered a retreat, which was actively followed up by Seydlitz, to whom was attributed in a great measure the honour of the day. The Austrians in this battle lost seventy-nine officers and 4333 men, with twenty-eight guns and many colours. The Prussians at its conclusion rested on their old ground at Freyberg, and Prince Stolberg retreated to Trauenstein. Marshal Daun, who had left Loudon in Silesia to oppose the Prince of Bevern, hastened after the King, and detached Prince Albert of Saxony to strengthen Stolberg, but he arrived too late, and Haddick's corps with the discomfited Imperialists retired to Altenberg. The Austrians attributed this defeat to the treachery of one of their superior officers, who was taken into custody. The Prussians immediately sought to reap the advantages which the victory afforded them. When the King arrived, and had congratulated his brother,

he despatched General Kleist, on the 4th of November, with his hussars and light troops, to go by Einsiedel into Bohemia. These troops penetrated to the walls of Prague, reducing Egra to ashes, and destroying the Austrian magazines at Saatz. The two great armies, however, at this time concluded a truce at Wilsdruf on the 24th of November, and took up their winter-quarters at Leipsic and Dresden. Prince Henry had thus the honour of concluding the Seven Years' War with a triumph; and Frederick said of him, "He is the only one of us who never committed a fault."

## 12. THE WAR IN THE PENINSULA.

It was determined between the French and Spaniards that while the former prosecuted the war in Westphalia, the Spaniards, in order to distract the enemy, were to carry the war into Portugal. Spain began a land campaign with the prospect of most brilliant success. The object of the Spanish inroad into Portugal was to possess themselves of the great seaports of Oporto and Lisbon, by which they hoped to prevent Great Britain from making any military or commercial use of the kingdom of Portugal. With this view three columns crossed the frontier—one to the north, one to the south, and the third into the intermediate provinces, to support either if necessary, and to sustain the communication between them. The first column was commanded by the Marquis de Sarria, and consisted of 22,000 men: it entered the north-east province of the kingdom, and marched to Miranda. This town was in no sufficient state of defence, but might have held out so as to have delayed the progress of the invaders but for the explosion of a powder magazine by accident, by which the ramparts were ruined before the Spaniards had raised their first battery, so that they marched in by the breaches occasioned by it on the 5th of May. They then proceeded to Bragança and Torre de Moncorvo, of both which places they obtained possession on the 15th. On the 24th a party of troops under Count O'Reilly made a forced march to the city of Chaves, which submitted to them. By these successes the Spaniards became masters of the whole of the extensive province of *Tras-os-Montes*. Their progress spread a general alarm, and Oporto was almost given up for lost. The Portuguese, however, from the highest to the lowest, were animated with such a sincere and inveterate hatred towards the Spaniards, that the natural courage of the people was roused to the defence of their country. When, therefore, the Spaniards attempted to cross the Douro, the peasants, animated by their feelings and guided by some English officers, repulsed them in the attempt, seized a difficult pass, and drove them back into *Tras-os-Montes*. The second column of 8000 men entered the province of Beira at the villages of Val de Mula and Val de Cunha, and having been joined by the northern column from *Tras-os-Montes*, immediately laid siege to Almeida. This, though like all the other fortified places in Portugal, not in good order, was yet the strongest and best provided place upon the frontiers: the possession of it would greatly facilitate the operations on either hand, and would more particularly



facilitate an attempt upon Lisbon. It was defended with sufficient resolution; but as the Portuguese had no army in the field, there was no possibility of obtaining relief, so that at length Almeida surrendered to Count d'Aranda on the 25th of August. The whole province of Beira, together with Castel Branco, an important town and territory near the Tagus, was now in the hands of the Spaniards, and there was no enemy to oppose them except by the defence of the passes of the mountains, and by the guerilla operations of some flying detachments. By this time the British force, consisting of 8000 men under Lord Trawley, who had been sent to organize the Portuguese army, ought to have been available; but some discord broke out between his Lordship and the Portuguese government, and the British ministry recalled him very early in the campaign. The British force, however, remained under General Burgoyne, and he was united with the celebrated Count de la Lippe-Buckeburg, whose arrival gave great hopes to Portugal. The third Spanish column, which was at this time prepared to invade Portugal, assembled on the frontiers of Estremadura, with the intention of penetrating into the province of Alemtejo. The Count of Lippe suggested that they should be attacked in their camp before they entered the kingdom; and Brigadier-General Burgoyne was ordered to this duty, and though at a distance of five days' march and in spite of many obstacles, he rapidly struck across the mountains of Castel da Vida, and succeeded in effecting a complete surprise of the enemy on the 27th of September at Valentia de Alcantara, taking prisoners the Spanish Major-General who commanded the invading force, two colonels, two captains, and seventeen subaltern officers, with a corresponding force of men. They took also the flour and forage they found, but were disappointed in not finding the considerable magazines that they expected; still the effect of this well-conducted enterprise was to prevent this column of Spaniards from entering the province of Alemtejo altogether.

The troops at Castel Branco, under Count d'Aranda, had made themselves masters of several important passes, and were now preparing to cross the Tagus at the village of Villa Velha; but Lippe, moving with great rapidity, got to Abrantes before them, and sent out strong detachments under Burgoyne and the Count de St. Iago to obstruct the passage of the river. The latter was driven from the pass of Alvite by the enemy, when D'Aranda attacked the old Moorish castle of Villa Velha, and got possession of it in a few days in spite of Burgoyne, who was posted with the intention of obstructing this passage. Observing, however, that the troops kept no vigilant look out, and were unprotected both in rear and flank, the British General conceived the design of sending Colonel Lee across the river to attempt a surprise; which officer fell upon them on the night of the 6th of October, while Burgoyne attacked them at the same time and made a considerable slaughter. He dispersed the whole party, and destroyed the magazines, suffering scarcely any loss himself. After this brilliant affair there was little more fighting. The French invading force which

D'Aranda had expected to co-operate with him were neither to be seen nor heard of. The season was already too far advanced for campaigning in their mountainous districts, and the Spaniards, having no magazines for their support, fell back across the frontiers, and retreated with little honour to their own country. Before this time, however, peace was concluded, and so valuable an ally as Portugal had proved herself was safe for another campaign. She was at this time governed by the genius of Count de Oeyras, afterwards distinguished by the title of Marquis de Pombal. He was a haughty man, and ruled with more absolute power than any minister in Europe, but he was now in the zenith of that power, and his energy saved his country at this period. The King of Portugal rewarded the great services of the Count de la Lippe by the most munificent presents, as well as by honours of every kind. He sent him eight golden cannons weighing thirty-eight pounds each, mounted on silver carriages; also a curious chest, on opening which it was found to contain 80,000 gold moidores, his Majesty's picture set in diamonds, and diamond stars and buckles. Small sovereigns are in general infinitely more grateful than the greater monarchs of the world.

### 13. WAR IN THE WEST INDIES—CONJUNCT EXPEDITIONS AGAINST THE FRENCH AND SPANISH COLONIES.

The scene of war between Great Britain and France had shifted from the East Indies and North America simply because in those regions the former power had altogether overcome and removed its adversary. But in the West Indies the French had yet some possessions remaining, and from the moment that the dispositions of Spain had become equivocal, it was very reasonable to have a strong armament in those seas in which Spain was most vulnerable, and in which every wound was sure to be felt with the greatest sensibility. It was easy now to draw an armed force from the North American provinces, and accordingly eleven battalions were obtained from New York, and draughts from the garrison of Belleisle and the British Leeward Islands, making altogether an armament of 12,000 men, which was placed under the command of General Monckton, who had obtained some reputation in North America. The marine portion of the expedition was under Rear-Admiral Rodney, which having rendezvoused at Barbadoes, appeared before the island of Martinique on the 7th of January. The first attempts to land and obtain a footing on the island do not appear to have been successful. Brigadiers Haviland and Grant were detached to reconnoitre the coast and shore of Ance Darlet, but the roads were found impassable for cannon. It was the 16th before the troops disembarked at Case des Navires, a little more than a league from Fort Royal. The British fleet silenced the batteries that opposed the landing without difficulty, but now it became necessary to carry the strongly fortified heights known as Morne Tartançon and Garnier. General Monckton's first step was to throw up works for the protection and support of his men. At daylight on the 24th, these having been completed with great labour and perse-

verance, and armed with cannon dragged upwards of three miles by the seamen, arrangements were made for an advance. The Morne Tartançon was an eminence protected, like the other high grounds on this island, by deep ravines; and this great natural strength was improved by every contrivance of art. A body of regular troops and marines under General Rufane was ordered to advance on the right, along the sea-shore towards the town, and 1000 sailors in flat-bottomed boats rowed close along the shore to assist them. A corps of light infantry under Lieutenant-Colonel Scott was sent to support these detachments, and the column altogether, under the command of General Walsh, was to get round the enemy's left, while a body of grenadiers and the main force under Brigadier-General Grant was to attack the centre under the fire of the newly-erected batteries. Grant first encountered the enemy and drove in the outposts; Rufane carried the redoubts along the shore, while Walsh and Scott got round the enemy's left; and the whole was executed with so much spirit and resolution, that all the three attacks succeeded, and by nine o'clock the troops were in possession of the height, and remained masters of the whole Morne. On the 25th batteries were erected against the citadel of Fort Royal, but Mount Garnier overlooked and commanded it, being separated from it only by a deep ravine. It was necessary, therefore, to make proper dispositions for driving the enemy from this higher eminence; but while the arrangements were in progress, on the 27th the whole force of the enemy descended from the hill, sallied out of the fort, and attacked the two corps of light infantry and Haviland's brigade in their advanced posts. They were so well received, however, that they were immediately repulsed by the ardour of the British troops, who improved a decided advantage in their defence into an attack. The brigade of General Haviland and two battalions of Highlanders, with a corps of light infantry under Major Leland, crossed the ravine and scaled the cannon-mounted hills, so that just at nightfall the British flag was seen to wave on the great French redoubt erected on the summit of Mount Garnier. The French regulars were enabled to fall back and enter the town, but the militia who had taken part in the defence dispersed themselves through the country. So precipitate was the enemy's flight, that a mortar and nine guns, with a plentiful supply of ammunition and provisions, fell into the hands of the victors, and the next morning these guns were turned against Fort Royal. All the situations which commanded the town and citadel were now secured, but two batteries that had been raised on Morne Tartançon not proving effective, they were removed with much labour and trouble to Mount Capuchin, 400 yards nearer the fort. This brought the besieged to terms, and on the 4th of February they surrendered the gate of the citadel. The garrison, which were 1000 strong, lost above 100 men, and the besiegers ninety-six killed, including seven officers, and 889 wounded. The capital town of the island remained, however, to be reduced, and General Monckton prepared to remove his forces there for the reduction of St. Pierre, but before he could get ready

some deputies arrived to capitulate for the surrender of that place and of the whole island. The islands of Grenada, St. Lucia, and other French dependencies were next given up without resistance, so that the English were now the sole and undisturbed possessors of all the Caribbean archipelago.

But Spain having been now drawn into hostilities, the British determined to transfer the war into the Spanish West Indies, and the capture of the Havannah was fixed upon as the enterprise to be undertaken. Mr. Pitt had introduced into every department of government in England a concert, order, and regularity before unknown, and although he was no longer at the helm, an impulse had been given by his vigorous hand which still moved the wheels. The Earl of Albemarle was entrusted with the command of the land forces to be sent out from England with an armament under the direction of Admiral Sir George Pocock. They sailed from Portsmouth on the 5th of March, and a fleet with another portion of military sailed from Martinique under the command of a spirited and intelligent officer, Sir James Douglas, and the two squadrons happily met, without dispersion or delay, at Cape Nicola, the north-west point of Hispaniola, on the 27th of May. The armament comprised twenty-nine ships of the line and eighteen smaller vessels of war, with about 10,000 men in 150 transports. Another detachment of 4000 men from New York was expected to join before proceeding to active operations; these were already traversing the ocean before the Governor of Cuba was apprised of the approach of an enemy in the West Indies, and that he was the object of the threatened attack. There were two courses open to the Admiral in order to approach the Havannah; either to proceed by the south or north of the island of Cuba. The former was the safest and the track of the galleons, but as it was the longest way about, and the season for hurricanes was approaching, he resolved to adopt the latter, which was to push through a narrow and dangerous passage called the Old Strait or Channel of Bahama. No pilot in the fleet could be depended on to conduct it, and so the Admiral, provided with a good chart of Lord Anson's, resolved to trust to his own sagacity, conduct, and vigilance, to carry nearly 200 sail 700 miles across the most dangerous sands and shoals on either hand; and being favoured with pleasant weather he got safely through it on the 5th of June.

The harbour of the Havannah was now before the assailants. The narrow entrance is secured on one side by a very strong fort called El Moro, on the other it is defended by La Puntal, which commands the town. The Spaniards, who had been long preparing for war, had formed a considerable navy in the West Indies, of twenty sail of the line, all at this time reposing in the harbour of the Havannah; but they had no certain or authentic account of the declaration of war with England; and whether from this cause, or from being not yet quite prepared, they did not bring out their ships to try the issue of a battle, but contented themselves with placing a strong boom across the mouth of the harbour, and sinking three of their ships behind it. In order to deceive the enemy, the British Admiral, with a great part of

the fleet, bore away to the westward as if he intended to land on that side, while Commodore Keppel with the "Mercury" and the "Bonetta," and Captain the Honourable A. Hervey in the "Dragon," 74, coasted the shore to a point about six miles to the eastward of El Moro, when they ran in and battered the castle, while the disembarkation was effected between the rivers Coximar and Boca Nao without any opposition on the 7th. The next day Captain Carleton, commanding the advanced guard, was sent forward to Cabanas, where he found 6000 of the enemy, whom he attacked and dispersed before Lord Albemarle could come up to his aid, and on the 10th the Moro was invested by the grenadiers and light infantry. A corps under General Elliot was advanced a considerable way up the country to secure our foraging parties, and cover the siege to the south-east of the harbour. The rest were directly occupied in the siege. On the 11th, at one in the afternoon, they carried by assault a redoubt that impeded their operations. A detachment under Colonel Howe was encamped to the westward to cut off all communications between the town and country, and Admiral Keppel looked after the Spanish fleet.

#### 14. THE SIEGE OF THE HAVANNAH.

The difficulties of carrying on this siege are almost indescribable. The rocky ground was covered with so little earth, that it was with great difficulty the troops could cover themselves as they approached. There was no supply of water near the works; they were obliged to seek it from a great distance, or to have recourse to the ships for a supply; roads of communication did not exist, and the troops were obliged to cut through woods thick with the tangled vegetation of the tropics. The artillery had to be dragged through these, and over a rough rocky shore—terribly hard work for the troops, the heat, thirst, and fatigue attending which were fatal to many. Nevertheless the trenches were opened, and batteries raised against El Moro, and along the hill on which it stands, to bear upon the shipping, and prevent them from molesting their approaches. A cordial unanimity prevailed among the two services, and overcame many obstacles, so that a fire was soon opened on the devoted city, notwithstanding one or two trifling successes against the besiegers. Don Luis de Velasco, the governor, was however energetic in the defence. At break of day on the 29th, two detachments of 500 men each, chosen men, having each a body of armed negroes and mulattoes to assist them in their attacks, were sent out of the town: they were intended to act against the works upon the right under the Moro, and against the mortars and howitzer batteries which had been raised against the shipping. Both these detachments were however intercepted, and driven back with a loss of 200 men left dead on the spot. The works were then vigorously pushed forward on shore; but the navy, not contented with the great assistance which they had before lent to every part of the land service, now resolved to try something more directly in their own province for the reduction of the Moro. Accordingly, the "Cambridge," Captain Godfrey, and the "Marlborough," 66, Captain Barnet,

under the conduct of Captain Hervey, laid their broadsides against the fort on the 1st of July, with an intention to dismount the guns as well as beat down the wall. Their fire continued and was returned with great constancy for seven hours without intermission. The Moro was situated on a very high and steep rock, which gave it great advantage over the British ships; besides which the fort of Puntal and the other batteries galled them excessively, so that in order to save the ships it was necessary to draw them off, which they did with very great difficulty, losing Captain Godfrey and 150 men killed and wounded. This bold attempt, though unsuccessful, was a most useful diversion, and enabled the batteries to get up their fire, which soon became superior to that of the enemy, and did no small damage to the works, but on the 3rd the principal battery, constructed of timber and fascines, dried by the intense heat of the weather and the cannonade, took fire, and was almost wholly consumed. In one short period of time the labour of 600 men for three days was destroyed, and all had to begin again. This accident reduced the fire of the besiegers to that of two guns, which fired but seldom. Nevertheless new batteries in due time arose in the place of the old, the fire again became equal, and then superior to that of the enemy. About noon on the 19th of July the outer works were beaten down, and the British took possession of the covered way before the point of the right bastion of El Moro, and the sap was carried forward in two directions. On the 18th the New York reinforcements, so long expected, had arrived, and the Jamaica fleet, passing on its way to Europe, supplied many conveniences for the troops. These events infused new life into the operations. As the sap proceeded they came upon a yawning ditch cut in the solid rock, eighty feet deep and forty wide! To fill it up appeared impossible, so that, difficult as it was, mining was the only expedient. On the 22nd, moreover, before break of day, a body of 1200 men from the town, mostly composed of the country militia, mulattoes, and negroes, made three attacks upon the outposts; but the advanced guards, though surprised, defended themselves resolutely, under the command of Lieut.-Colonel Stuart of the 90th, and the enemy was unable to rain any part of the approaches. About two o'clock in the morning of the 30th, the enemy sent a floating battery out of the harbour of Havannah to fire into the ditch where the miners were employed; but the covering party compelled them to retire, and at two in the afternoon of the same day two mines were sprung. That in the counterscarp was without much effect; but the one in the bastion did its business, and a part of the wall was blown up and fell into the ditch, leaving a breach which, though very narrow and difficult, the General and engineers judged practicable. The troops under orders for the assault were immediately moved to the attack. They mounted the breach, and having expeditiously formed on the top, drove the enemy from every part of the ramparts. These fled on all hands, and about 400 of the enemy were killed, including the second in command, the Marquis de Gonzalez, whilst he was making brave but ineffectual attempts to animate and rally his troops. Don Luis de Velasco, also, the governor, collected 100 men and essayed to defend the colours,

but received a mortal wound, and fell in the act of offering his sword to the conquerors. The amount of the British loss in this affair was quite inconsiderable. Thus the Moro was captured after a vigorous struggle of forty-four days. No time was lost in profiting by the advantage; the fire of the castle was immediately turned upon the town; and a line of batteries erected along the hill of Cabanas. By these batteries, which mounted forty-three pieces of cannon, the whole eastern side of the city was commanded; and Lord Albemarle sent in a message on the 10th of August to prevent any further effusion of blood; but this being declined, a general fire was opened from all the batteries the next day with such effect, that in six hours all the enemy's guns were silenced. A capitulation ensued, but the Spaniards struggled hard to save their men-of-war from capture. Admiral Sir George Pocock and the Earl of Albemarle, although willing to concede every honour to the garrison and every privilege to the inhabitants, deemed this condition wholly indispensable, and on the 14th of August the British troops were put in possession of the Havannah, and nine Spanish sail of the line submitted to the will of the conqueror. In ready money and valuable merchandise belonging to the King of Spain, the prize did not fall short of near three millions sterling.

Nor did the Spanish war limit itself to one such capture. The Honourable Captain Hervey in the "Dragon," carrying home Lord Albemarle's despatches, came across a rich French ship valued at 30,000*l.* and captured her, *chemin faisant*.

#### 15. EXPEDITION AGAINST THE MANILLAS.

An expedition was sent out this year from the settlement of Madras under Admiral Cornish and Colonel William Draper for the conquest of the Philippine Islands. The squadron consisted of seven sail of the line, a 50-gun ship, and three frigates, conveying a force of 2330 men, of whom a great part were Topasses and Lascars. The expedition anchored in Manilla Bay on the 23rd of September, and the landing was effected in beautiful style, under Captains Hyde Parker and Kempenfeldt, on the 24th. The Spanish Viceroy resided in Manilla in great pomp, and like a sovereign prince. The Archbishop was at this time Viceroy, and had thrown himself into the inner citadel, where he displayed a greater degree of spirit and military talents than might have been expected from his profession. He roused the native Indians to arms, and with his garrison of 800 regulars endeavoured to check the approaches of the besiegers. The Indians, however, were driven back with frightful carnage, and the approaches proceeded for twelve days, when on the 6th of October the works were taken by storm, and several hours of plunder and disorder ensued which could not be restrained. At length the Archbishop was admitted to a capitulation, when he surrendered upon terms. In the port at this time were five large ships laden with all the riches of the East; diamonds from Golconda, cinnamon from Ceylon, pepper from Sumatra and Java, cloves and nutmegs from the Moluccas, ivory, camphor, silks, tea, &c. from China, all about to sail to Mexico;

there was also an arsenal, and there was much wealth among the inhabitants. To save all this from plunder, a promise was made of a ransom of one million sterling. But the King of Spain having concluded peace with Great Britain before the account of this capture arrived in Europe, refused to ratify the terms of capitulation; the conquerors were thus robbed of their just reward; and the "Manilla ransom" became a topic of dispute, since become classic in the pages of Junius.

#### 16. NAVAL WAR.

The Spanish commerce, which the Spanish navy was unable to protect, was however pretty considerably cut up by this short war. Almost the first act of the war was the capture, on the 16th of March, of the 26-gun frigate the "Ventura," by the "Fowey," 24, Captain Mead, off Cape Tiburon; and on the 21st of May, off Cadiz, the Spanish register ship the "Hermione," with a cargo of specie on board, amounting to little short of a million sterling, was captured by the "Active," 26, Captain Herbert Sawyer, and the "Favourite," 18, Captain Philemon Pownel. Captain Hyde Parker in the "Panther," and Captain King in the "Argo," were detached by Admiral Cornish on the 4th of October to search for a rich galleon called the "Philippine." On the 30th they descried a large ship, to which they immediately gave chase. The "Argo" got up with the enemy and began to engage, but the enemy's ship treated her so roughly that she was forced to desist after an action of two hours. In the night the "Panther" got up, and about nine in the morning began to engage, and after a cannonade of two hours the enemy surrendered, when to the surprise of Captain Hyde Parker, he found, that instead of the "Philippine" galleon, he had captured the "Santisima Trinidad," equal in magnitude to a British first-rate, and pierced for sixty guns, although when captured she had only thirteen mounted. The prize, though unequal to a galleon, was valued at 600,000*l*. It was calculated that besides the enormous expense of the equipments for the war, Spain lost nearly four millions sterling in treasure and valuable merchandise, which fell into the hands of the English cruisers.

#### 17. SUCCESSES OF THE SPANIARDS AGAINST THE PORTUGUESE.

The only compensation to Spain for these heavy disasters was the reduction of the colony of Sacramento, so long the object of contention between her and Portugal. By this enterprise the Spaniards were thought to have obtained an amount of four millions sterling from twenty-six English ships richly laden, besides merchandise and military stores. It also enabled the Spaniards to frustrate an attack planned against Buenos Ayres by some individuals, British and Portuguese, who were stimulated by hope of plunder to send it out. This expedition arrived in the Rio de la Plata on the 2nd of November, soon after the reduction of Sacramento. It was under the command of an Irishman of the name of Macnamara. An English pilot undertook to carry the ships within pistol-shot of the principal battery, and when they had almost silenced it the commodore was discovered



to be in flames. The effort ended in a mere desultory attempt to recover that settlement, which failed after the loss of their commodore and a considerable part of their armament, the remainder of which reached Rio Janeiro with difficulty.

The war with Spain was however always popular in England, from the traditions of past times as to its wealth and the experience of the many rich prizes obtained by the British cruisers. On the contrary, from the recollection of past losses, and the conviction that England, like a wasp's nest, could sting in a hundred places at once, a war with England was always most unpopular in Spain, and gave origin to this well-known proverb, of which we were so often reminded in the Peninsular war,

“ Con todo el mundo guerra,  
Mas paz con Ynglaterra.”

#### 18. THE FRENCH ATTACK NEWFOUNDLAND.

France gained little by the co-operation of Spain. In addition to all her former losses she had now been deprived of all her West India possessions: her commerce was annihilated, her ships pent up in their harbours, and the retrograde movements of the French army in Germany all conspired to humble the pride and dash the hopes of the Bourbon alliance. They, therefore, made overtures for peace with a sincerity natural to their desperate situation, and found a ready compliance from the British government. No people are less intoxicated with their successes than the English. Victories are so familiar that they cease to make a long impression; but the nation felt it was time to close the war when every end which could be proposed for carrying it on was answered. The minister Pitt had been succeeded by Lord Bute, whose pacific sentiments were in unison with those of the sovereign and the people. As both parties thus equally desired peace, there was not much difficulty in adjusting conditions, and a preliminary treaty was signed at Fontainebleau on the 5th of November between Great Britain, France, Spain, and Portugal, but it was resolved that the courts should reciprocally send to London and Versailles persons of high consequence and distinction to determine the terms. The Duke of Bedford was accordingly sent to Versailles, and the Duc de Nivernois to London. During this interval, however, between war and peace, the French obtained a temporary advantage near the colony of Newfoundland. M. de Ternay, with a squadron of four men-of-war and a bomb-ketch, and M. d'Haussonville, with a proportionate number of the land forces, arrived at the island of Newfoundland, and finding it little prepared to resist them, took without difficulty the ports of St. John, Trinity, and Carboneur, destroying also the stages and implements of the fishery to a great extent. General Amherst, who commanded the British forces in North America, as soon as he heard of this, detached Colonel Amherst with a body of forces, and Lord Colville with a small but sufficient squadron to recover this valuable island. The land forces, on their arrival, attacked the French troops in the neigh-

bourhood of St. John's, and were preparing further measures, when M. d'Haussonville, who had remained there as governor, thought proper to deliver up the place on the 18th of September, and surrendered himself and his garrison prisoners of war. M. de Ternay escaped with the French fleet, the surrender of the troops having taken place before Lord Colville could arrive, so that they had gained a considerable distance before they were perceived, and when discovered were not apprehended to be the enemy's ships.

#### 19. DEATH AND MILITARY CHARACTER OF ADMIRAL LORD ANSON.

On the 6th of June in this year, a cold caught on a visit of ceremony to Portsmouth, which settled on his lungs, carried to the grave Admiral ANSON. Few of the distinguished naval commanders of Great Britain have obtained a more familiar renown than Anson, —not merely from a recollection of his victories, for as a hero he has been surpassed by many, nor for the successful administration of the affairs of the British navy during this war, for which he was in truth very deserving of applause, but for the literary renown of his Voyage round the World, which has been translated into most European languages. He was the second son of a considerable English squire, and discovered an early passion for naval affairs, taking delight in reading and hearing the stories of all the most distinguished admirals and their glory. Accordingly, his father gave him an education suited to his genius, and at the age of nineteen he had passed all the examinations which made him eligible for the rank of lieutenant in the British navy. Little is known of him until 1740, when he was made Commodore, and proceeded on his famous voyage, from which he returned in 1744, having been absent on the expedition three years and nine months. He had now a place given him at the Board of Admiralty, which he retained for several years. In 1747 he was appointed Rear-Admiral, and to the command of the Channel fleet, when he intercepted off Cape Finisterre a powerful French squadron under M. de Jonquière, and captured six men-of-war and four Indiamen. Having been created a peer for this service, he was next made First Lord of the Admiralty in 1751, in which post he continued till his death. During his administration of the affairs of the navy, it attained a pitch of power and pre-eminence to which the British had never before attained at sea. The fleets of France and Spain were humbled, and the few ships left to them were shut up in their ports during the rest of the war. He improved the construction of ships of war; and the copper sheathing, which was an important means of increasing their sailing-power, was added to the service under his direction. He also introduced many beneficial regulations respecting promotion. He adopted a plan of the Duke of Cumberland's for the permanent establishment of that inestimable corps, the Royal Marines. His discreet and fortunate choice of officers to hold commands deserves also to immortalize his name. Sir Edward Hawke, Sir Charles Saunders, Sir Peirce Brett, Sir Peter Dennis,

Keppel, Saumarez, &c., were lieutenants of his selection. As a man he was warm and steady in his friendships; in his natural disposition he was calm, cool, and steady; but he was too fond of play, and in his ignorance of mankind he was greatly exposed to the artifices of gamesters, and too frequently became their dupe; so that it was humorously observed of him, "that although Lord Anson had been round the world, he had never been in it." On professional subjects his judgment was quick and comprehensive; and the great Chatham, who seldom bestowed praise where he did not think it due, allowed him to be one of the ablest of his colleagues. The death of Byng during his administration of the navy has, however, thrown a dubious shade on his character which no biographer has been able to remove.

**20. FREDERICK CONCLUDES A TRUCE FOR SAXONY AND SILESIA,  
AND RAVAGES FRANCONIA.**

While the courts of London and Versailles were making considerable progress towards an accommodation, those of Vienna and Berlin seemed to remit nothing of their former animosity. The advantages gained by the Prussians had induced Marshal Daun to conclude an armistice with the King for the winter, as has been related; but the Austrian general was for once incautious, and imprudently limited the cessation of hostilities to Saxony and Silesia alone. In consequence of this impolitic and partial truce, which provided neither for the safety of the dominions of the house of Austria, nor of those members of the Empire who were attached to their interests, the King of Prussia immediately took advantage of the omission. One body of the Prussian army, 10,000 strong, under General Kleist, penetrated into the heart of Franconia, and even as far as Suabia, ravaging the country, exacting heavy contributions, and spreading ruin and dismay on every side. The diet of Ratisbon did not think themselves in safety, but were beginning to fly and preparing to remove their records. Bamberg and other important towns were taken, and the city of Nuremberg, so famous for the ingenious industry and pacific disposition of its inhabitants, suffered dreadfully by this invasion, having been obliged to pay contributions to the amount of 200,000*l*. Many of the princes and States found themselves obliged to sign a neutrality in order to save their territories from further ravages. Maria Theresa also saw her hereditary dominions exposed to the ravages of the Prussians, and Hungary threatened by the Turks, who had been excited by the intrigues of the King of Prussia to meditate hostilities against her.

Urged by these and other motives, the Empress Queen made overtures to Frederick, which being favourably received, conferences were opened on the 30th of December, at Hubertsburg, a palace of the King of Saxony.

1763.

1. PACIFICATION OF HUBERTSBURG—PEACE OF PARIS.—2. MILITARY CHARACTERS OF THE GENERALS OF THE SEVEN YEARS' WAR: PRINCE HENRY OF PRUSSIA—PRINCE CHARLES OF LOBRAIN—MARSHAL DAUN—GENERAL ZIETHEN—GENERAL SEYDLITZ—THE DUKES OF BRUNSWICK—THE MARQUIS OF GRANBY, AND LORD GEORGE SACKVILLE—THE FRENCH COMMANDERS.—3. WAR IN SPANISH SOUTH AMERICA.—4. WAR IN CORSICA.—5. WAR OF THE BRITISH AGAINST THE NATIVE POWERS OF HINDOSTAN—BATTLES OF KUTWAH, GERIAH, AND OUTAHNULLA—MONGHIER AND PATNA TAKEN.

### 1. PACIFICATION OF HUBERTSBURG—PEACE OF PARIS.

After a short discussion peace was signed between the sovereigns of Austria and Prussia on the 15th of February, 1763. At the same time, and nearly on the same day, treaties were also signed between the kings of Saxony, Sweden, and Prussia. The preliminaries that had been signed at Fontainebleau, as already mentioned, between Great Britain and France, terminated almost the same day in the definitive treaty of Paris. This and the pacification of Hubertsburg concluded the Seven Years' War. The affairs of Germany were restored to the same situation as before the commencement of hostilities, and a mutual restitution of conquests and oblivion of injuries were to take effect. The powers of Europe now found themselves after seven years of a dreadful expnditure of blood and treasure in exactly the same position as that in which they had commenced the war, so far as their possessions were concerned, but many hundreds of thousands had perished, and many families been reduced to want and made miserable. The Seven Years' War embraces a remarkable period in the world's history: it developed the characters of many very clever, and some very extraordinary men; while its numerous battles and sieges, affairs, skirmishes, advances and retreats, afford the best practical instruction to the student of military tactics.

The great object of the enemies of Frederick—his destruction—had entirely failed; and the hero whose downfall appeared unavoidable, now made peace without losing an inch of territory. Maria Theresa had the mortification of seeing her allies suffer for their attachment to her cause, while she herself gained nothing and did not get back her own. Saxony was exhausted almost beyond recovery, and the Empire had been drained by the most excessive contributions. All the nations of Europe were burdened with heavy debts which still press upon their financial resources. The great sufferer by this Seven Years' War was undoubtedly France, who lost almost all her possessions in North America and the West Indies, as well as her settlements in the East Indies and on the African coast. Spain also lost Florida and all her insular possessions in the Gulf of Mexico. Great Britain indeed restored to France all the French factories and

settlements in every part of India; and to Spain her insular conquests: but the empire of King George III. was certainly greatly consolidated by the peace of Paris in every quarter of the globe, although there was a heavy addition to the national debt.

## 2. MILITARY CHARACTERS OF THE GENERALS OF THE SEVEN YEARS' WAR.

It would be an omission in military annals to close the history of the Seven Years' War without a few words on the military characters of some of its greatest heroes; although that of Frederick, who was the greatest, and that of Marshal Loudon, who was not the least, must be passed over for nearly a quarter of a century, since in the interval before they died their military actions will again find a place in the "annals of war."

### PRINCE HENRY OF PRUSSIA.

This illustrious Prince, the brother of the great Frederick, was born in 1726. In early life he contracted a great attachment to the young Prince Royal, and it is said, "Il faisait la guerre avec lui par correspondance;" that is, they imagined themselves commanders of opposite armies, and from time to time they laid the seat of war in particular countries, and then applied themselves to move their troops for attack and defence, like a game of chess—a harmless exercise which cannot fail to give a good idea of strategy, but which would be worse than useless unless the all-important question of the supplies of the given forces were taken into consideration. The Prince first attended his royal brother to the field at the battle of Czaulau, 1742, and afterwards accompanied him to Hohenfriedberg in 1745. He was wounded at the battle of Rossbach in 1757. The same year he carried his army to the assistance of Duke Ferdinand of Brunswick, to expel the French from Hanover. He was subsequently entrusted with a separate command in Saxony, in which he obtained many successes, and gained the closing battle of the war at Freyberg. His great characteristic appears to have been his extreme sobriety, which fortified his constitution, and enabled him to undergo any amount of fatigue. Thiebault in his *Souvenir* thus describes the two brothers, Frederick and Henry of Prussia. "The countenances of both the King and Prince Henry were much marked and very characteristic. No one had such expressive and penetrating eyes as the King, and they could look agreeable, but very often terrible and overpowering, while the Prince's eyes, which almost squinted, appeared stern at first, but after hearing him talk for two minutes you forgot his defects and he appeared very pleasing. The elder brother was in conversation sparkling and naturally given to gaiety and railery, but Prince Henry was slow in talk, and his understanding was of a serious turn, though without pedantry or malice. Every man was enchanted to approach and listen to the King, whose finesse, sallies, and repartees were enchanting; but you could desire to live and dwell with the Prince, who never failed to make himself agreeable by the most delicate attentions and obliging civilities. Both had done

great things in war, but the one performed them as if by inspiration and the other with reflection and calculation; whence it was that the first, notwithstanding his great deeds, committed many great faults; but the other, if he did not gain so much, had no faults to reproach himself with. The Prince had a character of considerable independence, and he was not always willing to bow with submission to his brother, who was frequently very despotic: they had accordingly many quarrels and coldnesses, and did not live much with one another in after life." But Frederick nevertheless says of him in his History, "La plus belle élogé qu'on puisse en faire est de rapporter ses actions," and, he adds, his qualities were best suited to make "un grand homme de guerre." He was twice on the point of being nominated to the throne of Poland, but the King did not approve of this elevation any more than the courts of Austria and Russia: he was afterwards sent on the mission to St. Petersburg, in which either by his brother's desire or his own suggestion the Partition Treaty was first named. He took the field again in opposition to Loudon in the Bavarian war, but never came to blows. He outlived Frederick many years, and in the year 1795 he was employed by the King, his nephew, to negotiate the peace of Basle. He did not die till 1802.

#### PRINCE CHARLES OF LORRAINE.

Charles Alexander was grandson of Charles, the fifth Duke of Lorraine (the same who in conjunction with John Sobieski successfully defended Vienna against the Turks), and was born in 1712. After his brother had been married to Maria Theresia, he came to be looked upon as a most promising young military hero, and was named very early to the rank of an Austrian Field-Marshal. He served in this capacity in the war against the Turks, in 1738. In 1742 he commanded the army in Bohemia and took Czaslau, but lost the battle on the 17th of May to the King of Prussia, who nevertheless had all his cavalry destroyed in the engagement. After Frederick had made peace, the Prince marched his army against the French and besieged Prague. In 1744 he crossed the Rhine, but after many successes and having very nearly obtained possession of Lorraine, he was recalled by Frederick's invasion of Bohemia, from which he succeeded in driving him out; but the year following he was defeated by the King at Hohenfriedberg and Sorr. In the Seven Years' War he again commanded the Austrian army, and was successful against Marshal Keith in 1757; but he was defeated by Frederick at Breslau and Lissa, after which he quitted the army and was constituted Austrian Governor of the Netherlands. Frederick, in his Memoirs, speaks of this Prince as brave and much beloved by his soldiers; but he was thought to be too much under the influence of advisers and too fond of the pleasures of the table. He was well versed in history, philosophy, mechanics, and mathematics, and had a good library, and cabinets of medals and natural history; he was also fond of men of letters. He governed the Netherlands with great wisdom and so much to the satisfaction of the people, that the States raised a bronze statue to

his honour in the Place Royale at Brussels, which was destroyed in 1794. He died in 1790.

#### MARSHAL DAUN.

The Austrian Marshal, Daun, the most successful of the opponents of Frederick the Great, expired at Vienna in 1766. He was born in 1705, and bred for the Church, but preferring a military life, he obtained admission among the Knights of Malta, and entered into the Imperial service. He rose to the rank of Colonel of infantry in 1740, and distinguished himself in the war that Maria Theresa sustained in defence of her hereditary succession. The succeeding war procured him a still more brilliant fame. When the King of Prussia was besieging Prince Charles of Lorraine in Prague, Daun, at the head of an army collected in haste, took the resolution to force his great antagonist to raise the siege, gave battle to him at Kollin on the 18th of June, and gained a complete victory. On this occasion the Empress Queen instituted the military Order bearing her name, and created Daun the first knight of it. In 1758 he saved Olmutz by a series of judicious movements, and added fresh laurels to those of the deliverer of Prague, by defeating the King again at the battle of Hochkireben. He surrounded and took prisoners the whole army of General Finck at Maxen, in 1759. When Dresden was unexpectedly attacked by Frederick in 1760, Marshal Daun compelled the King to relinquish his attempt, but he was soon afterwards defeated at Suptitz, near Torgau, where the Marshal received a dangerous wound which compelled him to quit the field. He was regarded throughout the war as the most formidable and successful antagonist of the King of Prussia. His cool and cautious vigilance was well matched against the enterprise and celerity of Frederick, and he is regarded as the Fabius of that royal Hannibal. In a conversation between the Prince de Ligne and Frederick, the former told the King that Marshal Daun would have been more successful against any other man than against him, for that he always saw the Royal Commander with the thunder in his hand, like Jupiter about to annihilate his army—a remark which appeared to give the King much pleasure. Daun's perceptions were quick and sure; but when the urgency of the moment excluded maturity of reflection, he found it difficult to form a vigorous determination. Accordingly his victories were often without any effect whatever; and the vanquished, by bold and rapid measures, were sometimes enabled readily to repair their defeat. He continued to command during the remainder of the war, always preserving his reputation for perfect skill and indefatigable vigilance, and he was much esteemed for his private virtues as well as for his professional abilities. He died 1766.

#### GENERAL ZIETHEN.

General Ziethen was without exception the most remarkable of the generals of this war. He united wisdom with courage, contempt of danger with presence of mind, and activity with the most perfect command of temper. He was unruffled in the

heat of action, and singularly accurate and concise in giving orders. He was considered as the tutelary genius of the army, the safety of which was in fact committed to his care in every march that was undertaken. Were the enemy to be attacked, he was in the van; was it expedient to withdraw from action, it was he who covered the retreat. When the army encamped, Ziethen was not satisfied till he had examined and adjusted every thing, supplied every omission, and obviated every inconvenience. After having provided for the interior of the camp, it was his custom to ride round it, to examine and take a survey of its environs. By day and night, while the rest of the army was in repose, he was on horseback examining the face of the country, the vigilance of the guards and pickets, and the direction in which an enemy might advance to an attack. When he was old he once fell asleep from weakness and increasing infirmities in the King's presence, and when the courtiers would awaken him, "Let him sleep on," said Frederick: "he has watched often enough for us."

The King had, like other men, many strong prejudices. Among the troops of his army was a corps called Finkentier's Dragoons, who, owing to some unforeseen accident and not to any fault they had committed, had lost the good graces of their sovereign. Ziethen watched and seized a favourable moment to combat this ill-founded aversion. The General detached two squadrons of this regiment for the purpose of reconnoitring a wood, and the head of the squadrons met in a valley with a body of Austrian cavalry, consisting, as it afterwards appeared, of forty-two squadrons. They were in so narrow a pass that the commanding officer judged, that by making a charge in a bold, confident manner, as if he were duly supported, he might achieve a success. Accordingly he determined to make the attempt, and the troops seconded their officer, proud of acting under the immediate inspection of the King. They agreed among themselves to waste no time or strength in taking prisoners, and fell upon the enemy with loud shouts and unconceivable fury. The King, as soon as he saw these troops in motion, sent an aide-de-camp with all possible expedition to tell Ziethen to prevent the two squadrons from attacking the hostile cavalry, which was too strong for them. Ziethen immediately sent back the officer with this message: "I assure the King that it is my humble request they may go on, and that himself will have the goodness to be a witness of their success; I have always said they were brave soldiers, and I am sure they will show themselves to be such. I shall take care to send them a support." The dragoons performed prodigies of valour, so that the King conferred upon every officer the order of military merit, and presented each with a particular kind of sabre in honour of the exploit. From this time Frederick testified the highest esteem for this corps.

The regiment which General Ziethen commanded was called the Death's-head Hussars. He made it the great business of his life never to be neglectful of any thing belonging to the interest and particular arrangement of this corps. Throughout the whole Prussian army, and even among the enemy, one uniform opinion was



entertained of its excellent order and bravery. The hussars of Ziethen, whether officers or soldiers, made it their great ambition to emulate their commander, who on his part carried his confidence in them to such an extent, that he deemed himself invincible at their head, and more secure in the midst of them than elsewhere. It was then of little import to him whether the enemy was near or distant. On one occasion some one remarked to him that he was too much exposed for an officer of his rank. "Am I not in the midst of my hussars?" was his reply. After the peace the officers and soldiers flocked around Ziethen as round a father, showed him their scars, and reminded him of the honourable occasions on which they had gained them.

#### GENERAL SEYDLITZ.

Frederick William von Seydlitz was born 1721, at Kalkar, in the duchy of Cleves. His father was a captain of dragoons, and the young Seydlitz became early accustomed to the management and training of horses. It is said that so early as seven years of age he could ride a steed in a masterly fashion. His father dying while Frederick was yet young, he passed as a kind of page into the service of the Margrave of Schwedt, who was passionately devoted to equestrian pursuits. The servant was therefore well suited to the master, and recommended himself to him by the most daring and hazardous feats of horsemanship, by which he soon obtained a renown which spread through all that country. When he had attained the age of seventeen he obtained a cornet's commission in the Margrave's regiment, but unfortunately disagreed with his commanding officer, who took a dislike to him, and sent him upon every hazardous service. On one of these occasions, in the war of 1742, he found himself on an outpost with thirty cuirassiers attacked by an overwhelming force of the enemy, with whom he contended some time with the utmost bravery, but was at length taken prisoner and sent to the fortress of Raab, in Hungary. When released from confinement he came under the notice of the King of Prussia, who had heard of his bravery and equestrian accomplishments, and gave him the rank of captain in one of his regiments of hussars. In the second Silesian war Seydlitz had several opportunities of distinguishing himself both by his bravery and prudence. In the battle of Hohenfriedberg he took the Saxon General, Von Schlecting, prisoner with his own hands, for which he acquired the rank of major. At the battle of Sorr he was wounded, but not so badly as to quit his duty, which he continued in the field till the end of the campaign, obtaining many signal advantages over his Austrian opponents. He then went into quarters at Trebnitz, where he exercised the hussars of his regiment in those daring equestrian exercises of which he was so fond. The King, who seems to have obtained a thorough knowledge of the characters of all his officers, kept his eye upon Seydlitz, and employed him in disciplining first one regiment and then another until the year 1755, when he promoted Seydlitz to the rank of colonel. He came prominently forward from the very beginning of the Seven Years' War. He was at the

disastrous battle of Kollin, in which he was eminently serviceable in covering the Prussian retreat. Indeed his regiment was one of the few that escaped unbroken. For his services on this occasion he was made major-general, being at that time the youngest of that rank in the service; for Frederick had become proud of him, and now employed him on every occasion where discretion as well as valour was needed. At the battle of Rossbach, in 1757, he rose still higher in the estimation both of his sovereign and the army, since it was admitted by all that the glory of that success belonged almost entirely to the conduct of the Prussian cavalry under the command of their General. Henceforward Seydlitz was regarded as a hero that was invincible. The battle of Zorndorf, in 1759, was the next great field in which he distinguished himself; after which succeeded Hochkirchen and Kunersdorf, in both of which he was present, and in the latter received a wound which obliged him to retire to Berlin to be cured. But here he received a more serious one of another description from the bright eyes of the young Countess von Hacke, whom he solicited the King's permission to marry in the following characteristic terms: "With the utmost submission I beg that your Majesty will allow me to marry the young Countess von Hacke the day before I leave this to rejoin the army, that I may not be entirely abandoned to domestics when next I am wounded. This is one ground, and not the least, for my request." The King consented, and the marriage took place. Seydlitz was again wounded, and was at Berlin when that capital was besieged in 1760: on this occasion he exerted himself to put the place in a state of defence, and to obtain terms when it could no longer be defended. In 1761 he joined the army under Prince Henry, with whom he remained till the concluding battle of the war, that of Freyberg, in 1762. In this action he proved himself as capable of commanding infantry as he had hitherto done his own more favourite arm, leading some battalions in person to the charge with great success.

At the conclusion of the war he received various honours and emoluments; but his health soon began to decline, owing perhaps to the great exertions to which his frame had been subjected in his youth, and he died in November, 1773, at only fifty-three years of age. His loss was severely felt by Frederick, and the whole army put on mourning for him. In 1784 a marble statue was erected to his honour in the Wilhelmsplatz at Berlin; and his fame has descended to posterity as one of the bravest and most successful of the King of Prussia's generals, and perhaps the most accomplished cavalry officer that ever drew bridle.

#### THE DUKES OF BRUNSWICK.

In the history of the Seven-Years' War three Dukes of Brunswick highly distinguished themselves.

Duke Augustus William of Luneberg entered the service of Prussia in 1731, and made the campaign of 1734 on the Rhine. He was wounded in the Silesian war at Molwitz, in 1740, and at Hohenfriedberg in 1745. In the Seven Years' War he commanded

a corps for the King, and on the 21st of April, 1757, assisted at the victory of Reichenberg, and at the defeat of the Austrians near Prague. He was made prisoner on the 27th of November, 1757, at a reconnaissance made by the Austrians near Breslau. After his return from captivity, in 1758, he commanded in several actions against the Russians and Swedes near Stettin, where he died in 1781.

Duke Ferdinand, son of the Duke of Brunswick-Wolfenbützel, the most celebrated of the family, and indeed regarded as one of the most distinguished generals of this age, was born in 1721. He entered the service of the great Frederick in 1740, at the age of nineteen years, and was the companion of the King in his flight at Molwitz. He assisted at the siege of Prague, and was wounded at the battle of Sorr. In the Seven Years' War he was placed, on the recommendation of Frederick, in command of the British and Hanoverian army; with these he forced the French to pass the Rhine, and by a bold and able manœuvre got into their rear at Crevelt. He gained the victory of Minden in 1759. In 1762 he drove the French out of Hesse and saved Hanover. He never served again, though he did not die till 1792. He is recorded as having been, in temperament, cool, deliberate, exact, and guarded, seeing every advantage as it arose, seizing it at the moment, and pursuing it to its legitimate extent, but never attempting to push it beyond. The man was always checked by the commander, so that he was a thorough soldier, and afforded the ideal of a great general, trusting very little to fortune, and obtaining the reputation of never committing a fault. He was a virtuous and religious man, and courageously avowed his principles in the midst of the sceptical and ironical circle that surrounded Frederick. He employed the latter period of his life as a religious enthusiast and freemason.

Duke Charles, better known in the war as the hereditary Prince of Brunswick, was born in 1735. He was brought up to war by his two uncles, Frederick the Great and Duke Ferdinand; and distinguished himself first at the age of twenty-two, at the battle of Hastenbeck, where he carried a French battery sword in hand, which drew from the King the remark, that "nature had destined him for a hero." In 1758 he passed the Weser with a detachment, in the face of the French army, and was the leader of the army on all occasions in matters of enterprise and gallantry, gaining a great reputation by his ability and courage. In 1760 he was wounded in an affair with the French near Korbach; and in a subsequent affair near Emsdorff he attacked a corps of the enemy, from whom he took 2000 prisoners. At the head of 15,000 men he surprised the French under the Marquis de Castries at Kloster-camp and at Bergen, where the Prince of Ysenburg was killed at his side. In 1778 he was again in the field in the Bavarian war, and maintained himself with great credit in a difficult position at Trappau. After he succeeded to the duchy, in 1780, he commanded the Prussian force that entered Holland in 1787, and took possession of

Amsterdam by a bold stroke. In 1792 he was nominated to the command of the Austrian and Prussian army which entered France that year, and of which he resigned the command in 1794. He was killed at the battle of Auerstadt in 1806.

#### THE MARQUIS OF GRANBY, AND LORD GEORGE SACKVILLE.

John (Manners), Marquis of Granby, was eldest son of the third Duke of Rutland, and was born in 1720. In 1745 he raised a regiment of foot at his own expense, and received the rank of colonel. He became a general in 1755, and was immediately employed in the army under Prince Ferdinand of Brunswick. His Lordship not only shared all the fatigues and dangers of the troops under his command, but when they were ill supplied, owing to no fault of his own, he generously procured provisions and necessaries for the private soldiers at his own expense, and kept a table for the officers. He naturally became in consequence one of the most popular military commanders that ever appeared; but in addition to his generosity, his kind-heartedness, engaging manners, and heroic bravery, made him the idol of the soldiers and the people. He has been called "the hero of alehouse signs;" but the prevalence of this species of immortality in every town and village of the kingdom speaks to the estimation in which he was held in his day. His popularity on going to the war in Germany was so great, that no less than fifty-two young men of the best families requested to be allowed to serve as his officers on that occasion. He died in 1770, in the lifetime of his father, but Commander-in-Chief of the army.

Lord Granby's history is so mixed up with that of Lord George Sackville (afterwards Germaine) that it appears but just to add a few words as to the character of this much-maligned officer. After serving in the inferior ranks of the army he became lieutenant-colonel in 1740, and commanded the twenty-eighth regiment at Dettingen, where his conduct obtained the especial notice of the King, then present in the field. He distinguished himself again at Fontenoy, where he was shot in the breast at the head of Banck's regiment. He served under the Duke of Cumberland in the rebellion of 1745, and again in Germany throughout the campaigns of 1747-8. He was named second in command of the expedition to St. Malo in 1758, and thence proceeded to Germany, where he succeeded to the chief command of the British contingent on the death of the Duke of Marlborough. Incompatibility of temper brought on a personal disagreement between him and the Generalissimo, Prince Ferdinand of Brunswick, which led to all the clamour and disgrace that were heaped upon him after the battle of Minden. The vulgar estimate that Lord George was deficient in courage on that occasion appears disproved by his services and wounds. Few military men will believe that one who had so carried himself in moments of imminent danger as to merit the notice of his sovereign and superior officers, would be deficient in firmness of mind in a situation of comparative safety. At his court-martial he behaved with too much haughtiness and braggadocio, but showed no meanness of character; his defence

was eloquent and able; and he received his sentence with great equanimity. Though removed by the result of the trial from all military command, he was subsequently employed in the highest departments of administration, and became Secretary of State for the Colonies in 1775-82, when he retired into private life, dignified with the title of Viscount Sackville and a seat in the House of Lords. He died in 1785.

#### THE FRENCH COMMANDERS.

D'Estrées, Richelieu, Soubise, Clermont, Contades, and De Broglie, all—in spite of disputes and intrigues, ability and incompetence, success and failure—commanded the armies of the King of France in Germany during the Seven Years' War. To record that French soldiers distinguished themselves, and repeatedly augmented the military glory of their country by their heroic deeds, is as sure as that they took the field at all; but they owed little of this to these generals. The commands at this time were given to men, not for their military merit, but for their favour with the mistress of the hour in the most libertine court of Europe; and although Bergen and Korbach, and other fields, have added something to French glory, yet this was very disproportionate to the extent of the French armies, and the inferior numbers of their opponents. The war was never carried by the French beyond Westphalia, or that district of country bounded on the east by the Rhine, and extending from Bremen to Frankfort, north and south, towards Saxony: and nothing deserving of the character of greatness can be said to attach to any of the above-named Marshals of France, although in command of one of the most splendid armies in the world, 100,000 strong.

1. Marshal d'Estrées was first placed in command of the French army of the Rhine in 1756, and having gained the victory of Hastenbeck over the Duke of Cumberland, was pushing him out of the country, when he was displaced in the moment of success by

2. Marshal Duke de Richelieu, who had indeed gained laurels that he well merited when he captured Minorca from the British, but now laid claim to credit that did not attach to him when the Hanoverians and Hessians laid down their arms at Kloster-Seven. The "horrible excesses, depredations, and disorders" that ensued, throughout the north of Germany, from this man's cupidity, cruelty, and oppression, inflicted a stain upon his character that effaced all his former greatness, and led to his recall, when he was succeeded by

3. The Prince de Soubise, who was named to the command through the influence of Madame de Pompadour. He, however, lost the battle of Rossbach in 1757, and was succeeded in 1758 by

4. M. de Clermont, who, from a priest, had become a soldier, but losing the battle of Crevelt, he gave up the command of the army to

5. Marshal de Contades, who lost the battle of Minden, and was superseded in 1759 by

6. Marshal Duke de Broglie, who was successful against the allies

at the battle of Bergen. He was associated in the command with Soubise, again sent out by the court influence of Versailles, and who for the petty affair of Sondershausen obtained the *baton* of Marshal. This Prince subsequently got his colleague recalled and exiled after the affair at Villinghausen, but he had now the good sense to call to his aid in the field.

Marshal d'Estrées, who, as he had commanded the army at the beginning of the war, now concluded it in 1762, with the unimportant affair at Johannisberg.

After the bare recital of these alternations in command, it would be worse than useless to describe the military characters of men who really did little or nothing of importance, although it is true that books have been written on the military glory of the reign of Louis XV.

### 3. WAR IN SPANISH SOUTH AMERICA.

The latest action of the war with Spain, and the only one successful to the latter, occurred on the first day of this year, 1763. A joint expedition of English and Portuguese, consisting of three frigates and some small armed vessels and store-ships, with 500 soldiers on board, had sailed in the preceding August from the Tagus, directed against the Spanish settlement of Buenos Ayres. It arrived in the mouth of La Plata in the beginning of November, and, after encountering much difficulty in ascending that great river, reached Buenos Ayres on the 1st of January, and steered directly for the harbour. The Spaniards, who were well prepared, received them with a fierce cannonade; but at length their batteries were nearly silenced, and the success of the enterprise seemed almost certain, when the commander's ship from some unknown cause accidentally took fire and instantly was all in a blaze. A dreadful scene ensued, which ended in the destruction of the ship with more than three-fourths of her crew, the commander included. The other ships escaped with difficulty, and the attempt was thus entirely frustrated.

### 4. WAR IN CORSICA.

In this year the Corsicans, under their gallant leader Pascal Paoli, sustained with great vigour their struggle for independence against the Genoese, over whom they obtained a considerable victory.

### 5. WAR OF THE BRITISH AGAINST THE NATIVE POWERS OF HINDOSTAN—BATTLES OF KUTWAH, GERIAH, AND OUTAHNUJA—MONGHIER AND PATNA TAKEN.

During the course of this year a new war arose in the East Indies between the English Company and the Nabob, Meer Cossim, who had been made Subahdar of Bengal upon the deposition of Meer Jaffer. A difference arose from certain restrictions imposed by the Subahdar on English commerce. Hostilities commenced at Patna. A sudden attack upon the city placed it in the hands of the English, but these being permitted to abandon their ranks, and to spread themselves through the town in quest of plunder, accordingly

failed to hold the advantage they had gained. They fled in confusion to the factory, which was forthwith subjected to a siege; and, being unable to make their escape, they were all either destroyed or made prisoners. The Bengal government on the 7th of July declared Meer Cossim deposed, and Meer Jaffer restored to the Subahdarship in his room. This being arranged, a British force was put in motion to effect his restoration to the musnud. It was commanded by Major Adams, and consisted of his Majesty's 84th regiment, 150 European infantry, and two troops of cavalry, with one native regiment of horse, ten companies of sepoy, and twelve guns. These took the field on the 2nd of July and were attacked near Kutwah on the 14th; but the enemy were driven out of the plain with considerable loss, and three guns abandoned. On the 17th the Nabob, Meer Jaffer, was with some 12,000 men at Agurdup; and on the 19th Adams, commanding it, attacked Meer Cossim's army, which was intrenched, with several pieces of cannon on its right, while its left was protected by marshy ground. A skillful movement on the part of the British obliged them to alter their whole position, but at the same moment 2500 of the enemy's horse with 1000 sepoy attacked the British with great resolution: a discharge of grape and musketry, however, put them to flight, leaving all their cannon behind them, with 7000 slain, including their commander, and the result was that they abandoned the fort of Kutwah. On the 24th the British force stormed the lines of Mootejil, and thus obtained possession of Moorshedabad and about fifty pieces of cannon. Pursuing their victorious course, the British on the 2nd of August crossed a ravine in the face of the enemy's whole army, commanded by Cossim in person, having under him one Sumroo, a German or Swiss, who had formerly been a sergeant in the French service, and whose real name has not transpired. The whole force, consisting of 8000 cavalry, 30,000 infantry, and thirty pieces of cannon, now waited for the British near Sootee, in the plain of Geriah. Here a general engagement took place on the 15th.

#### THE BATTLE OF GERIAH OR SOOTEE.

Cossim's troops were divided into brigades, with a splendid train of artillery, all regularly disciplined after the European fashion: these moved in order to attack the English both in front and rear, the guns being at the same time brought to bear with great effect. In the suddenness of their onset the British line was broken and two guns captured. The battle was obstinately fought, and for a time victory seemed to oscillate between the combatants; but the firmness of the British infantry eventually prevailed, and after a desperate conflict of four hours the enemy were defeated with great slaughter. The precipitate flight of Cossim's troops transferred to the English all their cannon and 150 boats laden with grain. Cossim's army fled to a strong intrenched position on the chain of hills behind the Oodwa, called Outahnulla, covering Monghier. Here were mounted a hundred pieces of cannon, with a water-ditch or natural lake fifty or sixty feet wide in front of the parapet. On the 21st

Adams advanced within 3000 yards, and commenced his approaches and batteries. On the 24th a redoubt was erected for the protection of the trenches within 1200 yards of the enemy's works.

#### THE BATTLE OF OUTAHNULLA—MONGHIER TAKEN.

On the 25th, at noon, the enemy attacked this post with a considerable number of sepoy, who were permitted to advance to within 100 yards, when they received such a fire as compelled them to retreat. Adams was unable to complete his batteries before the 4th of September, owing to the weather and the difficulty of obtaining materials, but on that day a battery opened with six guns and howitzers at 500 yards' distance. It was found, however, that their fire had no great effect on the enemy's mud works, and that there was no possibility of carrying the intrenchment except by filling up the ditch. At last a deserter, grown weary of Cossim's service, came into the British camp, and offered to guide a body of troops by a ford through the nullah. Adams therefore amused the enemy by a false attack on this side, and on the 5th he ordered two companies of grenadiers, a company of French volunteers, and 5000 sepoy, under the command of Captain Irwin, to move round by the foot of the hills. After an obstinate resistance on the part of the enemy, attended by great slaughter, the English obtained possession of the fort, with but little loss in proportion to the importance of the object. It was said that Cossim had 60,000 men in arms within the intrenchment. The rout was complete. The number of the enemy's slain was enormous, and the drowned even exceeded those who had fallen. About 1500 were made prisoners. Cossim retired with the principal remains of his army to Patna, leaving a garrison at Monghier. Hither the victorious army immediately advanced, and on the 4th of October Major Adams invested that place. Three batteries were opened on the 8th, which silenced the enemy's fire. On the 9th more guns were brought to bear, which at length effected a breach; and on the morning of the 11th the garrison surrendered at discretion. This speedy surrender was by some thought to have been brought about by treachery, as the garrison was 2000 strong. The news of the loss of this place reached Cossim at Patna, and inflamed him to a pitch of fury. He wrote to Adams in these words: "Exult not upon the successes you have obtained by treacheries and night assaults. By the will of God you shall see in what manner these shall be retaliated and revenged." He resolved on an act of wholesale slaughter, exceeding in enormity the atrocities of the Black Hole. This was to murder all the English who were at the time prisoners in his hands. Sumroo was the agent charged with their massacre; and, albeit himself a European, this hired ruffian obeyed to the letter the instructions of his Mussulman employer. It is said that the total number of English thus murdered at Patna in cold blood exceeded 200. Among the victims there was also a Hindoo named Rannarrain, formerly governor of Patna, who had the misfortune to incur the resentment of Meer Cossim, and who was found in the



water with a sack of sand round his neck. A physician named Fullerton was the only Englishman that escaped.

PATNA TAKEN.

Patna was now the only place remaining to Cossim, and here he had posted a large garrison. On the 1st of November batteries were opened against it, and the siege was continued till the 6th, when the place was taken by storm. From this period the fate of Cossim was decided. He retired with precipitation to Lassarum, and, collecting together all his treasure, proceeded to the banks of the Caramanassa, pursued by the English. Here he crossed the river, and took refuge in the camp at Allahabad, where the Emperor Shah Alum received the fugitive, but refused admission to any of his troops. This campaign was most honourable to the British force and to its commander, Adams, who soon after died, leaving the command to Major Carnac. The army of Meer Cossim was pronounced to have been better appointed and better disciplined than any seen in India before; but in less than four months the enemy yielded the palm of victory in four capital actions, their strongest intrenchments were forced, two considerable fortified places were taken, and nearly 500 pieces of cannon. Adams, in truth, in this short campaign finished the conquest of the entire kingdom of Bengal.

---

1764.

1. DEATH OF AUGUSTUS III., KING OF POLAND.—2. WAR WITH THE NATIVE PRINCES OF HINDOSTAN—BATTLE OF BUXAE.—3. WAR WITH THE INDIAN TRIBES IN NORTH AMERICA.

1. DEATH OF AUGUSTUS III., KING OF POLAND.

After so extensive and sanguinary a war, Europe required to enjoy some repose. Late, however, in the previous year Augustus III., King of Poland, the unfortunate antagonist of Frederick, died, and in the election for the kingdom of Poland so many of the powers were interested, that dangerous convulsions might well be feared both within and without that kingdom. Among the powers of Europe there were two parties; one of which desired the throne to be filled by a native, and the other by a foreigner. To the former belonged Russia, Prussia, and Turkey, who prepared to defend their preference by force of arms. A party in Poland took up arms to resent this foreign interference; but in the end Poniatowski, a member of an illustrious Polish family, and the particular favourite of the Czarina, was elected King without bloodshed, and took the name of Stanislaus II. Another election which at this time took place without the least opposition was that of the Archduke Joseph to be King of the Romans.

## 2. WAR WITH THE NATIVE PRINCES OF HINDOSTAN.

The East Indies presented this year an extension of hostilities between the English Company and the native princes. Against European invaders the cause of one Asiatic prince is sometimes the cause of all. The effect of driving Meer Cossim into the territories of a neighbouring nabob was rather to remove the fire farther inland than to extinguish it. When Meer Cossim crossed the Caramanassa the Mogul and his Vizier were in camp at Allahabad, where Cossim was graciously received by them. The time appeared to be now come when Shah Alum and Sujah-Dowlah thought they might openly espouse Meer Cossim's cause, and for that purpose they drew into the field an army of 50,000 men, with a train of artillery such as might be supposed to follow an European army of equal numbers. The British and native forces, commanded by Major Carnac, were encamped under the walls of Patna, when on the 13th of May the Indian army advanced in order of battle, under a heavy cannonade, and commenced a vigorous attack on the English post. In the mean time the main body of the enemy got into the rear, and thus there were incessant attacks on both sides. The conflict lasted till sunset, when the enemy, repulsed on all sides, was compelled to retire after having sustained considerable loss. But the Emperor and Vizier saw clearly that against the discipline of the British their own rude levies could make no impression, and from this time they began to desire an accommodation with England.

Late in the month of June the enemy returned into Oude; and Major Hector Munro with as many troops, both King's and Company's, as could be spared from the presidency was sent to take the command from Major Carnac, who had expressed his apprehension that a large amount of disaffection existed in the army under his command, although, if staunch, he considered they were a good match for the enemy; numerous desertions, he stated, would have taken place but for the position he had taken and the good look-out that he had kept; but Major Munro found this army on his arrival in a frightful state of mutiny and desertion. A whole battalion of sepoy marched off the very day of his arrival to join the enemy. He despatched troops in pursuit, who brought them back prisoners. He received them with his troops under arms, tried twenty-four on the spot, and sentenced them to be bound to the guns and blown away, which sentence was carried into instant execution. From this time mutiny and desertion were at an end. The army was now in a state to meet the enemy; but the greater part of the season had already been wasted, and the rains had begun to fall, so that it was the 15th of September before Munro could fix on its rendezvous. Before the army was set in motion, however, intelligence was received that the enemy had thrown up some breastworks to prevent the English from crossing the river Soane: this induced Munro to despatch Major Champion to cross the river some miles lower down, for the purpose of covering the passage of the main army. The enemy was by this movement dislodged; and the English force crossed without

molestation and advanced to Buxar, where the enemy lay encamped, with all the advantages that nature and art could bestow. The first intention of Munro was to attack the enemy before daybreak on the morning after his arrival; but he fortunately deferred the attack, and going out the next morning to reconnoitre, he found that his enemy had been under arms all night prepared for him. He suspected that this was some feint intended for the display of readiness, and contented himself with encamping just beyond the enemy's shot, "wishing they might come out to attack him."

#### BATTLE OF BUXAR.

His wish was gratified; for at eight o'clock on the 23rd he saw the enemy's right in motion. He immediately prepared for action; and in less than twenty minutes afterwards, in consequence of his previous disposition, he was fortunate enough to see his line of battle completely formed. The action raged till twelve, when the enemy gave way, leaving 6000 men on the spot, with 130 pieces of cannon. They retreated leisurely, blowing up several tumbrils and three large magazines of powder as they went off. The British army broke into columns to pursue; but the Vizier frustrated this, sacrificing a part of his army by the destruction of the bridge of boats over which they were retiring—"the best piece of generalship," observed Munro, "that Sujah-Dowlah had shown that day; because if he had crossed with his army I should either have taken or drowned all the enemy in the Caramanassa, and come up with the treasure and jewels of Cossim, which amounted to between two and three millions." The British force engaged in this memorable battle consisted of 7072 men and twenty field-pieces. The force of the enemy was at the lowest estimate 40,000, and the artillery captured amounted to 133 pieces. The Mogul and the Vizier separated from each other in anger the night before the battle, and afterwards the former sought and obtained the protection of the British. He wrote to Major Munro to congratulate him on his victory over the Vizier, who, he alleged, had treated him as his prisoner. "Who that had seen the throne of Delhi in the plenitude of its power, before which myriads of dependent princes bent in lowly subjection, could have anticipated a period when its representative should come into the camp of a western commander to supplicate for protection against his own servants, from those merchant strangers into whose hands had passed the balance that poised the destinies of the Lord of Hindostan?" Meer Cossim had likewise left the Vizier's army, under a pretence of collecting revenue, though in reality to get rid of his army; but his troops, under Sunroo, remained with the Vizier; and the Nabob was under surveillance until he effected his escape to the Rohilla country. Munro entered into negotiations to obtain possession of this scoundrel, and refused with scorn the many lacs of rupees offered in his stead; but after an ineffectual negotiation, in which it appeared that the Vizier was through-

<sup>1</sup> Thornton.

out insincere, the British army continued its march towards Allahabad. Chunarghur was now besieged. It is situated on the banks of the Ganges, 150 miles above Patna, and is a place exceedingly strong by its situation. Munro tried to take it by surprise, and failed; and a second attempt was frustrated by the misconduct of the troops in the van, who ran away, so that he was obliged to turn the siege into a blockade, and retire with the rest of his army to Benares. Before hostilities recommenced in the field, however, Munro had relinquished his command and quitted India.

### 3. WAR WITH THE INDIAN TRIBES IN NORTH AMERICA.

In America the colonists had not only neglected all means of acquiring the confidence of the Indian tribes, but had pushed their settlements so as to trench greatly on their hunting-grounds. Irritated at this, and alarmed at an unfounded report that the English meant to extirpate them, the tribes made a powerful confederacy, and attacked all the frontier settlements during harvest, plundering, and putting to death with all the cruelties that savage ingenuity could devise. They also surprised three garrisons, and were rapidly advancing to seize Fort Pitt, to the relief of which Colonel Bouquet was immediately despatched with a strong corps, who met them near a dangerous defile called Turtle Creek, and drove them off, with a loss to the British of about sixty killed and wounded. In the morning the Indians renewed the attack, and made the most vigorous efforts to penetrate into the British camp; and though repulsed, they still continued their attacks. Colonel Bouquet, however, made the observation that their style of warfare was to take to flight immediately upon being attacked, and then rally with greater effect: he therefore determined to feign a retreat, that he might bring them to close action. The manœuvre completely succeeded. The Indians rushed after the troops in sure anticipation of victory, but two companies halted and received them with a steady fire, and when at the second volley they fled, two other companies presented themselves in their rear, who routed and pursued them with great slaughter. The great distance of the forts from each other and from the settled portion of the country, favoured fresh attempts from the Indians, who on the 14th of September surrounded a convoy of British troops near the carrying-place of Niagara, and killed nearly a hundred officers and privates. In this stage of the business General Amherst, considering that although British discipline and valour must ultimately triumph in every conflict with mere savage ferocity, yet that the prosperity of the colonies would suffer greatly under a prolonged contest, determined to employ the powerful influence of Sir William Johnson to conclude a treaty with the Indian tribes. This put an end to the bloody conflict that had occurred in that quarter of the globe, after a body of troops under the command of Colonel Bradstreet, and another under Colonel Bouquet, had advanced and taken position in the very heart of the country.

## 1765.

1. WAR IN INDIA—LORD CLIVE GOVERNOR-GENERAL AND COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF—CHUNARGHUR AND ALLAHABAD TAKEN BY SIR ROBERT FLETCHER—BATTLE OF CORAH BY CARNAC.—2. LORD CLIVE ESTABLISHES THE SOVEREIGNTY OF THE EAST INDIA COMPANY.

1. WAR IN INDIA—LORD CLIVE GOVERNOR-GENERAL AND COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF—CHUNARGHUR AND ALLAHABAD TAKEN BY SIR ROBERT FLETCHER—BATTLE OF CORAH BY CARNAC.

During the five years which had followed the departure of Clive from Bengal, the misgovernment of the presidency had been carried to a pitch hardly compatible with the existence of society. The directors at home determined accordingly to send out a new Governor with powers sufficient to redress all grievances, and after much hesitation and dispute they selected Clive, now Lord Clive, as the man best qualified to discharge so important a trust. Clive, who reached Calcutta in May, found matters even more fearfully disorganized than he had anticipated. The danger and scandal of permitting the enormous presents, by which many of the Company's servants had enriched themselves at the expense of opulent and powerful natives, could only be checked by a vigorous hand; but more important matters remained also to be adjusted. The conclusion of the war with the Vizier, and a settlement both with the Mogul and the Nabob, formed part of the plans of Clive.

Major Munro having been recalled, the command of the army lying at Benares devolved upon Sir Robert Fletcher, a major in the Company's service, who, emulous of the glory gained by his predecessors, resolved to do something to signalize himself before Major Carnac, who had been again named to the command of the army, should arrive to supersede him. With this view he broke up his camp at Benares at midnight on the 14th of January, and marched off towards the enemy. He did not come up with them till the third day, when he made the proper motions to attack them, but after showing front they twice retreated in good order, and as often faced about again when the pursuit slackened. On preparing for a third attack, however, they fled with precipitation, and with considerable loss in men and military stores. Sir Robert on this determined on a renewed attack of the fort of Chunar or Chunarghur, before which his predecessor had been foiled. He soon made three practicable breaches; but to his surprise, the garrison being mutinous for want of pay, the Governor anticipated the assault by coming forward in sight of his troops to deliver the keys of the place to Sir Robert, with a speech which, at the same time that it contained the highest compliment to his antagonist, argued great nobleness of mind in himself. "I have," said he, "endeavoured to act like a soldier, but deserted by my prince, and left with a mutinous garrison, what could I do? God and you are witnesses that to the faith of the English I now trust my life and fortune."

Fletcher next proceeded to Allahabad, a large city on the Ganges, between sixty and seventy miles above Chunarghur, defended by high and thick walls, and by a strong fort, of which he made himself master. He then made over the command to Carnac, who in the end of April crossed the Ganges for the purpose of opposing Sujah-Dowlah. This person was still Nabob of Oude, a man of steadiness, courage, and resources, and determined not to fall in an inglorious manner. He gathered together with great assiduity the remains of his routed armies; and being abandoned by the Mogul, who had, as we have related, quitted his camp at the battle of Buxar and gone over to the English; stripped of the name and authority of Vizier; worsted and discouraged by frequent and serious defeats; and seeing his own territories unequal to the supply of troops sufficient, either in numbers or spirit, to cope with the British, he now turned himself for aid to the Mahrattas. These people lay to the south-west of his territory, and were deemed the most warlike and formidable of all the Indian nations: their great strength lay in horse, with which they held the whole peninsula of Hindostan in continual alarm. Ghazee-Khan with a handful of his followers joined him, but the Rohillas, on whom he mainly relied, kept aloof. The Mahratta power had, however, no terror to the English arms. Carnac marched immediately to engage the confederated enemy, and on the 3rd of May came up with them at Corah, when, after a weak resistance, they were totally routed and obliged to recross the Jumna with the greatest precipitation. The Mahrattas were again routed in an engagement on the 22nd of June, and were forced to seek for refuge again in their own country. Sujah-Dowlah therefore resolved to throw himself on the generosity of the invader, and having first permitted the delinquent Meer Cossim, and the assassin Sumroo to escape, he surrendered himself three days after the action to General Carnac, with no other stipulation than that of awaiting the determination of Lord Clive concerning him.

## 2. LORD CLIVE ESTABLISHES THE SOVEREIGNTY OF THE EAST INDIA COMPANY.

This celebrated commander and statesman having made his reforms at Calcutta, set out from thence for the army on the 25th of June, to determine the conditions which the victors should prescribe to the vanquished. Sujah-Dowlah was received by Lord Clive on the 2nd of August, and was restored to the Nabobship of Oude on payment of an indemnification for the expenses of the war; but the Great Mogul was not so fortunate as his rebellious officer. The English government obtained from him an important accession to its power and influence. He surrendered into the hands of the Company the whole of his revenues, and in lieu of the remainder accepted an annual pension for his government and household; the titular sovereign of Hindostan was now required by Clive to give a formal grant of the provinces which the Company already possessed *de facto*. The East India Company by a firman or deed, dated 12th of August, 1765, obtained the Dewannee or the right to the collec-

tion of the revenues in the provinces of Bengal, Bahar, and Orissa. This document raised them at once to the rank of a sovereign power, and made them masters of a great territory. Thus Lord Clive permanently established that empire which he had first inaugurated at Plassey; but this was not the whole of his work at this period. He had put an end with a vigorous hand to practices by which gigantic fortunes had been rapidly accumulated, and established for the civil service of the Company the means of more slowly but more surely acquiring a competence, and he now resolved to do the same with the army. The military service, however, excited against him a formidable conspiracy, and determined to resign their commissions rather than submit to his reforms. They little knew, however, the unconquerable spirit with which they had to deal. He collected a force around his person on whom he could rely. The leaders in the plot, amongst whom was Sir Robert Fletcher, second in command, were arrested, tried, and cashiered. But while he sternly upheld his just authority over the ringleaders, he treated the younger offenders with lenity, and established a proper discipline in the Company's army.

---

### 1766.

1. LORD CLIVE ESTABLISHES THE CLIVE FUND FOR INVALIDED SOLDIERS OF THE COMPANY—QUITS INDIA.—2. RISE OF THE POWER OF HYDER ALI IN THE CARNATIC.—3. WAR IN GEORGIA.
1. LORD CLIVE ESTABLISHES THE CLIVE FUND FOR INVALIDED SOLDIERS OF THE COMPANY—QUITS INDIA.

At the time that Clive was engaged in recalling the army to their duty, he had an opportunity of showing his regard for their services, which had elevated him to such power and greatness, by an act that is a noble monument of his administration. Meer Jaffier had bequeathed to him a legacy of five lacs of rupees, or about 60,000*l.*, which were in the hands of Munny Begum, the mother of the reigning prince. After some hesitation he accepted the bequest, and immediately made it over to the Company towards the formation of a Military Fund for officers and soldiers invalided in its service, and their widows. This fund was subsequently increased by a donation of three lacs of rupees from another Indian prince, but it still bears the name of him to whom it owes its origin, and it has been increased and upheld by the Company with great liberality. After a stay of eighteen months in Bengal, the state of Clive's health made it necessary for him to return to Europe. He had assisted in a settlement of many internal reforms, and in the establishment of an external peace, and had fixed the relations of the Company with the princes adjoining to their territory upon a system that has been followed in principle ever since. At the close of January, 1767, he quitted for the last time the country on whose destinies he had exercised so mighty an influence.

### 2. RISE OF THE POWER OF HYDER ALI IN THE CARNATIC.

Meanwhile a man of comparatively obscure origin had been rising into notice in the Deccan and Carnatic, and was gradually increasing a power that subsequently swept over a large portion of the south of Hindostan, with the influence of a destructive meteor. This was Hyder Ali, a common adventurer, who had raised himself by his courage and his talents from the condition of a common sepoy to the rank and power of a prince, and who had already become master of a considerable portion of the territory upon the Malabar coast. Sensible that the existence of the Company was an insurmountable bar to his ambition, he had worked upon the weakness of the Nizam of the Deccan, to renounce his alliance with the British, and to join him in a war against their power.

### 3. WAR IN GEORGIA.

In a part of Asia, far removed from India, a war was now raging at this period. The Georgians, who are a Christian people, living in a district between the Caucasus and Mount Ararat, had long submitted to the ignominious tribute of delivering up every year, for the use of the Turkish seraglios, a great number of their noblest and most beautiful virgins: this district of country having been in all ages celebrated for producing the finest women in the world. Prince Heraclius, famous for some victories he had gained over the Persians a few years previously, now formed the glorious project of attempting to deliver his country from this tyranny of the Turks, and the Georgians, animated by his spirit, refused to continue the shameful tribute, which they offered to commute for a money payment. This proposal was rejected and war ensued. Heraclius bravely asserted the rights of his country, and is said to have defeated the Turks in several battles, and to have taken the city of Trebizond.

1767.

1. WAR WITH HYDER ALI AND THE NIZAM—BATTLE OF CHANGAMA.  
—2. THE BATTLE OF TRINOMALEE.—3. WAR IN EUROPE—PAOLI TRIUMPHS IN CORSICA.

1. WAR WITH HYDER ALI AND THE NIZAM—BATTLE OF CHANGAMA.

The possession of the districts called the Northern Circars, was an object for various reasons desirable to the English, and Lord Clive, who had touched at Madras in his way to Calcutta, suggested the propriety of procuring a grant of them from the Emperor. The government of Madras concluded an arrangement for their possession with Nizam Ali, who, after some conflict, had obtained the sovereignty of the Deccan. When the Nizam made his bargain with the British he was in fear of the Mahrattas, who had at the time



made an inroad into the Deccan and even threatened Mysore, the capital of Hyder Ali. That wily chief, however, succeeded in buying the Mahrattas off by a considerable draft upon his treasury, when feeling relieved from all danger in that quarter, knowing also that the aptitude to desert a cause was not peculiar to the Mahrattas, he resolved at the same time to break up the alliance between the English and the Nizam, and was so successful that the latter took the field with him on the northern frontier of Mysore. The consequence was that Colonel Joseph Smith, who was in command of the English, finding himself thus deserted by the Nizam, and opposed to the confederate princes with a considerable army, was utterly unprepared for a campaign, for the Governor and Council of Madras had turned a deaf ear to his representations of the meditated defection of their allies, and of the danger of an invasion of the Carnatic from them. On the 25th of August he found himself attacked by very superior numbers, and harassed by clouds of the enemy's cavalry, but as a corps of British troops from Trichmopoly under Colonel Wood had at length on the urgent representations of Smith been expedited to Trinomalee, he moved away to meet them; when on the 3rd of September the road led through the small pass of Changama, which terminates on the banks of a fordable river. Here a village and hill were occupied by the enemy, whose columns were seen rapidly advancing to secure this position. The enemy were immediately attacked by Captain Cosby, of the 6th sepoys, who drove them back with considerable loss. The main body under Colonel Smith then coming up, a severe action ensued; when, although entangled in the pass, every attempt both from infantry and cavalry was repulsed with a degree of steadiness deserving of the highest commendation. After some hard fighting the British beat off the enemy with a loss of some ninety men, that of the defeated amounting to 2000 in killed alone. On the 8th Colonel Smith and Colonel Wood effected a junction at Trinomalee, when their united forces amounted to 11,500 men, with thirty-four field-pieces; but the troops had been without refreshment or rest for twenty-seven hours, and had lost all their rice in the action. Colonel Smith had been led to believe that he should find abundance of stores at Trinomalee, but being miserably disappointed in this expectation, on the 9th he moved to the southward to procure provisions, leaving the sick and military stores at Trinomalee. This place was attacked by the enemy on the 15th, just as the army came back to its relief, but on Colonel Smith's return they withdrew. Several thousands of Hyder's cavalry, drawn up to cover the removal of his battering-train, were driven with considerable loss into a position about six miles off, in which they strongly intrenched themselves.

## 2. THE BATTLE OF TRINOMALEE.

The enemy were aware of the distress for food that prevailed in the English army, and deferred an attack till the long-continued privations might increase the probabilities of success. Smith called a council of war, who, as usual, advised him to withdraw from the

place, but he was fortunate enough just at the time to discover some considerable stores of grain which had been hidden by the country people underground; and his necessities compelled him at the moment to retain the post as a *point d'appui* for the detachments sent out to collect the rice that had been discovered. On the 25th Colonel Smith moved with his whole force, and encamped out of gun-shot on the left wing of the enemy, who were entrenched behind a chain of redoubts. On the 26th of September the enemy brought forward sixteen pieces of artillery, and commenced a distant cannonade upon the British. Their batteries being covered by a morass in front, the Colonel judiciously made a movement from his right round a hill that concealed his operations from the great body of the confederated army, with a view of turning the left of the enemy's position. Hyder, however, as soon as he caught sight of the British in movement, concluded that they were in retreat towards Arcot. Accordingly he put his own and the Nizam's forces in motion, for the purpose of crossing and intercepting the English columns. The British were pushing on rapidly round the hill, when they suddenly came in contact with the enemy from the other side. The surprise was mutual; the leading regiment, commanded by Captain Cooke, at once secured the possession of the hill, and of some rocks forming a position of considerable strength, with three battalions of sepoys, supported by a strong detachment of Madras European infantry; the rest of the army now coming up, formed a line on the hill, resting its left on the rocks above spoken of. The enemy drew up on some heights parallel to the British, with cavalry on both flanks, forming a crescent half encircling the British force. The contrast between the numbers of the contending forces was here most striking. The confederates seemed sufficient to overwhelm the British. They had 42,000 cavalry, 28,000 infantry, and about 100 pieces of cannon, but not more than thirty of these could be brought into action. The English had about the same number of guns, which being steadily and skilfully served, soon silenced those opposed to them. The English guns were turned upon the dense masses of the enemy's cavalry as they approached; and for a few minutes they endured the cannonade with sullen calmness, awaiting an order to charge, but none being given, the deadly havoc produced by this well-directed fire was at length so far beyond their endurance, that they turned and fled, covering the field in all directions. Hyder, who now perceived that all was lost, drew off his cannon and urged the Nizam to take the same course, but he refused until nine of his guns were captured; then he and a select body of his cavalry were seen galloping from the field with a *saave qui peut*. The elephants bearing the women of the harem were in the rear, and were ordered to turn; but the courage that was wanting in the men remained with the women. One of them exclaimed, "This elephant has never been taught to turn, he follows the standard of the empire;" and she would not suffer him to move until the standard had passed, though the English shot fell thick and heavily around her. Notwithstanding the personal bravery of Hyder, the boasted discipline he had introduced, and the superiority of numbers, his troops were thrown

into utter disorder and totally defeated. On the following day the confederate army were in full retreat, but a train of forty-one pieces of artillery was thought to be within the possibility of capture; and the attempt was made and succeeded. The British pursued the enemy for two days, and took in all nearly seventy pieces of cannon. The loss to the victors was slight, considering the greatness of the victory, but the immediate effect of it was to separate the Nizam from Hyder, and to recall from the vicinity of Madras his son Tippoo, who with 5000 horse had begun to ravage the neighbourhood of that presidency. Early in the month of December the Nizam concluded a peace with the Company highly favourable to the British. Hyder, however, still kept the field and got possession of two places of inconsiderable value, and then proceeded to attack Amboor, to which he laid claim, and hoped to gain it through the treachery of the Khillidar, but it was defended by Captain Calvert, whom Hyder immediately summoned with many florid eulogiums on his skill and bravery. The blunt old soldier replied that he only awaited the opportunity of deserving these compliments. Another flag was therefore sent in, offering him a large bribe and the command of half his army as the price of his surrender of the citadel. Calvert in his reply advised Hyder to respect the lives of his servants, for that any future bearer of such messages would be immediately hanged on the ramparts. Foiled therefore in his overtures, he commenced operations on the 10th of November, but this attempt brought the British army out of its cantonments, and Colonel Smith arrived at Amboor on the 7th of December. Here he was joined in a few days by Colonel Wood, when Hyder repassed the Ghauts with his numerous force, and thus ended the campaign. The rock of Amboor is still borne upon the colours of some of the Company's regiments.

### 3. WAR IN EUROPE—PAOLI TRIUMPHS IN CORSICA.

A state of incessant war had for some time existed in the island of Corsica, and the republic of Genoa had called in the assistance of the French to maintain the ascendancy of their government. Paoli, however, still exerted great activity in upholding a Corsican party against them, and had taken great pains to form something like a marine force, which greatly incommoded the Genoese in their trade, and in their conveyance of troops and stores to the island. In the course of this year he formed a successful design, which was as unexpected by his enemies as surprising to the rest of Europe. The island of Capraja on the coast of Tuscany belonged to the Genoese. It is so guarded and surrounded by rocks that it affords but one landing-place. Paoli conducted an embarkation for the conquest of this place with so much secrecy that the first account the Genoese received of it was the successful landing of his troops. The republic immediately sent off a considerable naval force to recover it, and in the mean while the Genoese garrison in the island retired to the principal fort, where they were forthwith besieged by the Corsicans, who guarded the landing-place at the same time so

well that they repulsed several attempts from the Genoese marine force to relieve the fort. At length, however, the latter made good their footing, but were repulsed with the loss of 150 men, and the garrison being reduced from want of provisions, surrendered the fortress to Paoli, after a defence of 102 days, on the 29th of May.

---

### 1768.

1. WAR IN EUROPE—CORSIKA SOLD BY THE GENOESE TO THE FRENCH—PAOLI DEFEATS THEM.—2. WAR BETWEEN RUSSIA AND THE PORTE—DISTURBANCES IN POLAND.—3. WAR WITH HYDER ALI.

1. WAR IN EUROPE—CORSIKA SOLD BY THE GENOESE TO THE FRENCH—PAOLI DEFEATS THEM.

The republic of Genoa, finding its efforts for the recovery of the government of Corsica ineffectual, transferred the sovereignty of it to France for 40,000,000 of livres. Notwithstanding this, Paoli remained firm to the cause of his country, and a vigorous war commenced, in which for some time he was victorious over the French. Twenty battalions of their troops were landed on the island, and the French flag was hoisted at Bastia on the 21th of June. The Corsicans in a general assembly entered into a resolution to defend their liberties to the last extremity. In the war which ensued the superiority was frequently on the side of the French under the command of the Marquis de Chauvelin; but on the 9th of October a detachment under the Count de Marbeuf was defeated with the loss of nearly 4000 men, and obliged to capitulate, with all his infantry, artillery, and ammunition. The garrison of Borgo also surrendered to Paoli with 1800 infantry, besides artillery and ammunition. In the month of November a considerable reinforcement, on board thirteen transports from France, enabled M. de Chauvelin to preserve the two acquisitions he had made of Furiaria and Biguglia, and to keep open the communication between Bastia and St. Fiorenzo, but in two descents that were made on the islands of Pietra and Rossa they were repulsed by the Corsicans, and driven back with slaughter to their ships. In these attempts the French lost 900 men.

2. WAR BETWEEN RUSSIA AND THE PORTE—DISTURBANCES IN POLAND.

The Ottoman court had long viewed with jealousy the interference of Russia in the affairs of Poland, one consequence of which was that on various occasions Polish fugitives were pursued by the Russians across the Turkish frontier. In July a party having taken refuge at Balta, in Lesser Tartary, were followed into the town and massacred there. This slaughter occasioned much commotion at Constantinople, and orders were instantly despatched to the pachas of the

European provinces of Turkey to collect troops and march towards the Dniester. While these warlike preparations were being actively made, the ministers of the Porte in October sent the Russian ambassador prisoner to the Seven Towers, which was retaliated by an immediate declaration of war by the Empress Catherine. A considerable Turkish army was, therefore, soon assembled between Choczim, Bender, and Oczakow, which was opposed by the grand Russian army under General Romanzow: another Russian army was formed along the Turkish frontiers of Poland, under General Soltikow, but the season was too far advanced to commence military operations.

Poland had been the scene of Russian intrigue and Russian insolence for many a year; until the people, roused by the insults and tyranny they were exposed to, formed a confederacy in the province of Podolia, and raised 5000 men, choosing M. Krasinski for their chief or marshal. The first act of the confederacy was to take the castle of Bar, which was looked upon as a considerable fortification, and was tolerably provided with cannon and military stores. The Russian army under General Kratchenichow formed a line in the palatinate of Cracovia to prevent the progress of the confederates at Bar; but other confederacies now springing up, took arms, assuming a painted eagle on their standards, with the motto, "To conquer or die for religion and liberty." Against these the Russians marched in different divisions, and in a short time the whole kingdom was filled with devastation and blood. Cracow was taken by storm by the Russians in August, after a long defence by the confederates. But the designs of the Porte becoming every day more important, the Russian troops began to file away towards the frontiers of Turkey, and the confederates of Poland again raised their heads, and invited the nation to a general revolt, assuring them of the assistance and protection of the Porte.

Frederick, King of Prussia, was not inattentive to these transactions that were passing in his immediate neighbourhood. He supported the measures that were pursued by the Empress, foreseeing the consequences that might ensue to himself; and he promoted her success by sending her money, in accordance with his defensive alliance with Catherine; while he took care to complete his armies, fill his magazines, and be thoroughly prepared for any event that might happen; but he kept his troops at home, sarcastically remarking "that the contest was a mere war of the short-sighted against the blind."

### 3. WAR WITH HYDER ALI.

The war in the East Indies with Hyder Ali commenced this year with the capture of Mangalore by an expedition fitted out at Bombay: this place being left with an insufficient garrison, fell into the hands of the English without material resistance on the 25th of February, when nine vessels of considerable size were brought away. Some other places were also captured; but in an attempt upon the fort of Cannanore the English were repulsed with considerable loss. Hyder not only despatched troops to support his interest on the

western coast, but proceeded there in person: an overwhelming army, led by himself, suddenly appeared before Mangalore early in the month of May. The place was forthwith quitted by the English; and in attempting to embark the garrison in boats severe loss was sustained, so that all the artillery and stores were abandoned to the enemy; and what was worse, the sick and wounded, to the number of eighty Europeans and 180 sepoy, were left to the enemy's mercy. So miserably defective was the Madras government at this time in obtaining intelligence, that it was nearly three months after Hyder had departed to the westward that they knew the course he had taken. At this critical juncture of his affairs Hyder had been suddenly alarmed by accounts of the rebellion of many of the Malabar chiefs, and of a threatened landing on the coast of a force from Bombay. He left a division of cavalry to mask his movements, and circulating various reports of his intentions, he marched with the main body of his army to Bednore. This place had been made by him his principal arsenal, and was now called Hyder-Nagara. Here he summoned the chiefs, and announced to those who attended that their treason was known to him. He then produced a list, and against the name of each an enormous fine was annexed. He forthwith acted with great precision, and consigned immediately to torture those who hesitated until they had expiated their guilt by payment; and he issued immediate orders that similar steps should be taken against those whose fears had kept them away. He was absent on this expedition upwards of six months; and such was the discipline he had established, that the English were not made aware of his absence until the moment for availing themselves of it had passed away.

The English arms had, however, been successful in reducing Errood and other places. Kistnagherry surrendered to Smith in May, and in June possession was obtained of the fortress of Mulwagul. Colar and Ossoor capitulated soon afterwards. A body of Mahrattas under Morari Row was now taken into the English service, and joined Colonel Smith in August. On the day on which this junction was effected Hyder Ali had returned from his western expedition and entered Bangalore. Colonel Wood was now directed to occupy all the passes which connected these conquests with Mysore, and these he believed and officially reported to be but three; but he was soon astonished at the advance of bodies of horse by unsuspected roads, and became convinced that no force could prevent their access through the difficult and secret passages of the hills. Hyder immediately made an attack on the camp of Morari Row and the Mahrattas with a body of his cavalry, in which he was singularly foiled by an accident that befell the state elephant of Morari. This animal, having received a wound, rushed wildly loose, carrying with him the chain by which he had been attached; this he seized with his trunk, and hurled furiously against a mass of cavalry which he met, throwing them back headlong on a body of infantry who were advancing behind them. These, ignorant of the cause of the shock, retired in dismay with a loss of about 300 men; and before order

could be restored the English camp was aroused, and no renewal of the attempt could be made. With the desire to watch the movements of Hyder's forces, but with a strange ignorance of his art, Colonel Wood thought fit to possess himself of a great number of untenable posts, separated from one another in no case less than ten miles, and in some as much as forty, and to garrison them with one, two, or three companies, exposing them to the easy capture of Hyder in detail. Early in September this officer was himself nearly cut off in ascending from Baramahál to join Colonel Smith, but the intentions of Hyder became known by scouts to Smith, who apprised Colonel Wood; and Hyder might have been caught in his own snare, but that Wood fired a salute in honour of the approach of his superior officer, which warned Hyder to retire with all speed.

An office unknown in the English service, and most pernicious where alone it had been known, had been created by the Madras government, that of appointing field-deputies to accompany their army under Colonel Smith; the effect of which injudicious innovation was to disgust brave and experienced officers, who now actually deserted the cause of their country rather than endure this interference.

Mulwagul had been, as above related, captured, and occupied with a party of British troops. These the field-deputies thought fit to remove, and to supply their place by a company of native troops. Hyder Ali, who was not a man to lose any advantage from an error of his opponents, immediately tampered with the Mussulman officer in command, and prepared the way for an apparent surprise by which he recovered the fortress. Colonel Wood made a movement to relieve it, but was too late, and on the day after this attempt he was himself near falling into Hyder's hands. On the 4th of October Hyder suddenly brought 3000 horse to cover a convoy for the garrison; these came upon Wood so rapidly that he was obliged to abandon the two guns he had with him, and only escaped absolute destruction by a stratagem on the part of Captain Brooke, who commanded the baggage guard. This officer had with him the sick and wounded, with four companies and two guns: he dragged these up to the summit of a flat rock, opened a fire of grape on the enemy's left flank, and at the same time the voice of every individual, sound or sick, joined their commander in shouting, "Hurrah, Smith, Smith!" Throughout the field, alike to friends and foes, the impression was conveyed that the division of Colonel Smith had come up; and although the delusion could not be long maintained, the effect was sufficient to enable Wood to make a better disposition of his force; and to keep up the fight till darkness put an end to it, leaving the English still on the field.

Hyder Ali had, however, previously taken advantage of the dissensions that existed between Colonel Smith and the field-deputies (who counteracted and thwarted all his measures), and of the great distance that he saw the English force was from their own settlements, to turn aside into the dominions of the Nabob of Arcot, who had been a most faithful ally of the British, and

who was accordingly an especial enemy to Hyder Ali. His troops, being composed chiefly of horse, gave him great advantages in the celerity of his movements, and he now accordingly swayed Southern India from its Malabar to its Coromandel shore, cutting off the principal resources of his enemy in carrying on the war. After various marchings and countermarchings he laid siege to Ossoor, and in proceeding to its relief Colonel Wood left open the road to Bangalore, a fortress about twenty miles to the south-east. The enemy immediately marched upon the city of Bangalore, and gained possession of the pettah or town, in which were all the stores and baggage of Colonel Wood's division, and of some 18-pounders which were outside the gate. A dreadful scene occurred on this occasion. The inhabitants of the pettah, men, women, and children, rushed to the fort, driving with them all their camels, horses, and oxen: the gates were suddenly shut, but the masses behind pressed on, and 2000 human beings perished, in common with a large number of beasts of various kinds. No attempt was made upon the fort; but after appropriating to himself every thing movable, Hyder Ali leisurely retired, and was nearly out of sight before Colonel Wood could get back from Ossoor to its relief. Shortly after this the Mysore chief appeared in order to intercept the march of the English towards Colar, and opened a heavy cannonade upon the troops, which was however returned, and maintained by both sides during the day, when Hyder apparently retired; but at night Wood was again assailed; and on his march next day the conflict was renewed, when the Mysoreans suddenly and unaccountably withdrew. Major Fitzgerald commanded another division of the English army; and having heard of the disaster at Bangalore, called in all his detachments, made a forced march in the direction in which Wood's division was likely to be found, and was luckily guided to it by the sound of Hyder's artillery in this attack. Colonel Wood had, indeed, committed a whole chain of blunders, and was in such a state of despondency when Fitzgerald arrived, that that officer considered him incompetent to the duties of his command, and on his representation he was recalled under arrest to Madras. Wood was a man of courage approaching the verge of rashness, but had little military talent, and, like many men of sanguine temperament, was subject to excessive despondency on meeting reverses.

The English were now gradually dispossessed of their posts in Coimbatore. One of Hyder's generals entered the province with 7000 men and ten guns, and vigorously effected this object. Near Caveriporam he received a check from two companies under the command of Sergeant Hoskin, who defended a mud fort with a spirit that entitles him to remembrance. In the report he made of his success he made this remark: "I expect the enemy again to-morrow morning in two parties with guns, but I will take the guns away from them with the help of God." The success of the gallant sergeant was not equal to his noble confidence; the fort was ultimately carried, but not without a sanguinary conflict, and when it had become a heap of ruins. In December Hyder Ali entered Baramahál;



but he had a severe encounter with a party of fifty Europeans and 200 sepoys under Captain Nixon before he got possession of Erroard, which he effected, not without great suspicion of treachery on the part of Captains Orton and Robinson, who commanded there. It is sad to have to relate such a suspicion. Orton was inveigled out of the fort, and fell into the pitfall prepared for him; the second in command had broken his parole, and to save himself obeyed the order extorted from Captain Orton. Hyder now offered to negotiate a peace, but his advances were met with little encouragement, as no confidence could be placed in his sincerity, and his proposals accordingly were rejected.

## 1769.

1. THE FRENCH ESTABLISH THEMSELVES IN CORSICA, AND PAOLI FLEES TO ENGLAND.—2. THE RUSSIANS SEND A FLEET TO THE MEDITERRANEAN.—3. WAR BETWEEN RUSSIA AND TURKEY.—4. THE SIEGE OF CHOCZIM IS ATTEMPTED AND RAISED.—5. THE GRAND VIZIER SUPERSEDED—THE TURKISH ARMY DEFEATED—CHOCZIM TAKEN.—6. THE RUSSIANS OBTAIN OTHER SUCCESSES.—7. WAR IN POLAND.—8. WAR IN INDIA.

1. THE FRENCH ESTABLISH THEMSELVES IN CORSICA, AND PAOLI FLEES TO ENGLAND.

In the beginning of the year the Corsicans made an attempt to seize San Fiorenzo, and to cover their design sent detachments to make false attacks on Biguglia and Olcetta, which had the effect of drawing off the attention of the French; but when on the 2nd of January they attempted to scale the walls, the ladders proved too short, and the garrison was alarmed before the mistake could be remedied. On the 25th they made an attempt on Biguglia, which also miscarried. On the 14th of February they attacked Barbaggio with better success, and took five companies of French foot prisoners; but the Corsicans imprudently loitered in this place, which was not tenable, when Count de Marbeuf came upon them suddenly, and, though they fought well, M. Calonna and above 200 men were compelled to surrender prisoners of war. In the beginning of April the Count de Vaux with fifteen battalions arrived from France, and took the command of all the French forces in the island, amounting to 30,000 men. Every hope for the islanders was now over, and on the 21st of May, Corte, the capital, was taken without opposition. In the mean time the unfortunate Paoli retired with such followers as remained faithful to him to the Piere da Vivario, when, to the number of 537 men, they were surrounded, but gallantly cut their way through the French troops. The majority then dispersed to their homes, but Paoli escaped on board an English ship at Porto Vecchio, and repaired first to Leghorn, and afterwards to England,

where he lived for many years in great consideration, honoured with the friendship of Dr. Johnson and other distinguished men.

## 2. THE RUSSIANS SEND A FLEET TO THE MEDITERRANEAN.

The most remarkable warlike event of this year was the naval expedition sent by the Empress Catherine from the bottom of the Baltic into the Mediterranean Sea. The condition in which both ships and men arrived in England, the length of time they took in making their voyage, and the accidents they met with, did not induce experienced persons to argue great results from it: nevertheless the attempt was bold and manly, and with perseverance against many obstacles they reached Port Mahon, where they wintered. The nations bordering on the Mediterranean showed a considerable degree of reserve in promising friendship and succour to this fleet in case of necessity, and precisely restricted the number of ships to be at any one time admitted into their ports. The Venetians went further and absolutely refused admittance to the Russian ships into any of their ports and islands. They also fitted out a fleet to guard the Adriatic and protect their coasts. The Grand Master of Malta in like manner refused to admit more than three vessels at a time into the harbour of Valetta, and all forbade the supply of military stores on any pretence whatever.

## 3. WAR BETWEEN RUSSIA AND TURKEY.

The inclemency of winter, which in the countries of the North afforded some relaxation to the fury of war, was of no account when Tartars were the belligerents. a severe season only opened to them a new line of action, and was the time when their ravages were most to be dreaded. Accordingly in the months of February and March, Ghirai, Khan of the Tartars, at the head of (some say) 70,000 men, supported by 10,000 spahis, broke through the Russian lines and entered New Serbia. They crossed the Ingul on the ice; but before they had entered the province above 3000 of their number perished from the rigour of the season. One hundred and fifty-four towns and villages were burned, and 14,000 families with 100,000 head of cattle, were carried away. The fort of St. Elizabeth overawed the invaders, who did not dare to attack it, but they extended their ravages and depredations into the Polish Ukraine.

About the same time the Polish confederates of Bar, assisted by some parties of Turks and Tartars, had again become formidable in Podolia. These were routed by the Russians, and obliged to re-pass the Dniester with the loss of their cannon and magazines.

While these transactions passed on the borders of Poland great preparations were made in Constantinople for opening the campaign. A vizier who was no friend to the war was discarded, and the Pacha Mohammed Emin substituted, who diligently superintended the preparations for war. As soon as the Grand Vizier was ready to begin his march the standard of Mahomet was displayed with great pomp and solemnity. There were about 60,000 Turks posted in different places between Choczim, Bender, and Oczakow. The greater part of the

army was assembled in the neighbourhood of Adrianople—another part was stationed near Varna in Bulgaria. The Turks, apprehensive that the Russians would take advantage of the winter to open the campaign, destroyed or removed all the provisions that were to be found in the countries adjoining the Dniester: a circumstance which afterwards severely affected their own troops. The Russians had two armies on foot; one, under the command of Prince Galitzin, consisting of 71,000 foot, 36,000 horse, and 100 pieces of cannon; the other, under General Romanzow, had about 40,000 men. The Grand Vizier moved so slowly that it was the end of May before he reached Adrianople. In the mean time on the 30th of April Prince Galitzin crossed the Dniester, and fiercely attacked the Turks, 30,000 strong, commanded by Caraman Pacha, intrenched under the works of Choczim. Assisted by a brisk fire from the fortress, they for some time maintained their ground, and repelled their adversaries, but were at length beaten out of their trenches. The Turks endeavoured to cover their retreat by detaching a large body of cavalry to attack the right wing of the Russian army, but they had such a warm reception from the artillery, that they soon retired in great disorder. General Stoffeln and Prince Dolgorucki were then sent in pursuit of the fugitives at the head of eight battalions, and drove them into the suburbs of Choczim, where the very palisades of the fortress were set on fire by red-hot balls. On the same day a considerable detachment that was coming to reinforce the Turkish army was defeated by General Prosorowski: nevertheless, without any reverse of fortune to account for it, Prince Galitzin repassed the Dniester with precipitation, closely and eagerly pursued by the beaten enemy into Poland. It was supposed that the strength of the garrison of Choczim, consisting of 18,000 men, and the appearance of several great bodies of Turkish troops in the neighbourhood, alarmed Prince Galitzin for his supplies, and induced him to draw off from besieging the place for the present.

In the mean time General Romanzow made an attempt upon Oczakow, lying on the western shore of the river Dnieper, and the Black Sea. Here, under the very walls, a small Turkish army was attacked in its trenches by the Russians, notwithstanding the fire of the town, but the Turks repulsed them, and it was said, with great loss. Both these events were regarded at Constantinople as great triumphs, and the Sultan went publicly to the Mosque to return thanks to Heaven, on which occasion the Innaum bestowed on him the title of Ghezi, or Conqueror.

On the 9th of May a bloody engagement was fought between the Calmucks and those Tartars who inhabit the banks of the Kuban lying near the Sea of Azoff and the Caucasus. It lasted from two in the afternoon till sunset, when the Calmucks by the help of some Russian officers, with a detachment of dragoons and Cossacks, and two pieces of cannon, gained the victory—having made a great slaughter, and taken above 5000 turbans. They took no prisoners, as the Calmucks give no quarter. Prince Galitzin now again recrossed the Dniester and encamped on its banks, making preparations for

passing that river and attempting the fortress of Choczim. He detached General Rennecamp with a considerable body of troops to divert the attention of the enemy on the opposite side, crossed the river without difficulty, and appeared suddenly on the 13th of July at the back of a considerable Turkish force which was encamped under the command of a Seraskier in the neighbourhood of Choczim. The Russians began the attack of this force at about six in the morning, but it was one in the afternoon before the Turks were beaten out of their camp: they retired in three divisions, one of which entered the town, another encamped under its walls, and the third retired towards Kalus. During all this time the Grand Vizier acted with consummate discretion. Sensible of his weakness, both as regarded himself and his troops, he endeavoured to supply by his natural caution, prudence, and sagacity, the want of military knowledge and experience. He carefully abstained from bringing an overgrown and tumultuous crowd to a general action, but endeavoured by degrees to habituate them to discipline, and the regularity and order of a camp. This induced him to continue for so long a time encamped at Isakeln upon the banks of the Danube.

#### 4. THE SIEGE OF CHOZIM IS ATTEMPTED AND RAISED.

The Russians forthwith invested Choczim and threw bombs and red-hot shot into the town. The garrison made frequent sallies; and great bodies of horse from the Grand Vizier's camp, which was now considerably advanced on this side of the Danube, kept the besiegers in continual alarm. The garrison soon became distressed for provisions and forage, and General Stoffeln who conducted the siege endeavoured to cut off the water. General Romanzow also advanced from the side of the Ukraine with his army to support Galitzin and the besieging force. A grand detachment of Turkish horse was now sent by the Vizier to throw a large convoy of provisions into the town. These troops having approached the Russian camp about noon on the 2nd of August, the advance on both sides became engaged. At two o'clock the Turkish force extended its lines as if it intended to surround the Russian camp, and attack it on all points at once: at the same time the garrison made a furious sally. These attempts were made with such vigour and carried on in so many places at once, that the Turks at length penetrated to the redoubt on the left wing of the Russian camp; but the Russian artillery turned the fortune of the day, and made such havoc among the assailants, that about eight in the evening the Turks and Tartars, finding all their efforts fruitless, fled with great precipitation, and were pursued to a considerable distance by the Russians. The cannonade and bombardment of Choczim were now renewed, but an account being received that a grand Turkish force under the command of the Seraskier of Roumelia and Mehemet Pacha, were marching to its relief, General Prosorowski was sent at the head of a considerable part of the Russian force to oppose them. On this occasion the Russians were totally defeated; and animated by the advantage he had gained, the Grand Vizier, at the

head of 70,000 men, moved up to Choczim, and braved Prince Galitzin in his trenches. The Prince, afraid of another engagement, broke up his camp, and on the 16th of August again repassed the Dniester with his army, and raised the siege a second time. It was said that in these engagements and their consequences the Russians lost 20,000 men besides thirty pieces of cannon.

5. THE GRAND VIZIER SUPERSEDED—THE TURKISH ARMY DEFEATED—CHOCZIM TAKEN.

The good effects of the system adopted by the Grand Vizier for the prosecution of the war were now fully apparent. The Turkish army was still whole and entire, and was now entering into action in its full strength and vigour. The Russian forces, on the other hand, bore all the marks of a ruinous campaign, and were retiring from their enemy with loss and disgrace; but the janizaries, unused to control, and impatient of the hardships of a military life, cried loudly against the dilatory policy of the Grand Vizier; they demanded to be led against the enemy, and contrived to get their outcry against their commander heard at Constantinople. The Grand Vizier accordingly became a sacrifice, and Ali Moldovani, a man of fierce and violent courage, was appointed his successor in August. It may lessen any regret that might be felt for the disgrace of the Grand Vizier to know one of the last acts of his rule. Caraman Pacha, who had a command in one of the late actions, happened to have displeased him, and having gone to meet him on his march, the Vizier in a most violent passion ordered his head to be cut off. The unfortunate Pacha endeavoured to evade this order, but finding it necessary for his safety to defend himself, he drew his sword and fought bravely, until overborne by numbers he was cut to pieces. His swordbearer attempted to defend his master, and drew a pistol on the Grand Vizier; but one of the attendants of the latter immediately interposed his body, and was shot dead; nor did the unfortunate swordbearer escape; he also fell a sacrifice. Caraman Pacha had been considered a brave and distinguished officer.

The Turks were now clamorous for a general engagement, and we accordingly find in the beginning of September that Galitzin, having used great diligence in reinforcing his army by drawing strong detachments from Romanzow, was again posted on the banks of the Dniester. In this situation they were attacked on the 3rd of September by 8000 Turks, who passed the river at night, and at break of day fell upon a corps of the Russian army. Prince Repnin marched immediately to its relief, attacked the Turks at the head of four regiments with fixed bayonets, and drove them back into the river in the greatest disorder and confusion: nearly half their number were either killed or wounded in this ill judged attempt, which is a fatal example of sending detachments across a great river without the possibility of receiving support. It may be useful to mention that the great advantage which the Russians possessed over the Turks at this period, was in the vast superiority of their infantry; not only was the well-

sustained and well-directed fire of infantry intolerable to the Turks, but they continued to be still wedded to their old weapon, the sabre, and could never be brought to use the bayonet; which made them an easy sacrifice in these encounters. The Turks immediately resolved on attacking the whole body of the Russians, and without the slightest pretence of stratagem or deceit, laid their bridges over the Dniester; and on the 9th began to pass the river in the face of the enemy. Galitzin immediately attacked the heads of the columns as they passed, before they could either choose their ground or form, but notwithstanding those disadvantages, the engagement was very severe and continued from seven in the morning till noon. It was computed that about 60,000 Turks crossed the river before and during the time of this engagement, and that of this number 7000 were killed on the spot besides the wounded and prisoners, and that a great number more were drowned. Several pieces of cannon were taken by the Russians, and a considerable number of horse-tails and other trophies of victory. The Vizier, not discouraged by this failure, prepared to pass his whole army over on the 17th, having laid a new bridge, which he covered with large batteries of cannon. Eight thousand janizaries and 4000 horse, the flower of the Ottoman army, had already crossed, when a sudden and extraordinary swell of the waters of the Dniester carried away and totally destroyed the bridge. Twelve thousand men became thus isolated beyond the river from the main army, without a fortification to defend them, or food to support them: the Russians lost no time in making use of so extraordinary an advantage. The Turks disdained all capitulation, but with a desperation peculiar to themselves, and with all the boldness of assured success, they sold their lives as dearly as possible: not only the field of battle, but the river, over which some few hundreds endeavoured to escape by swimming, was for several miles covered with their dead. The Russians captured sixty-four pieces of cannon, and above 150 colours and horse-tails. It was computed that the Turks lost in these two engagements 28,000 of the best and bravest of their troops: and now, cast down by these repeated mis-carriages, the haughty Ottomans seemed to have lost all spirit and resolution. Forty thousand of them abandoned the army and returned home; and in the tumultuous retreat the garrison of Choczim was included. Two hundred Russian grenadiers having crossed the river in a boat, were surprised to find themselves masters of this important fortress. A few women and children were all the garrison left to defend 200 pieces of cannon, with great magazine. In the despair and disorder of their retreat the Turks had not even set the town on fire, or attempted to destroy any thing. Prince Galitzin placed four regiments in Choczim, under the command of Colonel Weissmann, and having sent detachments in pursuit of the enemy, resigned his command to General Count Romanzow, whose especial corps was now given to Count Panin.

#### G. THE RUSSIANS OBTAIN OTHER SUCCESSES.

The Russians now overran the province of Moldavia, and took

possession of Jassy, the capital, and as the Turks retired behind the Danube, all Wallachia was also in the power of the victors. Pro-sorowski took possession of Bucharest, its capital. The Greek inhabitants of both provinces declared for the Empress, and took the oath of fidelity to her. In Tartary and the Ukraine Count Panin failed in his attack on Bender; and the Calga, a brother of the Khan of Tartary, made a successful inroad into the Russian territories on the left of the Dnieper, carrying off some 10,000 unhappy people into captivity. Towards Georgia Count Todleben was engaged in hostilities on the side of Armenia in conjunction with Prince Heraclius, but with uncertain success.

#### 7. WAR IN POLAND.

As the Russians were obliged to withdraw their principal forces from the interior of Poland to oppose the designs of the Turks and Tartars upon their frontiers, their absence was eagerly embraced by the Poles to form a new confederacy, which was made in March under Sikanowciko, whom they appointed their Marshal: other confederacies were also formed. The year passed accordingly in a succession of sanguinary actions between the different confederacies and the detachments of Russians remaining in Poland, attended with cruelties and devastations which reduced that unhappy country to a most wretched condition. Towards the close of the campaign with the Turks, the Russians, having troops at liberty, were capable of acting with greater effect against the confederates, who in consequence met with many severe losses.

#### 8. WAR IN INDIA.

The war with Hyder Ali continued, but it now became the turn of the Madras government to make overtures, and Mr. Andrews, a member of the supreme council, was sent on the 18th of February to the Rajah to endeavour to conclude terms of peace; he failed, however, and hostilities recommenced. It was now that the Mysorean chief gave proofs of those extraordinary talents for war which have ranked him among the first generals, not of India alone, but of the age. He descended the Ghauts at points least expected, and ravaged the Carnatic in all directions, so that while his people were abundantly supplied, his antagonists, though in their own country, suffered the extremity of want. Colonel Smith was again in the field, and now free from the annoyance of field-deputies. He watched his enemy with great vigilance and admirable skill, but found it impracticable to bring Hyder to battle. The manœuvres of the two armies at length brought them within 140 miles of Madras, when Hyder, dismissing the greater part of his forces and his artillery and baggage, advanced rapidly on that presidency with 5000 horse and 1000 infantry, but unencumbered even with guns, and suddenly appeared before the place on the 29th of March. On the following morning he reached St. Thomas's Mount, five miles from the city. The Presidency in great alarm sent Mr. Dupré to enter into negotiation, who proposed a truce of fifty days, but could not

obtain from Hyder a period of more than seven. At the end of that time, on the 3rd of April, a peace was signed on the condition of mutual restoration of all places and prisoners. Thus terminated a war needlessly and imprudently commenced, and concluded with far better results than the government had a right to expect, either from their own measures or from the character of their enemy.

The preliminaries of peace were no sooner signed than Hyder returned to his army, whom he had cantoned in Bangalore, and the English applied themselves to remedy the evils of the war. Of Colonel John Smith we hear no more, but he had exercised a considerable influence in this campaign, and was an officer of whom military historians speak respectfully. He is described as a man cool in danger, prompt in action, and sagacious in meeting an emergency, but it is said that he laboured under a weakness destructive in a great degree of almost every other military talent. He was somewhat too ready to yield his own judgment to that of others, when his own better discretion stood opposed to it: hence he fell into many serious errors.

---

### 1770.

1. SPAIN SEIZES THE FALKLAND ISLANDS.—2. WAR BETWEEN RUSSIA AND TURKEY.—3. NAVAL WAR BETWEEN THESE POWERS.—4. ENGAGEMENT OFF SUCIO.—5. ROMANZOW DEFEATS A TURKISH ARMY UNDER THE KHAN OF THE CRIMEA.—6. BATTLE OF THE KAGUL.—7. SIEGE OF BENDER.—8. THE TURKS RETIRE BEHIND THE DANUBE.—9. WAR IN GEORGIA.—10. WAR IN EGYPT.—11. WAR IN POLAND.—12. THE DANES SEND AN EXPEDITION AGAINST ALGIERS.—13. THE FRENCH SEND AN EXPEDITION AGAINST TUNIS.

#### 1. SPAIN SEIZES THE FALKLAND ISLANDS.

While war was laying waste the countries from the north-east to the south of Europe, its calamities were very nearly extended on a sudden to Spain and Great Britain. A violent act of hostility on the part of the former power was committed, in endeavouring to dispossess Great Britain of its settlement in the Falkland Islands. Captain Hurst, in the "Tamar" frigate, had fallen in with a Spanish schooner at the end of the previous year, which he warned from the coast. The schooner nevertheless returned to it again, bringing letters from the Spanish Governor of Port Solidad asserting the prior right of the King of Spain to these possessions: the dispute thus begun continued till the beginning of June this year, when 1600 or 1700 Spanish soldiers and marines, with five frigates, and a train of artillery and ordnance stores, arrived at Port Egmont, where only two sloops of war, and a miserable blockhouse with four guns, constituted all the means of defence. Finding the Spaniards advancing to the attack, the two navy captains, Maltby and Farmer, having no adequate means of resistance, concluded articles of capitulation.



lation, by which they were permitted, after a limited time, to depart in the frigate "Favourite," taking with them their stores; but, to delay their departure, a new and unheard-of insult was offered to the British flag, in the forcible detention of a King's frigate for twenty days by taking off her rudder, and this in a time of profound peace between the two nations. The sloop was accordingly detained for thirty-four days, when she at length got sail, and arrived off Portsmouth on the 22nd of September. The information of these proceedings caused much excitement in England: preparations for war were instantly made; but the Spanish government had become alarmed, and disavowing the violence complained of, offered satisfaction for the same, and restored the island to Great Britain.

### 2. WAR BETWEEN RUSSIA AND TURKEY.

The war between the Turks and Russians raged this year with augmented fury. A new Vizier, Hahd Bey, succeeded to the incompetent Ali Moldovan (who was degraded and banished), but did not arrive at the camp near the Danube till shortly before the commencement of this year. As the provinces of Moldavia and Wallachia were objects of the greatest importance to the Porte, the Vizier determined to try and profit by the distance of General Romanzow's army, however contrary to the genius of his troops, by beginning the campaign immediately, so as to triumph for once over the inclemency of the season. The project was the more capable of success as the Turks were not only the masters of the Danube, but were still possessed of Ibrailow and some other fortresses in Wallachia. Such a design was worthy of a new commander, and if it had succeeded would have retrieved the fatal mischances of his predecessor, and the campaign might have been again carried to the banks of the Dniester. It did not, however, succeed to its full extent, although it removed the enemy totally from the borders of the Danube, and a continued and cruel war was carried on during the long ensuing winter and spring, which so straitened the Russians in their quarters, and so weakened them by fatigue and continued losses of men, that the Grand Vizier recovered the whole province of Wallachia and the lower part of Moldavia, and thereby opened the communication again by land with Bessarabia and the Tatars. The Turkish commander, having completed the reduction of the province, appointed Monalech Hospodar in the room of Ghika, who was suspected of betraying his country to the Russians. After this beginning great preparations were made on both sides for the opening of the campaign; but it was the month of June before the Vizier crossed the Danube, and Romanzow the Dniester, when about 300,000 combatants became enclosed in the provinces of Moldavia, Wallachia, and Bessarabia, awaiting the crash of war.

### 3. NAVAL WAR BETWEEN THESE POWERS.

The Russian fleet departed from Minorca in the beginning of February, and sailed for the Morea, under the command of Alexis Orloff and Spiridoff. Its movements filled the Porte with alarm. A

negotiation had been carried on between the Russians and Greeks during the former year, and arms and ammunition had been sent to them without the knowledge of the Turks. Storms, however, separated the Russian fleet, and many ships composing it were obliged to take refuge in Sicily and Sardinia to refit, so that it was the last day of February before Count Orloff arrived, with only three ships of the line and two others, at Cape Matapan, the southern extremity of the Morea. The Count, having debarked such land forces as he had with him at Marna, issued a manifesto, declaring in the name of the Empress that she looked upon it as a religious duty to free the Greeks from Turkish slavery. Thus encouraged, the Greeks flew to arms, and gave way to excesses of sanguinary revenge, massacring every Turk who came in their way, without distinction of age or sex. Several towns of the Greek peninsula were reduced by the Russians. The fleet proceeded to invest Koroni and Navarino, but the land forces were insufficient, and even when joined with the insurgents were inadequate to the reduction of the places to which they had siege. The Pacha of the Morea hastily collected such troops as could be got together, but could not keep the field against the invaders and insurgents united, and retired into Napoli di Romania, a great and strong city on the eastern side of the peninsula. The Turks made every where a brave defence, and at Tripolitza the besiegers were totally routed by the continued and successful sorties made by the garrison. The siege of the castle of Patras by the Russians was in progress, when a body of Turks and Albanians, having passed the isthmus, hastened to its relief, and came suddenly on the besiegers at break of day on the 13th of April. The Governor at the same time made a sally from his garrison, and a dreadful carnage ensued in the conflict; the city was set on fire, the besiegers driven off; and the Greeks were now slaughtered in their turn. The Turkish and Albanian force had scarcely completed this service, when they received intelligence that a large body of Mainotes were advancing towards the isthmus of Corinth with an intention of penetrating into Achaia; accordingly they marched away to prevent this, and totally routed the Mainotes, killing 2000 of their number. The Seraskier arrived in the Morea soon after this transaction at the head of 30,000 men, mostly Albanians and Epirotes. The principal force of the Russians and Greeks was now employed in the siege of Modon, which has a fine haven defended by a strong castle, that would have been an object of great importance to them. The Seraskier attacked the besiegers with great fury in their camp at one o'clock in the morning of the 17th of May, and was well supported by the Governor, who made a vigorous sally at the same time. The Mainotes, descendants of the ancient Spartans, showed little of the spirit of their ancestors, and fairly ran away, leaving the Russians to withstand the enemy single-handed: thus they did nobly. Count Orloff and Prince Dolgorucki were both wounded; and at length, overpowered by numbers, they were obliged to abandon their camp, together with twenty pieces of cannon, and retire to the protection of their ships. The

Albanians, however, as soon as the enemy had retired, dispersed and fell to plunder, which brought back both Russians and Mainotes, who again renewed the siege, and the ships drew nearer to the fort to aid the attack; but the general assault they now made was repulsed by the resolution of the garrison, and by the desertion of the Mainotes a second time, when the Russians retired to Navarino, and shortly after entirely abandoned the peninsula. Meantime the Russian fleet in the Archipelago received the reinforcement of a squadron, under the command of Admiral Elphinstone (an English officer in their service), who arrived about the middle of April; and in the month of May the Turkish fleet also arrived in those seas. Some engagements of no great moment occurred between both squadrons, until on the 5th of July they encountered each other in the channel of Liburno, near Scio.

#### 4. ENGAGEMENT OFF SCIO.

The Russian commanders, Spiridoff and Elphinstone, had only ten sail of the line and five frigates, while the Capudan Pacha had fifteen ships of from 60 to 90 guns, besides smaller vessels, and was advantageously stationed. The Russian Admiral, Spiridoff, encountered the Capudan Pacha in the "Sultan," 90, yard-arm to yard-arm; and when thus grappled together the Turkish ship caught fire, and as they could not get clear of each other both ships were in a little time equally in flames, and blew up with a most terrible explosion; but wonderful to relate, both commanders escaped. This dreadful disaster caused a pause in the engagement; but the action was again renewed, and continued till night, without any material result. The Turkish Admiral then retired under cover of darkness into the narrow bay of Telesine or Chismeh on the coast of Natolia, where he flattered himself he was in security. He erected batteries to cover the entrance of the little harbour, which was so confined that some of his ships ran aground and stuck fast in the mud, while all were so huddled together that they could do nothing. Elphinstone proposed to send in some fire-ships; but this was a service with which the Russians were unacquainted, and they would not venture upon it until an English lieutenant (Dugdale) undertook the task. At twelve at night on the 6th Commodore Greig, another officer of the same nation, undertook to cover the operation with four ships of the line and two frigates, and with these he engaged the batteries at the mouth of the harbour at 100 yards, while Dugdale ran into the harbour with the fire-ships. A fortunate shot set fire to one of the ships of the Turkish fleet, which created immense confusion in a place where they had so little room to act. The Russian sailors on board the lieutenant's ship could only be kept to their duty by dint of sword and pistol, and at length, when he was reconnoitring, they fairly jumped overboard and abandoned him. But Dugdale bravely lashed the helm, and seeing a boatful of Turks ready to board him, he contrived to hook the cable of one of the Turkish ships, and then fired the fusee with his pistol. He was nearly blown up, but jumped into the sea, and was with great difficulty saved. The fire was

communicated so effectually that in five hours the whole fleet, except one man-of-war and a few galleys that were towed away by the Russians, were totally destroyed. After this the harbour was entered, and the town and castle bombarded; then by a lucky explosion of a powder-magazine the destruction was made complete, and the town, castle, and fleet, all of which had existence at one in the morning, were at nine on the same day a heap of cinders. The unfortunate Capudan Pacha, who was wounded in the engagement, escaped, to be beheaded by order of the Sultan; and Zaffa Bey was appointed Capudan Pacha in his place. It was said that the Turks lost 6000 men on this occasion. This success enabled the Russians to hold the sea; and being now joined by many Greeks, they laid siege to the castle of Lemnos, the possession of which, from its vicinity to the Dardanelles and its possessing a good harbour, was of great importance to them. Count Orloff rewarded the brave Lieutenant Dugdale, who had commanded the fire-ships, with the command of the Turkish man-of-war that had been saved, which carried 62 guns; all, however, that is known or recorded of this intrepid officer is that he had been in the naval service of his country, but had quitted it upon some disgust, and taken service in the Russian fleet.

The siege of the castle of Lemnos went on but slowly under the direction of the Greeks; but at length Hassan Bey crossed over by night from the shores of Ronnech with 3000 men, and conducted matters so well, that the besiegers never heard of his being on the island till he attacked them suddenly in their camp before daybreak. The consequence was that the Russians were routed, and obliged to take shelter in their ships, and the Greeks were cut to pieces or hanged without mercy. The Russian fleet made subsequent attempts to force their way through the Dardanelles, but notwithstanding their unparalleled good fortune in having so wholly destroyed the Turkish fleet, they could not succeed in these attempts. The Sultan nevertheless trembled in his capital, the defence of which, and the improvement of the fortifications and defences, he had committed to the Baron de Tott, the well-known French adventurer and memoir writer.

##### 5. ROMANZOW DEFEATS A TURKISH ARMY UNDER THE KHAN OF THE CRIMIA.

We left the contending armies of the Turks and Russians preparing for offensive operations in the Principalities. Romanzow, after crossing the Dniester, directed his course to Jassy, the capital of Moldavia, situated on the Pruth, while Count Pavin was marching along the Dniester with a train of heavy artillery, and all things requisite to form the siege of Bender. On the 25th of June the two armies came in sight of each other, the Turks holding an advantageous intrenched camp on an almost inaccessible eminence between the Pruth and the Larga. This army was commanded by Cassian Ghirai, Khan of the Crimea, having three Pachas under his command, and an army of 80,000 men. The camp was well

selected, and Romanzow failed in repeated attempts to draw them down from it; but at length the Turks could no longer brook the sight and continued insults of their enemy, and descended from their strong camp to attack the Russians, when they were repulsed and beaten back with considerable loss. Three days after this, on the 18th of July, the Russians, at dawn of morning, mounted the hills and stormed the intrenchments with great resolution. They were met with as obstinate a defence, but finally triumphed over all opposition. The Turks abandoned their camp and fled in extreme confusion, leaving behind them thirty-eight pieces of cannon, and a great booty to the Muscovites. The Khan retreated towards the Danube, and met the grand army of the Ottoman empire, under the new Vizier, Hali, who had crossed the river at Isakchi, and was advancing to his support.

#### 6. THE BATTLE OF THE KAGUL.

Romanzow in the mean time pursued his march along the Pruth towards its confluence with the Danube, and the Turks encamped between the rivers Pruth and Cahul or Kagul, where they formed three intrenchments. On the 1st of August, at eight in the evening, both armies came in sight of each other, and the Russians took up their camp at four miles' distance. General Romanzow had sent off a strong detachment for the escort of a convoy of provisions, and the Tartar army, which formed a separate corps towards the left of the Russian army, followed in search of this corps, and engaged it. In the contest both these corps became totally separated from the main armies. The Turks did not wait to be attacked in their intrenchments, but at once assailed the enemy in front and flank with the greatest bravery. A desperate conflict ensued, in which the close order and excellent discipline of the Russians prevailed, and they gained ground continually. As they neared the fortifications, bursting with a prodigious artillery, the battle grew every instant more terrible. The Grand Vizier now put himself at the head of the janizaries and some of his bravest troops, to stop the enemy, who advanced in defiance of every obstacle for five hours without intermission they fought, when the Russians carried the first intrenchment at the point of the bayonet. A pause then ensued preparatory to the attack of the next intrenchment, in which the Turks used every effort to retrieve the fortune of the day, one body coming up with fresh ardour as another was defeated. At length, when their best troops were successively beaten, they lost all hope and courage, and the second and third intrenchments were carried one after another. The Grand Vizier and his principal officers now made the best of their way to the Danube, which was about twenty miles distant from the field of battle, and the fugitives were pursued to the river, where the crowds rendered the passage so difficult that many turned aside, and crossing the Pruth, directed their course to Ibrailow. The whole of the Turkish camp, tents, equipage, a vast quantity of ammunition, 143 pieces of brass cannon, and above 7000 carts laden with provisions, became the prey of the

conquerors. The two armies are said to have been of very unequal force: 150,000 is given as the number of the Turks, and their losses have been made to amount to 40,000.

#### 7. THE SIEGE OF BENDER.

In the mean while the siege of Bender had been undertaken by Count Panin, who, having first scoured the country between the Dniester and the Dnieper with the troops under General Prozorowski, and having thus put the besieging troops in better security, divided his army into two parts to invest the place more effectually, and opened his trenches on the 30th of July on both sides of the river. The garrison was very strong, and was headed by several Pachas, under the Governor the Seraskier. This man was so overcome by grief at the news of the two disasters that had happened to the Turkish armies, that he destroyed himself, but the garrison was not discouraged, and appointed Demin-Pacha to be their Governor in his stead. The siege continued for two months, and the Russians pushed on their mines with indefatigable industry. On this occasion globes of compression, a new description of mine, which had been employed in the Seven Years' War, were used with success. The assault was made at night on the 27th of September, when, although every inch of the ground was disputed by the Turkish garrison with the utmost bravery, the Russians at length succeeded, after ten hours' fighting, in getting possession of the place at eight o'clock the next morning. The castle still held out, but at length surrendered, when all terms were refused to the garrison, who gave themselves up unconditionally. The number of souls at the beginning of the siege was thought to have been 30,000; the number of all ages who surrendered themselves prisoners was 11,749. As this place was the grand magazine of the Turks for their northern provinces, the Russians found a prodigious quantity of arms, gunpowder, and military stores, besides above 285 pieces of brass artillery. They also captured four horse-tails and forty pairs of colours.

#### 8. THE TURKS RETIRE BEHIND THE DANUBE.

General Romanzow, after the great victory of the 2nd of August, fixed his head quarters at the confluence of the Pruth and the Danube, and laid siege to Kilia-Nova, which surrendered in the beginning of September. Bialogrod surrendered to Baron Ingelstrom in the beginning of October, but Hradlow held out till the latter end of November, when the garrison abandoned it by night, and escaped across the Danube. The Grand Vizier continued at Isakchi till the middle of November, when he retired further back into Bulgaria for the winter. Romanzow, after the further capture of Ackerman and Ismail, established himself in Jassy; and Count Panin returned into the Ukraine, after having put Bender into a proper condition of defence.

## 9. WAR IN GEORGIA.

The war was carried on in Georgia by Count Todleben with little results. He laid siege to Erzeroum, but afterwards withdrew out of Armenia, of which country it is the capital.

## 10. WAR IN EGYPT.

To this state of extreme loss and misfortune to the Turks, when defeat, massacre, pestilence, and every measure of calamity seemed to be poured on their devoted heads, there was now added a revolution in Egypt, where an adventurous chief, Ali Bey, threw off the Turkish yoke. He appears to have been a man of strong natural abilities and of great ambition, which, rendering him discontented with Egypt alone, induced him to covet the possession of the neighbouring provinces of Arabia and Syria. Ali levied two armies; one was directed by his brother to attack Arabia-Felix, while he conquered Yemen, deposed the chief of Mecca, and substituted another Emir, whom he gratified with the title of Sultan; his other army was commanded by Ismael, who made himself master of all the towns on the eastern shore of the Arabian Gulf. Ali himself remained at home to attend to the internal justice of his kingdom. His great design was to make Egypt once again the centre of commerce, for which purpose he sought to obtain in addition the possession of Suez and the shores of the Red Sea.

## 11. WAR IN POLAND.

The distracted kingdom of Poland continued a prey to the evils of anarchy and civil war, to which in this year was added the dreadful scourge of pestilence, which arose from its proximity to the Turkish territories. The national confederacies were still numerous over the country, and notwithstanding their continual losses, they appeared to multiply and acquire new strength after defeat and destruction. They still held possession of several provinces. Nevertheless the most ominous circumstances now shadowed forth the coming partition. The existence of the plague had afforded an excuse to the Emperor and the King of Prussia for forming armies on the frontiers. A meeting took place between the two monarchs, at a great review at Neustadt in Moravia, on the 31d of September, and a visit of ceremony was paid by Prince Henry of Prussia to the court of St. Petersburg, all which showed a good understanding between the three courts; the Prussian King could not refrain from evidencing his rapacious spirit, by availing himself of a pretext for sending a body of troops into the territory of Dantzic, who surprised the outposts, seized cannon, and encamped four miles from the city; but by the intercession of some of the foreign courts, the King professed himself satisfied with a submission and a sum of 75,000 ducats, and withdrew his forces from that fortress.

## 12. THE DANES SEND AN EXPEDITION AGAINST ALGIERS.

The Danes undertook this year a naval expedition against Algiers;

this service was entrusted to Admiral Kaas with four ships of the line, two frigates, two bomb-vessels, and a fire-ship, who anchored in the road of Algiers on the 3rd of August under the white flag of negotiation. The Dey, however, was ill pleased with the letter sent in, and, ordering the Algerine colours to be hoisted, caused several shot to be fired at the Danes, who were out of reach, and did not return the fire, but kept the white flag still flying. After five whole days spent in this way the Algerines fitted out six galleys and gulliot, which made a bold attempt in the night to bring off the Danish bomb-vessels, but failed of success. On the sixth morning the Admiral raised the red flag, and began a cannonade, which was immediately replied to with great briskness from the town, but not a single shot told on either side. In the evening the Admiral again raised the white flag, and the Algerines made another attempt in the night to cut out some of the ships, which was repulsed by the superior fire of the fleet. At length on the fifteenth day the Danish fleet sailed away without having effected any thing.

### 13. THE FRENCH SEND AN EXPEDITION AGAINST TUNIS.

A small squadron which was sent from France to bring the Tunisians to reason succeeded much better than the Danes did against Algiers. This people had made a treaty with the Corsicans as an independent people, and now made prize of all Corsican vessels under French colours, and expelled the African Company from a coral fishery on their coasts. Accordingly a French squadron, consisting of two ships of the line and some frigates and smaller vessels, under M. Broves, was sent against Tunis, the Dey of which demanded that time should be allowed for his answer; nevertheless the Admiral took the squadron and bombarded Bisenta, and threatened other places. The Dey was soon brought to terms, and the French obtained reparation for the injuries committed.

## 1771.

1. THE RUSSIANS INVADE THE CRIMEA.—2. THE TURKS TAKE GURGEVO, BUT ARE DEFEATED IN THE DOBRUDSCHA.—3. THE RUSSIAN FLEET IN THE MEDITERRANEAN.—4. WAR IN POLAND.—ATTEMPT TO CARRY OFF THE KING.—5. WAR IN EGYPT.—6. RETIREMENT AND MILITARY CHARACTER OF ADMIRAL LORD HAWKE.

### 1. THE RUSSIANS INVADE THE CRIMEA.

The great victories gained by the Russians during the last campaign were not altogether bloodless. The conquerors as well as the conquered were both nearly exhausted, and accordingly the war upon the Danube languished in the early part of the year: various actions, however, occurred between the troops posted on each side of the river, in most of which the Russians were, as usual, the



victors. General Weissinann, in particular, made an incursion into Bulgaria, where he met with great success in surprising several Turkish posts, routing their parties, and destroying the magazines.

The principal object of the Russians this year was undoubtedly the conquest of the Crimea, to which the operations on the Danube were secondary. The troops destined for this enterprise were commanded by Prince Dolgorucki, whose army is said to have consisted of 40,000 men. This Prince, having arrived in view of the lines of Perekop, found that they were defended by the Khan Selim Ghirai, at the head of an army of 50,000 Tartars and 7000 Turks, intrenched within these famous lines, which are the main defence of the whole peninsula of the Crimea. It may be remembered in the war of 1736 that the depth of the ditch was found to be forty-two feet, its width seventy-two feet, and the height from the bottom of the ditch to the crest of the parapet was seventy feet. notwithstanding these formidable obstacles the Russian General two days after his arrival, on the 25th of June, carried the works by assault. The Tartar Prince behaved with great courage, but in five hours the lines were forced in every part, and the Tartars totally routed. The Turkish garrison in the town surrendered the following day. The whole peninsula was in a short time overrun by the conquerors. Fort Arabat, commanding the spit of land between the Sea of Azoff and the Putrid Sea, made some resistance, but was carried by storm; Caffa, the capital, held out long enough to enable the Turks to get on board their ships in the harbour and escape. The castle of Kertch, commanding the straits leading into the Sea of Azoff, fell into the hands of the Russians without trouble. The Tartars every where submitted; and the unfortunate Khan escaped to Constantinople, where it is said he died of grief. In less than a month the fortress of Balacava was the sole possession that remained unsubdued in the peninsula.

## 2. THE TURKS TAKE GIURGEVO, BUT ARE DEFEATED IN THE DOBRI DSCHA.

On the side of the Danube Mousson Oglou crossed the river with 18,000 men in three bodies to relieve Fort Tuore, opposite to Nicopolis, besieged by the Russian force under General Potemkin. In this design he failed; but one of the three detachments, under the Pacha in person, suddenly invested Giurgevo, and assaulted it with such vigour, that after three days the Governor capitulated on the 14th of June, and was allowed to march out with the honours of war, though with the loss of sixty-four pieces of cannon. The surrender of so strong a place in so short a time excited the indignation of Prince Repnin, who ordered the Governor and all his officers to be placed under arrest. In consequence of some disagreement which afterwards occurred between the General and Romanzow the command was taken from Prince Repnin and given to General Essen. The Turks, after the capture of Giurgevo, intrenched their army under the Grand Vizier near that place, and Essen made some movements, and gained some slight successes in endeavouring to draw the

enemy away from their defences. Failing in this, he determined on the 17th of August to assault them, in which attempt he was defeated after four hours' fighting, with the loss of some general officers and between 3000 and 4000 killed and wounded. The Russians also lost some cannon, and retreated, pursued by the Turks, to Bucharest. The Turks were much inspired by these successes, and determined to try another bold stroke, to bring some honour to their arms at the close of the campaign. Accordingly their army was silently but considerably increased, and they crept up quietly along the right side of the Danube into the Dobrugea; there they strongly intrenched themselves in two camps at Tulcha and Matchin. These two camps had been, however, observed by the enemy, who, anticipating their dispositions and intentions, suddenly on the 20th of October attacked them both on the same day; General Weissmann operating against the first, and General Miloradovitz against the second. The event of both attacks was the same; the intrenchments were forced, their artillery stores and magazines captured, and the castles taken. Weissmann marched the following night to attack the Grand Vizier at the Babadagh, a few miles distant, where he commanded the flower of his army, with a prodigious artillery, within a fortified camp. On the 25th the Russians fell upon these intrenchments, defended by the strong castle of Babadagh on an abrupt hill above the town, and the Turks were routed: the Vizier and his ruined army fled a distance of thirty miles, not thinking themselves safe till they reached the Balkan mountain. A few days after this General Essen took a severe revenge for the disgrace that had been incurred at Gurgevo. On the 30th he encountered and totally overthrew the Seraskier, Mousson Oglou, in the neighbourhood of Bucharest; forcing him to abandon Wallachia with a loss of 2000 men killed, and twice as many taken prisoners, with all his artillery and baggage. The Russian detachment was thus enabled again to take possession of Gurgevo without opposition; and with these triumphs the Russians retired across the Danube to pass the winter. Frederick of Prussia held exceedingly cheap these contests between the Russians and the Turks, whom he thought both alike ignorant of the art of war. and he said of this campaign, "To have a just idea of this contest you must figure to yourself a party of one-eyed people thoroughly beating a party of blind men."

### 3. THE RUSSIAN FLEET IN THE MEDITERRANEAN.

The Russian fleet in the Mediterranean was unable to perform any thing of importance; their ships were originally bad, and were of course getting into worse condition; but it had no antagonist to contend with, and therefore contented itself with spreading terror and desolation through the islands of the Archipelago and along the coasts of the Turkish empire. The Greeks, deterred by the bad success of their revolt, remained quiet, or only employed themselves in piratical enterprises.

## 4. WAR IN POLAND—ATTEMPT TO CARRY OFF THE KING.

The confederacies of Poland broke out again in the course of this year with renewed vigour, privately supported, as it was thought, both by France and Austria. A number of French officers entered their service as volunteers, and better discipline being thus introduced among them, the war was carried on with balanced success; while the Empress Queen kept the contest alive by indirect interference, and by sending arms and money to the confederates, at the same time that she sent troops in the month of June to take possession of some districts and side with the Russians and Prussians, who advanced from different directions to occupy this devoted kingdom. One of the most remarkable circumstances attending this scattered warfare was an attempt made to carry off the King, whom the malcontents never regarded as the choice of the nation. On the 3rd of November, as Stanislaus was returning to his palace at Warsaw about nine in the evening, six men on horseback, one of whom was named Kosinski, attacked him by firing carbines and pistols into the carriage, dragged the King forcibly out of it, notwithstanding the bravery and desperation of his attendants, and carried him on horseback out of the city, badly wounded in the confusion by a sabre-cut on the head and by one of the pistol balls. When they had reached Wilanow, a town six or seven miles off, the accomplices became alarmed, and separated, leaving Kosinski alone with the King, who by his discourse made such an impression on Kosinski's feelings, that he threw himself at the King's feet and implored his pardon. The repentant abductor then enabled the King to send a note to the commander of his guards at Warsaw, who speedily arrived with an escort, and thus terminated an enterprise as romantic as it was atrocious.

## 5. WAR IN EGYPT.

In Egypt Ali Bey, ably supported by the Sheik Daher and some other Nubian princes, continued successfully his insurrection against the Porte, and succeeded in all his enterprises against the neighbouring pachas, so that he got possession of all Palestine, a considerable part of Syria, and some provinces of Arabia.

## 6. RETIREMENT AND MILITARY CHARACTER OF ADMIRAL LORD HAWKE.

This highly distinguished commander was the only son of a barrister of no great practice, and was born in 1705. Being intended from his earliest youth for the sea, he received an education suited to the naval profession, and having passed through the subordinate stations of the service, was appointed to the command of the "Wolf" sloop of war, in 1733. The encounter off Toulon in February, 1741, when Hawke was Captain of the "Berwick," 70, afforded this gallant officer the first opportunity of signalizing himself, by capturing the "Poder," Spanish ship of war, of 60 guns, which had in the early part of the engagement driven the "Princess" and the

"Somerset" out of the line till Hawke gallantly bore down and got within pistol-shot of her, when he discharged his whole broadside, which cleared the decks, and she was taken. In 1747 he became Rear-Admiral, and was appointed to the command of the squadron which intercepted the French fleet off Cape Finisterre on the 14th of October, when six of the enemy's line of battle ships struck to those under his command: for this success he was honoured with the ribbon of the Bath. On the renewal of the war in 1755 Sir Edward Hawke was sent to the Mediterranean to repair the errors of Byng, but arrived there too late to save Minorca. He restored, however, the superiority of the British flag in that sea by blocking up the enemy's fleet in Toulon. Hawke assisted in 1757 in the conjunct expedition against Rochefort; and in 1759 he sailed from Portsmouth with a squadron, in order to attack and endeavour to destroy the force which the French had prepared to send to the assistance of their colonies in North America. He found the enemy in Brest harbour, from which, however, they escaped, but he pursued and attacked them off Belleisle, where he totally destroyed and discomfited the expedition: for this service he received a pension of 2000*l.* a year from the King. The same year he was sent to blockade the port of Brest, but being driven from his station by a violent gale of wind he took shelter in Torbay, and the French Admiral seized the opportunity of putting to sea: Hawke, however, sailed immediately in pursuit of him. Concluding that the enemy's first rendezvous would be Quiberon Bay, he directed his course thither under a press of sail and a strong wind, and on the 20th of November he came in sight of their fleet, who on seeing him made off. Hawke immediately ordered the nearest ships to chase and stop them, till the rest of his squadron could come up. M. de Conflans led his foe amidst the islands and shoals of a shore very little known, and many vessels, both British and French, got into trouble during the night. By daybreak on the 21st the Admiral ran in upon the scattered French fleet, many of which were thrown on rocks and bars, and many were burned. His ship, the "Royal George," advanced, and Sir Edward ordered the master to carry him alongside the French Admiral. The master very respectfully replied if they ran in much nearer they would certainly be on shore. "That may be," was the Admiral's reply; "but the enemy will be on shore first, and at all events their fleet must be destroyed." In this way it was indeed accomplished, and the intention of the French to invade the British shores, was utterly frustrated by this well-timed and gallant achievement.

Hawke returned to England amidst the acclamations of the people. The King rewarded him with an additional pension of 2000*l.* a year. In 1765 he was appointed Vice-Admiral of England, and First Lord of the Admiralty, in which station he continued until this year, when he voluntarily resigned his office, and was advanced a few years later to the dignity of a British peer.

To a most consummate courage and active spirit he joined a cool and deliberate temper, not to be ruffled by accident, nor shaken by any unforeseen or sudden misfortune. He was a strict enforcer

of discipline, but the constant friend and patron of merit, so that it was said of him, "Bad men feared him, good men loved him, and the natural enemies of his native country stood in awe of him."

---

1772.

1. PARTITION OF POLAND.—2. SUSPENSION OF HOSTILITIES BETWEEN RUSSIA AND THE PORTE.—3. THE PORTE RECOVERS EGYPT.—4<sup>th</sup> REVOLUTIONS IN SWEDEN AND DENMARK.—5. INSURRECTIONS IN VARIOUS STATES OF SOUTH AMERICA.

### 1. PARTITION OF POLAND.

This year is for ever memorable in history as that of the first partition of Poland. This iniquitous scheme originated in the mind of Frederick of Prussia. Having, contrary to all right and justice, added Silesia to his hereditary dominions, he had long been desirous of extending his territories on the side of Poland. It was said that in the interview which took place between the Emperor and the King, at Neisse, in 1769, a confident hope was entertained that if the Czarina could be brought to reason, a threefold partition of Poland might be attempted. Prince Henry had been sent to St. Petersburg, and had disclosed the scheme to Catherine, but she would not at first consent to the outlines of Frederick's plan, and her exactions delayed the progress of a settlement. The Empress Queen also long held back from the guilty project, but her son and her minister prevailed over her private scruples, and it was with a heavy heart (in words that have been preserved) she at length on the 5th of August, 1772, agreed to the first fatal treaty of partition which had been signed by Russia and Prussia on the 17th of the previous February.

In the mean while, on the 2nd of this month, the Polish confederates under M. de Choisy had the seeming good fortune to surprise the citadel of Cracow, already rendered celebrated by the siege they had sustained there in the beginning of these troubles. They continued to make skirmishes with great vigour against the Russian and Polish crown troops, in which the ground was watered by their best blood to no avail. In the beginning of May, when probably the partition treaty had got wind, Marshal Zarembo, the principal general of the confederates, seeing their affairs hopeless, sent an officer of distinction to the King at Warsaw to treat about submission, but finding the monarch already powerless, he opened negotiations with the Russian Commander-in-Chief, from whom he obtained very moderate conditions. Zarembo, it must be said, was at the time strongly suspected by his countrymen of treachery. But the castles of Cracow and Tynica still held out; the Austrians had joined the Russians in the beginning of July, to carry on the siege of the latter; and the garrison being reduced to extremity, entered into a private treaty with the former, whom they permitted to enter

and take possession of the fortress without the knowledge or consent of the Russians, who literally were permitted to carry on the siege for some time, although the Austrians were become the defenders of the place. On the 18th of September a manifesto from the three powers was made known at Warsaw, and declared to the world. The unfortunate King, Stanislaus, solemnly protested against the injustice of dismembering his country, and made applications to the courts of Great Britain, France, and Spain, as well as to the States-General, for protection against violence and spoliation, but it does not appear that any attention was paid to them.

## 2. SUSPENSION OF HOSTILITIES BETWEEN RUSSIA AND THE PORTE.

During these transactions the Russians continued the war with the Turks. Both parties nevertheless professed a desire for peace, for which, it may be presumed, the latter were most sincerely desirous. Muhsinzade, brother-in-law to the Grand Seignior, who had distinguished himself so much in the late campaign, was now appointed Grand Vizier, and saw the policy of peace. Negotiations were accordingly carried off under the apparent mediation of Vienna and Berlin. The terms required by the Czarina were however so high that the Porte absolutely refused to accede to the proposed conditions. Romanzow and the Grand Vizier nevertheless kept the negotiations alive on the banks of the Danube, and a suspension of hostilities was agreed to between the opposing commanders on the 30th of May. A congress for settling articles of peace was then arranged, and was actually opened at Fokshani, at-out sixteen miles north of Bucharest; but it broke up without effect in September. Before the resumption of hostilities, however, the Grand Vizier proposed to Romanzow, that the suspension of arms should be extended till the following March, and this was assented to on the 29th of October.

In the interval the Russians concluded a treaty with the Tartars of the Crimea, by which these people renounced the Ottoman sovereignty, and were declared independent under the protection of Russia.

## 3. THE PORTE RECOVERS EGYPT.

On the other hand the Porte recovered its dominion over Egypt. It happened that among a number of Georgian women who had been purchased for his seraglio, Ali Bey discovered a sister of his own, whom he bestowed upon Mahommed Abuzeheb, one who from having been his slave had become his favourite, and was now made by him a Bey, and his chief general. Elated with his promotion, this man conceived the hope of supplanting his benefactor, Ali; and having added greatly to his forces by the treachery of another Bey, he formed a strong faction to overthrow him. In April Ali sent forces against Abuzeheb; and Ayoub, who commanded for him at that time in Upper Egypt, finding himself unable to subdue the revolted Bey by force, tried to circumvent him by treachery; but he fell himself into the trap he had laid for his opponent, and was without cere-

mony stabbed in his tent. Abuzeheb now finding himself master of Upper Egypt, no longer hesitated, but marched direct upon Cairo. Ali Bey fled with his treasures and took refuge with his friend and ally, Sheik Daher, in Syria. This Arabian prince was a singular example of an old patriarch; he was already ninety-three years old, with all the courage, activity, and vigour of five-and-twenty. It is said that every year he married a fine young girl of thirteen or fourteen, but it may be doubted whether this were the result of constitution or avarice, since it was customary for the Franciscans, in order to obtain his favour and protection in the Holy Land, to present him a thousand crowns on every marriage. Nevertheless Ali Bey found at Sheik Shuk's hands hospitality and assistance, and was enabled to harass his enemy, the Turks; but a firman was despatched immediately on the tidings of these events reaching Constantinople, constituting Abuzeheb the Governor of Egypt. In the war which followed, and in which Ali solicited and obtained aid from the Russian fleet, that appeared off Acre, he took Gaza, formed the siege of Jaffa in August, and at length prepared with his friendly Sheik to recover Egypt. Although he routed the troops of Abuzeheb near Salabieh, he was, however, himself defeated on the 13th of April, 1778, when having fought with the utmost bravery he was beaten down by the stroke of a sabre, and carried to the tent of the conqueror, where he died from his wounds.

#### 4. REVOLUTIONS IN SWEDEN AND DENMARK.

This year was also fertile in events less imposing in their results than those that have been related. Revolutions not unattended with blood occurred both in Sweden and Denmark. The former was brought about by a captain in the garrison of Christianstadt, who seized the magazines and fortifications, and issued a manifesto: he was shortly joined by the King's brother, who took the command, but his communications with the King were intercepted by the minister, Count Kaling, who thus obtained knowledge of the scheme for overthrowing the existing government. The King, who was twenty-five years old, had been crowned only in May, but impatient of constitutional control he had determined to emancipate himself from the aristocratic tyranny under which it bound him. On the 21st of August he planted cannon and troops all round the Senate-house, which he entered with the silver hammer of Gustavus-Adolphus in his hand, and having first ordered a new form of government to be used, dissolving the old constitution, he then rose from his seat, and taking a Psalter out of his pocket proceeded to sing a Te Deum to the astonished senators. The King is thought to have shown in this proceeding great talents, firm resolution, and profound dissimulation.

The revolution in Denmark was more of a family character, in which the King's wife, Queen Matilda, sister of the British King, the King's minister, Struensee, and the King's physician, Count Brandt, suffered.

## 5. INSURRECTIONS IN VARIOUS STATES OF SOUTH AMERICA.

But the extraordinary incidents of the year were not wholly confined to Europe. The Caribs, or original natives of the West India Islands, had been for some years at variance with the English settlers in the island of St. Vincent. As it appeared impossible for the European inhabitants to hold their settlements in safety under such a divided occupation, orders were sent out in April from England for two regiments to be sent from North America to join an equal number already in the island, for the purpose of reducing the Caribs to submission. This proved to be a service of more difficulty than was anticipated: in the middle of November the troops had not been able to penetrate more than five miles into the country, after undergoing considerable losses.

A most alarming insurrection of negroes also broke out in the Dutch colony of Surinam. Ships and troops were obliged to be sent from Holland; for the insurgents were well supplied with arms and ammunition, and expert in the use of them. An insurrection in Brazil was of still greater consequence. The negroes and Indians united in great numbers against the Portuguese settlers, and various actions ensued, attended with much bloodshed; but they were eventually routed with great slaughter, under the platoon fire of European troops, and were dispersed to the number of 20,000 men. The Spaniards having been forced to quit the Falkland Islands formed a design of re-establishing their settlements at Castro, in the great island of Chiloe, on the Pacific shores of South America; but the free natives resenting the attempt rose in arms and destroyed a great part of the armament which arrived at the island in March. So dangerous at length did the insurrection appear, for it speedily spread to the continent of Chili, that the Viceroy of Peru assembled a body of troops at Lima for its suppression, and sent to Spain for further assistance.

## 1773.

1. WAR BETWEEN THE TURKS AND RUSSIANS.—2. CONCLUSION OF THE CARIBBEAN WAR IN THE WEST INDIES.—3. MARITIME DISCOVERY—BYRON, COOK, HIRNE, AND MACKENZIE.—4. DISTURBANCES AT BOSTON IN NORTH AMERICA.

## 1. WAR BETWEEN THE TURKS AND RUSSIANS.

Previously to the breaking up of the conferences at Fokshani the Turks proposed a prolongation of the armistice to the latter end of June, which being refused, both sides prepared to open the campaign. The Russian army was commanded by Count Romanzow, and was computed to number 87,000 men of which nearly one-third



was cavalry. Generals Weissmann and Potemkin crossed the Danube near Brailow in the night between the 18th and 19th of June at the head of 15,000 men, but the passage was not effected without danger and considerable loss on both sides. A bloody engagement ensued, in which the Russian horse were defeated by the Turkish cavalry, but the former bringing up their infantry in support, the Turks quitted the field; and the two Generals, marching up the river, covered the passage of the grand army, which crossed on the 24th, and immediately advanced in large divisions towards Silistria. Upon their march the Russians found themselves continually harassed by great bodies of the Turkish horse; for the new vizier, Muhsinzade, seeming desirous to avoid a general engagement, detached 27,000 of his best cavalry for that purpose. It was to little purpose that these troops were repulsed, their attacks were as continually renewed. The Russians were harassed for want of rest; they could scarcely take the bit out of their horses' mouths; and found it next to impossible to procure forage or water; they were also exposed at night to the rains and severe winds which came down from the mountains, and were felt even at this season to be very severe. Weissmann and Potemkin at length arrived with their vanguard at Silistria, but found it strongly defended by a numerous body of 24,000 men commanded by three pachas. On the 29th of June the Russian Generals marched early in the morning to attack the Turkish camp. In their advance to the intrenchments they were furiously assaulted by the Turkish spahis, or horse, who lay in wait for them; and when they had at length dispersed them by the fire of the Russian artillery, they found the janizaries well prepared to receive them in their intrenchments. A warm and bloody engagement ensued, in which the Russians were thrown into great disorder; and the Turks, elate with the hope of victory, rushed from their camp and followed after them with disorderly eagerness. Weissmann perceived his advantage, and bringing up the hill a body of troops from another direction, entered the trenches without opposition. The Turks, thus shut out, were forced after a vigorous resistance to retire into the town of Silistria. Preparations were immediately made under the immediate eye of Romanzow for a general assault, but the continued and vigorous sallies of the Turks disturbed his dispositions. At length, receiving intelligence that a powerful Turkish army of 50,000 men under the Grand Vizier was coming up to the assistance of the besieged, it was thought advisable to march back to the northern side of the river. In the retreat Weissmann, who commanded the van, found 13,000 Turks possessed of a defile through which the army must of necessity pass. A desperate engagement ensued, in which the Russians were very roughly handled, and General Weissmann in endeavouring to rally them was shot dead on the spot; the rest of the Russian army coming up, the Turks were forced to give up the advantage they had gained; and the Russians having all passed the defile, gained the banks of the Danube, which they crossed between the 2nd and 5th of July. The Czarina, dissatisfied with this retreat, wrote to know the reason for it, when

Romanzow stated that the army of the Vizier trebled that of her Majesty. Catherine replied that the ancient Romans did not trouble themselves to inquire into the number of their enemy, but merely desired to know where they might be found, in order to bring them to a decisive engagement. The sickly season coming upon excessive fatigue, scarcity, and badness of provisions, obliged Romanzow to retire from the confines of the river altogether to the neighbourhood of Jassy. There was therefore a cessation of hostilities for some time; during which the prudence and caution of the Grand Vizier maintained the most perfect discipline and tranquillity among his troops on both sides of the Danube till about the middle of September, when both the contending forces were again in motion. In October the Russians crossed the Danube in two divisions; and while one renewed the siege of Silistria under Count Romanzow, the other, under the command of Generals Ungern, Suwarrow, and Dolgorucki, extended their operations towards the coasts of the Black Sea. On the 28th these last attacked near the lake Karasu, Daghistanli Ali Pacha, whom they defeated; and gained another advantage near Babadagh. It was about this time that Suwarrow was despatched by Marshal Romanzow to drive the Turks out of Turtukay, a strong place on the Danube, in which he succeeded, and sent the Marshal one of those concise reports which were so characteristic of this remarkable commander: "Honour and glory to God! Glory to you, Romanzow! We are in possession of Turtukay, and I am in it." The Czarina was so pleased with him on this occasion that she sent him the order of St. George. These successes encouraged the Russians to push on to Varna, a port on the Black Sea, which they attempted to carry by assault. The brave Seraskier, Hassan, however, disconcerted them, and the spirit of the garrison frustrated the attempt, from which after a bloody engagement the Russians were obliged to retire with great loss, and in such disorder as to abandon their cannon. The siege of Silistria was carried on for several weeks, and the garrison showed the most unconquerable perseverance and bravery. The Grand Vizier, constant to his policy, remained in his camp at Shumla; and at length in the beginning of December the Russians raised the siege and repassed the Danube. This was very much brought about by the exertions of the Seraskier at the head of the Turkish cavalry, who cut off the Russian convoys, and straitened their operations for want of magazines. The efforts of the Russians were impeded in this campaign by an insurrection which broke out in the Crimea among the Cossacks, who united with the Tartars and Turks, whereby the whole peninsula, except one or two maritime places that were strongly fortified and garrisoned, was for a time withdrawn from Russian authority. Different armies under different generals were sent to suppress these troubles, but the country remained in a disordered state during the whole year.

A Cossack whose name was Pugatcheff, and who assumed the name and character of Peter III., appeared towards the end of the year in the province of Orenburg, where an insurrectionary move-

ment took place, which excited alarm in Russia, and General Bibikow was sent to suppress it in the month of December.

## 2. CONCLUSION OF THE CARIBBEAN WAR IN THE WEST INDIES.

The Caribbean War, as it was called, terminated this year in a treaty concluded on the 13th of February between Major-General Dalrymple and the Caribs, by which the latter acknowledged the sovereignty of the King of Great Britain, and agreed to submit to the laws of the island of St. Vincent, so far as they regarded their relations with the white inhabitants, while they were to retain their own customs; they ceded a large tract of land to the colonists, and were secured in possession of what they retained.

## 3. MARITIME DISCOVERY—BYRON, COOK, HEARNE, AND MACKENZIE.

Although the "Annals of the Wars" do not seem to include a reference to voyages for "maritime discovery," yet as "nothing can redound more to the honour of this nation as a maritime power, to the dignity of the crown of Great Britain, and to the advancement of its trade and navigation than to make discoveries of countries hitherto unknown, &c.," so the persons sent being officers of the navy, on whose professional skill, fearless spirit of enterprise, and general acquirements, the success entirely depends, it has been deemed right to insert some notice of the subject as it bears on the daring character of the British sailor at this period of the century.

No sooner had the peace of Paris set fitting officers at liberty for this employment, than King George III., with whom "maritime discovery" was a favourite consideration, sent out Commodore Byron with two ships on a cruise, with the object of investigating the islands in the Pacific Ocean, in 1764-5. Wallis and Carteret were afterwards despatched with a similar pursuit, and the latter discovered Otaheite. But the great explorer of this period was Captain James Cook, who, despatched in 1768, and rounding Cape Horn, arrived at the newly-discovered island in time to witness the transit of Venus, in June, 1769. He then explored the coasts of New South Wales, and thence returned to England in 1771. The superior merits of this celebrated circumnavigator "were acknowledged in the way that gallant seamen love best—he was sent forth on another perilous voyage." He left England in 1772 to explore the Antarctic seas in search of a southern continent, and returned home in 1774. For the third time he quitted England in search of a north-west passage in July, 1776, and when no longer able to prosecute that object, returned to Owhyee, where he was barbarously murdered by the natives in 1779. Hearne and Mackenzie afterwards followed up the last endeavours of Cook, and discovered the open sea within the Arctic circle, which animated the exertions of a new race of daring explorers in the nineteenth century.

## 4. DISTURBANCES AT BOSTON IN NORTH AMERICA.

We now arrive at a most important epoch. At the peace of 1763 the power and empire of Great Britain seemed to the nations of

Europe above all ancient and above all modern fame. The French had been obliged to abandon America; but this state of things had no sooner taken place, than Great Britain and her American colonies arrived at a deadly feud. So early as 1764 a proposal was made at home to tax the colonists, and the famous Stamp Act of Mr. Grenville was passed in 1765. America became greatly agitated in consequence, and the Assembly of Massachusetts prepared a petition and remonstrance to the King. In November this year a riot occurred at Boston, which brought on the crisis. In December some ships laden with tea arrived at that port, and on the 18th a number of men disguised as Indians boarded the ships and threw the cargoes overboard. These events were the foundation and prelude of the subsequent American War.

---

## 1774.

1. WAR BETWEEN THE TURKS AND RUSSIANS.—2. PEACE OF KAIKARDJI.—3. RUSSIAN AND TURKISH NAVAL WAR.—4. PUGATOFF'S REBELLION IN RUSSIA CRUSHED.—5. DEATH AND MILITARY CHARACTER OF LOUIS XV. OF FRANCE.—6. WAR BETWEEN SPAIN AND MOROCCO.—7. WAR IN INDIA.—8. DEATH AND MILITARY CHARACTER OF GENERAL LORD CLIVE

### 1. WAR BETWEEN THE TURKS AND RUSSIANS.

On the 21st of January the Grand Seignior, Abdul Munstapha, died, but his death did not affect the war with Russia. He was succeeded by his brother, Abdul Hamed, who exerted himself with great vigour to recruit his armies, though interrupted by a mutiny among the janizaries at Adrianople, who were desirous of placing his nephew, the son of the late Sultan, who was only in his thirteenth year, on the throne. This revolt was put down, but it is believed that the seeds of discontent were widely spread among the troops. The Porte sent Dewlet Ghiran, the late Khan of the Tartars of the Crimea, with a considerable sum of money, and attended by some of the most considerable of his kindred, into the Kuban of Tartary, where he was soon joined by 10,000 men. This body was attacked and routed by a Russian detachment before any effective junction could be formed, which so dispirited the Tartar chief, that he divided the money amongst his friends and adherents and quitted the country.

A great Turkish army, which was said to number not less than 200,000 combatants, was at length assembled under the command of the Grand Vizier in Bulgaria. Nor was the court of St. Petersburg less diligent to enable Romanzow to take the field. The Marshal's army was accordingly rendered very formidable, and all the reinforcements having now arrived, and a large fleet of boats having been prepared upon the Danube under the conduct of General Soltikow, that General effected a passage across the river near Turtukay on the night

of the 16th of June. Generals Kamiński and Suwarrow also crossed the river at the head of their respective divisions; so that Marshal Romanzow at the head of 50,000 men encamped near Silistria, which he threatened with another siege. The Turks commenced the campaign with a series of actions, in one of which Soltikow was vigorously attacked by the Pacha of Rustchuk, who was obliged at length to yield a well-fought field after a severe action of several hours' continuance. On the same day, the 20th of June, the Reis Effendi, at the head of 40,000 men opposed to Kamiński and Suwarrow, was utterly defeated without a blow, the whole Turkish army shamefully deserting their colours together with a fine new train of brass guns. From this time disorder, mutiny, and dismay appear to have possessed the whole Turkish army, and they absolutely refused to face the enemy. They fled to Constantinople, committing every kind of outrage in the way. This became so prevalent, that even in the Grand Vizier's camp at Shumla, and under his own eye, the Europeans and Asiatics were with difficulty restrained from cutting each other to pieces; and the whole of his cavalry abandoned him in a body; so that the immense army which he commanded at the beginning of the campaign was in a few days entirely dissipated.

## 2. PEACE OF KAINARDJI.

The Grand Vizier shut himself up as well as he could at Shumla, where he was at length entirely invested by the Russian divisions; his convoys were intercepted, and he became alike incapable of subsisting where he was or of retreating; he was therefore reduced to the necessity of capitulating; and, demanding a parley, negotiations were in two short conferences terminated by signing a peace at Kainardji on July the 21st. The Grand Vizier, however, reserved for himself the approbation of the Sublime Porte, to which he wrote, describing the circumstances and the destitution to which he and the troops still with him were reduced. The Porte was in consternation and grief at the intelligence received, and called on the Mufti to sanction his consent to the conditions, who replied in the following concise but expressive terms: "Seeing our people will no longer fight the Russians, it is necessary to conclude a peace." Nothing could exceed the joy and festivity which prevailed at St. Peter-burg for this happy and glorious termination of the war. The Czarina had already found her finances reduced to a low ebb, her armies thinned by pestilence, and some of her provinces convulsed with rebellion; but she was moderate in this moment of victory, and restored all her conquests except Azoff and Taganrog. The pride of Muhsinzade would not permit him to take part in the conferences; for he was unable to brook the grief and indignation which these disgraces brought upon him, and whether he had suffered in his health at Shumla, or whether he sunk of a broken heart, at all events he died on his road from thence to Adrianople.

## 3. RUSSIAN AND TURKISH NAVAL WAR.

While pacific measures were in progress on the side of the

Danube, the Capudan Pacha with an armament which had been fitted out from the Crimea, after some small encounters with the Russian fleet in the Black Sea, made an effective landing on that peninsula of some 20,000 men, which were placed under the command of the Khan, Dewlet Ghirai, who was once more persuaded to try and recover his country. These forces having been joined by some Tartars, were actually engaged in battle with a Russian army under the command of Prince Dolgorucki when intelligence reached both sides of the conclusion of a peace. In the interim some small engagements between the Russians and Turks had occurred in the Mediterranean, but they partook more of the character of piracy and robbery than of naval war.

#### 4. PUGATCHEFF'S REBELLION IN RUSSIA CRUSHED.

The siege of Orenburg, almost on the confines of Europe and Asia, against which Pugatcheff was employed with a strong force, and which General Bibikow watched, was still in progress, when Prince Galitzin, who had been sent to its relief, encountered the chief rebel himself with the bulk of his forces at a fortified post, called Tatischezen, about twenty-four miles from the besieged town. The Prince boldly attacked him there on the 25th of March, and totally defeated him, with the loss of 2000 men killed, 3000 prisoners, and thirty-six pieces of cannon. The immediate consequence of this victory was the relief of Orenburg after a five months' blockade; but Pugatcheff found means to assemble fresh forces, and was a second time defeated by Prince Galitzin on the borders of the Yaick or Ural river, when his followers were scattered, while the impostor himself is said to have escaped solely by the swiftness of his horse, and to have fled alone towards the country of the Baskirs, who, being Mahomedan Tartars, gave him an asylum. General Bibikow had in the mean while died, and Prince Galitzin succeeded to the chief command, who followed the insurgent chief in his flight with great diligence. He was still able to maintain himself on the borders of the Volga, exciting terror by his devastations and cruelties, the latter being principally directed against the nobility and clergy, whom he slaughtered without mercy, and plundered to such an extent that the losses sustained by the Counts Soltikow and Shuwalow alone were estimated at more than 200,000 roubles each. On a sudden Pugatcheff made a fierce assault upon the city of Kasan, where the garrison was commanded by Brant and Potemkin, and after fighting furiously for eight hours, and almost obtaining possession of the fort, the rebel forces were attacked outside by Colonel Michelson on the 15th of July. This officer had been detached by Count Panin, who had succeeded to the command of the forces sent to quell this rebellion, and who had been for some time on the trace of the rebel army, and now attacking them in conjunction with a sortie from the garrison, put them utterly to the rout. Again, however, Pugatcheff got some forces together, although continually pursued by the Imperial troops, and before a month was over he was in force between Cariezyn and Astracap, where he was again attacked on the 25th of

August, and totally defeated, with the loss of artillery, ammunition, and every thing. Pugatcheff himself swam across the Volga, and wandered for some days in the neighbouring deserts, but was at length captured, brought in, bound hand and foot, to Count Panin's head-quarters, and sent in an iron cage to Moscow, where he suffered death, but, to the honour of the Czarina's humanity, without any of the aggravations of the punishment of treason.

##### 5. DEATH AND MILITARY CHARACTER OF LOUIS XV.

Louis XV. died on the 10th of May this year from an attack of small-pox, caught from a girl of fourteen, whom his abandoned associates, to dissipate an increasing melancholy and animate his failing powers, had introduced to his embraces from the Parc-aux-Cerfs. A King who has made campaigns infers a supremacy of command which justifies an inquiry into his qualifications for it, and merits a place in military annals. Louis XV. appears to have taken his royal great-grandfather as his model, but he only imitated him, or, rather, excelled him in his vices, without showing any of his better qualities. For the majesty that distinguished the "Grand Monarque" he had only an unmeaning benignity of countenance: instead of the *grande taille* and military air of his ancestor, his carriage was devoid of grace or dignity. Like his predecessor he appeared at the head of his armies in the field, but he never exhibited any military qualifications beyond *sang froid* and courage. He formed no school of generals, like his great-grandfather; for, although Saxe and Lowendahl might rival Turenne and Vauban, yet they were exotics, and their employment plainly demonstrated an absence of native talent. Maillebois, Richelieu, Belleisle, and Noailles were very inferior in comparison with the Villars, Vendômes, Catinat, and Boufflers of the former wars; and even these were rather the flickerings of the old candle than a light created from the new one. The King desired to be a *homme galant*; and, like his original, he cast off his wife for a mistress; but not content with one, he had a whole Parc-aux-Cerfs. An incestuous intercourse with three sisters in succession failed to satisfy this lecherous voluptuary, and affords a melancholy example of the sad extent to which insatiate lust will carry a person not altogether unamiable<sup>1</sup>. Such was the state to which a life of gross debauchery, alike unworthy of his age and station, had reduced him, that his constitution was unable to withstand the shock of any serious disorder, and it was said that under his last attack his limbs literally putrified and dropped off before he expired; so that none of his worthless favourites, not even Madame du Barri, would attend his dying couch. Then it was left to the virtuous daughters of France to evidence the true courage of women, and in the performance of their filial duty to brave the infection, which, indeed, they took in their attendance at their dying father's bed: happily they recovered from it, and they have afforded a noble example of the courage of the sex and of female tenderness. The French army had imitated their sovereign's vices and follies in the

<sup>1</sup> *Lacictelle*.

camp; and we have seen what a set of *petits maîtres* those officers had become who made the campaigns of the Seven Years' War. The best traits of this King are some of the sayings recorded of him, one of which had reference to his desire to spare his soldiers all unnecessary dangers, when he said "that he would rather at all times sacrifice money than men in war."

#### 6. WAR BETWEEN SPAIN AND MOROCCO.

A singular war broke out this year between the Emperor of Morocco and the King of Spain, founded on no pretence of injury, but on a presumed compliance with the injunctions of the Koran. The Emperor informed the King by letter that he and his people were determined to fulfil the commands of their religion—not to suffer Christians to hold territorial possessions in Mahomedan countries—and he therefore proposed to attack the Spanish settlements in Africa, but hoped this would occasion no breach between the nations elsewhere. This extraordinary declaration was immediately followed by hostilities against the garrison of Ceuta, which produced a declaration of war from the King of Spain in October. In December the Emperor of Morocco appeared at the head of a numerous army before Melilla, on the coast of Fez, which he began to cannonade, but the unskilfulness of his officers and the bravery of the garrison prevented any considerable progress. An attempt on Peñon de Velez was not more successful.

#### 7. WAR IN INDIA.

Warren Hastings was now Governor-General of India, and in order to put money into the coffers of the Company, as it was supposed, he encouraged a war with the Rohillas, an enterprising race of Afghan adventurers, who had reduced to subjection the Hindoo population of Rohilkund. The Nabob of Oude, the Vizer Surajah Dowlah, who had long coveted the Rohilla country, had promised forty lacs of rupees as the reward for British assistance to obtain it. Hastings therefore despatched a force under Sir Robert Barker, who occupied for some time one bank of the river opposed to the Rohillas, who, unwilling to bring matters to a crisis, remained encamped on the other. Thus matters remained until the end of the year 1773; but after this interval, the Vizer had claim to British assistance, and accordingly one of the three brigades into which the army was divided marched, under Colonel Champion, and on the 23d of April gave battle to the Rohilla force, of about 10,000 men, commanded by Hafiz Rehmüt Khan, over whom it gained a complete victory, and put the Vizer in possession of the prize which he so much coveted. Two thousand of the enemy fell on the field, and more than fifty pieces of cannon were taken; but the victory was cruelly abused, and the most wanton cruelties followed it. The result, however, was that Surajah Dowlah took possession for himself of the whole of Rohilkund, and the Company's troops, justly indignant at the conduct of their allies, are said to have exclaimed, "We have the honour of the day, and these banditti the profits."



**8. DEATH AND MILITARY CHARACTER OF GENERAL LORD CLIVE.**

The disputes with America had now become so serious that an appeal to the sword seemed inevitable, and the ministers had been desirous to avail themselves of the services of Clive; but it was too late, for on the 22nd of November, worn down with sufferings of many kinds, and vexed by the stings of his enemies, which his proud spirit could not endure, this great and mighty conqueror put a period to his existence by his own hand in his forty-ninth year.

Born of a gentleman's family in Shropshire, he was endowed by nature with a restless, and perhaps turbulent temperament. His determination of purpose, fierce passions, and unflinching intrepidity were early conspicuous. "Fighting," said one of his uncles, "to which he is beyond measure addicted, gives his temper such a fierceness and imperiousness that he flies out on every trifling occasion." Accordingly his relatives, anxious to get quit of him, "shipped him off to make a fortune or to die of a fever" in the East Indies, "in the character of a commercial writer in the service of the Company." The encroachments of the French governors in the East having driven the British factories to defend themselves, Clive took an interest in the contest, and exchanging the pen for a pair of colours in 1746, at twenty-one entered on a military career; but at the conclusion of peace he was still wavering between military and commercial life, when events took place which determined his choice. He had taken with vehement ardour to reading, which compensated in some degree for the previous idleness of his youth. His uncontrollable nature made him restless at the pusillanimity of the authorities of the presidency under whom he resided. His violent temper had frequently brought him into trouble, and his natural melancholy and reserve had led him twice in a fit of despair to shoot himself, but on both occasions the pistol, though well loaded and primed, had missed fire, at which Clive was so much struck, that he exclaimed, as he laid down the pistol, "Surely I am destined for something great." We have seen in these Annals the progress of his career. He returned to England, in 1767, leaving the East India Company in the condition of powerful princes possessed of vast revenues, to which prosperity he had contributed more than any other individual—"Such an extent of cultivated territory, such a multitude of subjects, were never added to the dominions of Rome by the most successful proconsul. Nor were such wealthy spoils ever borne under arches of triumph down the Sacred Way and through the crowded Forum to the threshold of the Tarpeian Jove. The fame of those who subdued Antiochus and Tigranes grows dim when compared with the splendour of the exploits which the young English adventurer achieved at the head of an army not equal in numbers to one-half of a Roman legion. His name stands high on the roll of conquerors;" but it is found in a better list, in the list of those who have done and suffered much for the happiness of mankind. "It is hard to say whether he appears with more lustre as the hero whose single exploits laid the foundation of a mighty

empire, or as the governor whose resolution and integrity stamped the characters which have given stability and permanence to its power<sup>1</sup>."

Lord Clive's genius for war was intuitive; he had little instruction and no counsellors, for he was one of the few men whose conduct was always directed by the dictates of his own mind, and whose decisions were therefore secret. Like all great men, he took counsel only of himself; and like the first of the Cæsars, the talents of other men could add little to his genius. He was born a leader; and the great Lord Chatham pronounced him to be a heaven-born general; for without experience, or being much versed in military affairs, he had surpassed all the officers of his time. He was, in truth, compelled to form himself as well as his officers and his army; and it is said that "of the eight officers who commanded under him at the defence of Arcot only two had ever been in action, and four out of the eight were mere factors of the Company, induced by Clive's example to volunteer their services." But although nothing is known of the steps he took to prepare himself for military life in youth, he was early remarkable for a bold adventurous spirit. An aversion to control marked his boyhood and his maturity. It is related that he was on one occasion desired to ask pardon of the governor's secretary, whom he had offended, which was accepted by the official with an invitation to dine with him. "No, sir," replied Clive, "the governor did not command me to dine with you." On another occasion he detected a young officer cheating him at cards, and was accordingly challenged to fight him in a duel. After an interchange of shots he was asked if he was satisfied. "Satisfied," said Clive, "I said that you cheated, and I say so still; fire away." He certainly devoted much of his time, on his arrival at Madras and for the first five years of his residence there, to reading; during which period he must have acquired a considerable amount of knowledge. It would be unreasonable, therefore, to suppose that he was wholly indebted to his genius—nor are, indeed, men ever so—yet doubtless, like all great minds, he could not only devise and decide, but he could communicate his ardent spirit to his followers, and awaken a devotion which can alone be acquired in war by great natural qualities. The East India Company never had a more zealous, upright, and efficient servant; and it is without question that Great Britain mainly owes her Eastern Empire to Lord Clive.

---

1775.

1. WAR BETWEEN GREAT BRITAIN AND HER NORTH AMERICAN COLONIES.—2. BATTLE OF CONCORD OR LEXINGTON.—3. TICONDEROGA AND CROWN POINT TAKEN BY THE PATRIOTS.—4. BATTLE OF BUNKER'S HILL.—5. THE PATRIOTS INVADE CANADA

<sup>1</sup> Macaulay and Alison,

AND TAKE MONTREAL.—6. THEY FAIL IN AN ATTEMPT ON QUEBEC.—7. THE SPANIARDS SEND AN EXPEDITION AGAINST ALGIERS.—8. WAR IN EGYPT.—9. WAR IN PERSIA.—10. DISTURBANCES IN FRANCE.

### 1. WAR BETWEEN GREAT BRITAIN AND HER NORTH AMERICAN COLONIES.

The revolt of the American Colonies is now the all-engrossing subject to which our interest must be directed. The dissensions which had been long going on between Great Britain and her North American colonies, had already ripened into a civil war. General Gage had been sent the previous year to assume the government of Massachusetts, and to take command of all the British troops in North America: an officer of trust, who had borne several previous commands with reputation in that part of the world, and had made himself rather popular amongst all classes of the people. He soon, however, got into hot water with the representatives of the state, and on the 17th of June dissolved the last assembly in that province which was ever held under the charter from the Crown. Not long after his arrival two regiments of foot and some cannon were landed at Boston, and encamped in the immediate neighbourhood; these were reinforced by degrees through the arrival of several regiments from Ireland, New York, Halifax, and Quebec; and a guard was established on the narrow isthmus that joins Boston to the continent—all which preparations excited alarm and dissatisfaction every where. In a short time General Gage began to fortify that neck of land, and this increased the jealousy, suspicion, and ill blood which were already prevalent. Things were rendered still worse by the landing of a detachment of sailors by night, from the ships of war in the harbour, to spike the cannon upon a militia battery belonging to the town. The southern colonies had also now begun to arm as well as the northern, and to train and exercise their military force. Mills were erected and manufactories formed both in Philadelphia and Virginia for the making of gunpowder, and encouragement was given every where to the fabrication of arms of all sorts.

### 2. BATTLE OF CONCORD OR LEXINGTON.

Governor Gage having received intelligence that some brass cannon were deposited in the town of Salem, sent a detachment of troops on the 25th of February to seize upon them, and bring them to Boston; but on their arrival they found that the people had been there beforehand, and had removed them. In the town of Concord, where the Americans had their provincial congress, they had collected a quantity of military stores, which General Gage thought it expedient to destroy, and he accordingly detached about 900 light infantry and grenadiers, under the command of Lieut.-Colonel Smith, with some marines under Major Pitcairn, to effect this object. The detachment embarked in boats at Boston on the night preceding the 19th of April, and having gone a little way up the Charles River, landed at a place called Plipp's Farm, and proceeded with great

silence and expedition towards Concord. The country was nevertheless alarmed, bells rung, and people began to assemble in the neighbouring towns and villages before daylight. On the arrival of the troops at Lexington at five in the morning, they found a company of militia belonging to that town assembled on a green near the road. An officer in the van called aloud, "Disperse, you rebels, throw down your arms and disperse," and rushed up with a loud hurrah, firing a volley in which eight of the militia were killed. This was the first blood drawn in the contest, and the die was now cast. After this the detachment marched forward to Concord, having previously despatched six companies of light infantry to possess the two bridges. A body of militia who occupied a hill in the way retired at their approach. The main body of the troops on their arrival knocked off the trunnions of three pieces of cannon, and burned some gun-carriages, flour, gunpowder, and musket ball. The militia observing the flames thought the town had been set on fire, and accordingly returned towards the bridge, and formed opposite to where the light infantry were posted. The soldiers upon this fired and killed two men. The provincials returned the fire, and a skirmish ensued at the bridge, when the country people having rallied around the militia, they all attacked the troops on every side—a continued and scattering fire being kept up throughout a long and very hot day. At length the troops commenced a retreat to Lexington, when they were immediately fired upon from houses, walls, and other coverts, as well as from the armed men. General Gage, anxious under the state of affairs, and apprehensive of the danger of the service on which he had sent the detachment, had ordered off Lord Percy early in the morning, with sixteen companies of foot, and two pieces of cannon, to support Colonel Smith, and these opportunely arrived at Lexington just as the troops marched in, who, in their long retreat of fifteen miles, had expended all their ammunition, and were at the moment in some jeopardy. The field-pieces kept the provincials at a distance for some time, but as soon as the troops resumed their march, the annoyances recommenced; and as the people became more numerous they became more bold. At length the troops arrived at Charlestown on the opposite side of Boston harbour, over which they passed to the city under the protection of the guns of the "Somerset" man-of-war. They had marched nearly thirty-five miles, and had sustained a loss in killed, wounded, and prisoners, of 273 men and officers, amongst whom was Lieut.-Colonel Smith, the commander. This affair soon summoned the whole province to arms, and a body of provincial troops was forthwith collected, said to amount to 20,000 men, but at all events so numerous that they now actually invested the King's troops in Boston.

### 3. TICONDEROGA AND CROWN POINT TAKEN BY THE PATRIOTS.

These men were under the command of Ward, Pribble, Heath, Prescott, Thomas, and an old and brave provincial officer, Colonel Putnam, who acted as generals: their head-quarters were fixed at Cambridge, with their right wing at Roxburg, and their left at

Mystic River; and they had already possessed themselves of guns, for it is related that "they strengthened this position with artillery." A large detachment of militia from Connecticut accompanied Colonel Putnam. The affair at Lexington had excited the greatest indignation throughout the other colonies, and the bravery of the militia was a matter of much exultation; those who had fallen were regretted with the deepest concern, and their death heightened the public fever. A provincial congress made great exertions to clothe and provision this force. Magazines were in some places seized for the use of the patriots, a stop was put to the exportation of provisions, and a conciliatory proposition from the mother country, which arrived at this time, was rejected with disdain, while a declaration of reasons was drawn up, addressed to the people of Great Britain. The province of New York, which had hitherto kept back, now imbibed the general spirit. Connecticut, Massachusetts, and New York fitted out an expedition at their joint expense, to surprise Ticonderoga, Crown Point, and other fortresses situated on the great lakes, and commanding the passes to Canada. These adventurers, amounting to no more than 240 men, under the command of Colonel Easton and Colonel Ethan Allen, were unexpectedly joined by Colonel Arnold, who was raising men in the district, and now came forward, consenting to act under Allen. They succeeded in taking the two places named, without loss on either side, capturing a considerable quantity of artillery, besides various stores, which were highly valuable to them; they also took two vessels and the materials for building and equipping others, which gave them the command of Lake Champlain. The harbour of Boston was so well filled with British ships of war that the provincials, although hot in blood after the affair at Lexington, would not venture on the attempt to storm that city, for fear of the consequences that must have fallen upon the town and its inhabitants; moreover the royal forces at Boston, with respect to numbers and efficiency, were become very respectable; and they had been reinforced with some commanders of character, such as Generals Howe, Burgoyne, and Clinton, who arrived there on the 25th of May, and who, it was clear, were prepared for a fight, and would not long remain inactive.

#### 4. THE BATTLE OF BUNKER'S HILL.

The town of Charlestown opposite Boston had hitherto been neglected by both parties. It was only separated from that city by an arm of the sea called the Charles River; and the provincials, judging it necessary for them to hold it, sent a body thither on the night of the 17th of June, to throw up batteries on Bunker's or Breed's Hill, a high ground that commanded the harbour. Such incredible despatch was used in the execution of these works, that by break of day a small but strong redoubt and other intrenchments were so far advanced towards completion as at least to be capable of defence. The "Lively" sloop of war having caught sight of these ramparts early in the morning, directed her guns upon the working parties, and the sound of her guns was the first notice that the

General and his troops at Boston received of these hostile intentions. A heavy cannonade from the ships was forthwith commenced upon the works; and about noon General Gage caused a considerable body of troops to be embarked under the command of Major-General Howe and Brigadier Pigott, who were crossed over, landed, and drawn up without opposition at Moreton's Point, under the fire of the ships of war. The two Generals found the provincials so numerous and in such a posture of defence, that they sent back for a reinforcement before they began any attack, and they were in due time joined by about 2000 more men. Word was also sent to Burgoyne and Clinton, who were in a battery on the other side of Charlestown, to fire that place, which was immediately done, and the large and noble town was soon in one great blaze—the church steeples, being of timber, forming great pyramids of fire above the rest. This created a great confusion; and the crash of churches and of whole streets falling into ruin, together with the ships on the stocks all in a blaze, with the roar of guns and peals of musketry, was a fearful sound to the uninitiated patriot. The troops now advanced against the enemy under cover of a severe fire of cannon and howitzers, which it was hoped would ruin the defences, and throw the provincials into confusion. They, however, bore the fire with great firmness, and threw some men forward into the houses of Charlestown, which covered their right flank: consequently Brigadier Pigott found himself at once engaged with an enemy in the houses and in the line. The King's troops nevertheless approached almost to the works, when a most dreadful fire was opened upon them from the provincials, by which a number of men and officers fell: the troops quailed and for a short time General Howe was left nearly alone. In this critical moment General Clinton, seeing two battalions on the beach apparently embarrassed which way to move, without waiting for orders, seized a boat and hastened to their aid, when he landed and rallied the troops and brought them against the American works, which were now forced in every quarter. The provincials, many of them without bayonets, fought desperately, but were at length obliged to retreat over Charlestown neck, enfiladed by the guns of the "Glasgow" man-of-war and two floating batteries. The numbers engaged in this conflict have not been accurately ascertained. The defeated party left about thirty wounded behind them, and five out of their six pieces of artillery; but no prisoners were taken, and no correct account exists either of the force they brought into the field or the number of their killed. The King's troops lost 1054, of whom 226 were killed, including nineteen commissioned officers,—an uncommon proportion. Lieutenant-Colonel Abercrombie, Majors Pitcairn, Williams, and Spendlove were killed on the side of the British, and the most distinguished officer on the other side was a Dr. Warren, who commanded one of the redoubts. Both sides claimed much honour from this action. The patriots had evinced a high degree of activity and skill in the construction of their works, and of constancy in their defence of them under many disadvantages; and although the King's troops obtained possession of Bunker's Hill, and increased

its fortifications, yet the Americans still held them closely invested there, and rendered their situation very uncomfortable. The appointment of General Washington to be commander-in-chief of the patriot army dates from the 19th of June, almost the day of this battle; but it was not in consequence of it, but of proceedings that had taken place in the southern colonies coincidentally with those of the north, for the flame was now already kindled over the whole extent of North America. In Virginia the Governor, Lord Dunmore, got into his possession the public magazines of powder in Williamsburgh, and when the assembly claimed it as their own property, which they should use in case of an insurrection of the slaves, he threatened to enfranchise all these and turn them loose against their masters. A number of the inhabitants on this marched towards Williamsburgh for the purpose of obtaining the restitution of the gunpowder, and matters proceeded so far that the Governor thought it prudent to take refuge with his family on board the "Wovey" man-of-war. In North and South Carolina the differences ran equally high, and generally ended in the secession of the governors on board ships of war. The colony of Georgia joined the General Alliance in the beginning of the month of July. On the 2nd of that month Washington arrived in Cambridge and there established his head-quarters. He was a gentleman of independent fortune in Virginia, who had taken up arms in a sincere spirit of patriotism, and with some military reputation, but in accepting the command he had repudiated all idea of pay or emolument. He was forty-three years of age, in the prime and glory of manhood, and had acquired his experience in the command of different bodies of British provincials in the French war. Artemas Ward, Charles Lee, Philip Schuyler, and Isaac Putnam, all men of some military knowledge, were appointed major-generals to serve under Washington, and Horatio Gates was nominated adjutant-general. The two armies of Gage and Washington remained on the defensive for the rest of this year, but some important military operations occurred on the side of Canada.

##### 5. THE PATRIOTS INVADE CANADA AND TAKE MONTREAL.

The success which had attended the expedition to the lakes, joined with the apprehension of a meditated war against the northern colonies from the Canadian border, induced the Americans to undertake the bold enterprise of an invasion of that province, while the King's troops were blocked up in Boston. In the month of September Colonel Benedict Arnold was detached with a thousand men under orders to proceed up the river Kennebec and through the woods to Canada, for the purpose of making an attempt upon Quebec. Generals Schuyler and Montgomery at the head of about 3000 men had already been conveyed along Lake Champlain to the river Sorel, by means of *bateaux* or flat boats built at Ticonderoga. On their arrival at Crown Point they became apprehensive that some armed vessels which lay at Fort St. John were preparing to enter the lake to obstruct their passage: Montgomery therefore separated from Schuyler in the latter end of August, and proceeded with the force

under his command to Isle aux Noix, which lies in the entrance of the river, and took necessary measures to guard against the passage of any vessels into the lake. Schuyler pushed on to Fort St. John, where he arrived on the 6th of September, and was immediately attacked in some thick woods and deep swamps which surrounded the fort by a considerable body of Indians. Schuyler determined accordingly to defer his operations until he could enter into some terms with these savages, but in the mean while he fell sick, so that the whole weight of the expedition fell upon Montgomery, a man well qualified for the service. His first measure was to detach the Indians from the British service, and, having succeeded in this, he prepared with the united force to lay siege to Fort St. John, which was garrisoned by 600 or 700 men, of whom about 500 were regulars, under Major Preston.

In this state of things Ethan Allen (who has been named as a leader of the provincials, and who had a principal share in this expedition to the lakes, although he always acted as a partisan, obedient to no regular command) attempted to surprise the town of Montreal. This rash enterprise resulted as might have been expected from the temerity of the undertaking. Being met at some distance from the town by the militia of the province, under the command of English officers, and a few regulars, he was on the 26th of September defeated and taken prisoner, with about forty of his party. In the mean time General Carleton, who commanded at Montreal, was indefatigable in forming an expedition that should act with Colonel McLean against the projected provincial invasion. This officer was endeavouring to raise a Scotch regiment among the Highland settlers, and was now posted near the junction of the Sorel with the river St. Lawrence; but before he could collect a force he was encountered at the head of some 1000 men, whom he had got together with difficulty, and was repulsed at Longueuil by the provincials, which obliged him to make the best of his way back to Quebec. Montgomery, who was at the time pushing on the siege of St. John's with great vigour, sent a letter to Major Preston to tell him of the event at Longueuil, and urged his surrender, in order to stay the effusion of blood. The Major endeavoured to negotiate for time, but at length he surrendered the fort on the 3rd of November, and Montgomery then immediately pushed forward to Montreal. Allen's party of patriots, whom General Carleton had foiled, had established themselves on a point of land, where they had erected batteries to prevent the escape of the armed vessels which lay at Montreal; so that on the approach of Montgomery, the situation of the British, whether in the town or on board the vessels, became so critical that on the 13th of November the capital of the Lower Province capitulated.

#### 6. THE PATRIOT ARMY FAIL IN AN ATTEMPT ON QUEBEC.

After a most toilsome march Colonel Arnold with his force about this time arrived at Point Levy, opposite Quebec. The capital of the Upper Province was in a state very ill qualified for defence. The



inhabitants, however, in dread of pillage, though discontented, waited to protect their property; and General Carleton opportunely arrived to take the command. He had escaped in a boat with muffled paddles from Montreal, and had successfully passed the batteries. On the 5th of December Montgomery appeared before Quebec, and immediately sent in a summons to the Governor, who refused to admit his flag or to allow of any communication; for General Carleton found himself at the head of about 1500 men in garrison, and commenced with vigour, obliging all those to quit the town who refused to take up arms in its defence. It does not appear that the besieging forces were a bit superior either in number or quality to the besieged, but Montgomery trusted to the effect of bluster, and having five small mortars he immediately opened a battery against the place, but it produced little effect. A few days later he opened a six-gun battery at about 700 yards' distance, but his metal was too light to produce any considerable result against such works as those at Quebec. Montgomery saw quickly that he had only fortune to depend upon, and undervaluing the spirit and disposition of the garrison, he determined upon a desperate attempt to carry the place by escalade. About five o'clock in the morning of the 31st of December, having divided his small force into four divisions, two of which were to make false attacks to distract and disconcert the defenders, Montgomery and Arnold led with great gallantry two principal attacks upon the upper and lower town. Carleton had received intelligence of the design, and was pretty well prepared for them. Montgomery advanced against the lower town, but the garrison was already alarmed before he could reach the place. He however pushed on along a most dangerous path, with a precipice to the river on one side, and a hanging rock over him; seized the first barrier, and at the head of his detachment marched boldly to attack the second. This barricade was defended by cannon, which plied the assailants with grape-shot, and with a well-directed and well-supported fire of musketry. The result was that General Montgomery with his aide-de-camp and most of his staff, together with many officers, were soon brought to the ground, and the command devolved on a Mr. Campbell, who immediately endeavoured to withdraw his men. In the mean time Arnold made the attempt at a part of the upper town called Saute à Matelot, and having penetrated through St. Roques, attacked a small but well-defended battery, which he carried with considerable loss, after an hour's sharp engagement; but these troops were also deprived of their commander, whose leg was shattered very early in the fight; and the detachment, who nevertheless obstinately defended themselves for three hours, were at length obliged to surrender themselves prisoners. The morning dawned without at first revealing any traces of the enemy, for the falling snow had thrown its mantle over the dying and the dead. Amongst the latter was found Richard Montgomery, the chief commander of this expedition. Although at this moment reckoned a traitor and a rebel by the royalists, he was a man of high character, and excellent abilities, which had obtained for him a large share of public esteem, as well as of private

affection. Sixteen years previously he had served under Wolfe at the conquest he was now endeavouring to acquire for the colonists. One of the most distinguished orators in the British senate, and even the minister himself, pronounced their eulogium upon his character, and in America he was revered as a martyr to their cause. He was interred in Quebec with all the honours due to a brave soldier, for Carleton was above the prejudices of the times and had treated his prisoners with great humanity, considering all enmity to be extinguished in their misfortune. Arnold, notwithstanding his wound, was at liberty, and at once succeeded to the command; he had indeed displayed uncommon talents in his march into Canada, and now proceeded to turn the siege into a blockade, and to obstruct the arrival of any supplies or provisions to the town during the whole winter. He immediately sent off to General Wooster, who was at Montreal, to bring up succour, while he himself kept the closest watch with his blockading force.

#### 7. THE SPANIARDS SEND AN EXPEDITION AGAINST ALGIERS.

The Old World had not for a long time been so free from commotion as it had been during this year, and it was reserved for the Spanish monarch to rouse the elements of discord. He chose this moment for chastising the Barbary powers for their hostility; and the preparations he made were so mighty, that they might well have alarmed those who were to be the object of them, for they were a cause of some anxiety to rival powers. The national resentment had been roused by a petty attack of the Emperor of Morocco against the troops under Melilla and Peñon de Velez; and this unprovoked aggression led to a determination in the Spanish cabinet either to exterminate altogether or awe into submission the whole nest of pirates on the Barbary coast. The expedition of the Spaniards was directed against Algiers, and after some delay was assembled at Carthage. It consisted of seven sail of the line of 74 guns each, eight of 40 guns each, and thirty-two frigates, with 400 transports, and 19,000 seamen and marines, under the command of Don Pedro Castejon. The military force on board this fleet was 22,000 infantry and 4000 cavalry, with 2000 artillerymen and 400 guns, and was commanded by Count O'Reilly. The armament arrived on the 1st of July in the Bay of Algiers, which place was well prepared to oppose it and for its own defence. There seems to have been some hesitation as to the best mode of effecting a disembarkation, for the neighbouring hills were observed to be covered with great bodies of Moors, who evinced the utmost eagerness to engage. The General's intention was to take possession of a hill which commanded a good place for landing, and forthwith to throw up such works there that might render it a secure place of arms. The troops of the first division, about 8000 men, were landed at four in the morning of the 7th of July, on the strand between the river Haratch and Algiers, and were strictly forbidden to quit the protection afforded by the guns of the shipping until the second debarkation should be effected; but the sight of the Moors, against whom the Spaniards cherished an here-

ditary and uncontrollable aversion, upset all discipline, so that with a temerity and contempt of command unaccountable in any military body, the first division that landed rushed forward to attack the enemy, and in a few minutes were in a hand to hand encounter with the Moors, who fell back and entangled them in the passes of the land, and so divided them that they were soon broken and driven back to the shore. The succeeding troops, as fast as they landed, ran to the succour of their comrades, whom they saw overpowered by the superior numbers and desperate courage of the enemy; and in this way the engagement lasted for thirteen hours, when the whole army must have been cut to pieces, had not the General hastily thrown up a slight intrenchment, behind which he could rally the fugitives; but the Spaniards were at length obliged to retire under cover of their ships, and found it necessary to take immediate advantage of the night for their re-embarkation. Fortunately the Moors wanted skill to harass them in this dangerous operation, and by daylight the last division of the Spaniards got on board the ships; but they left behind them sixteen guns and several chests of ammunition, together with 1500 slain. The wounded, who numbered 3000, were carried off; General O'Reilly and five or six other general officers being among the number. The Algerines were so exasperated that they cut off the heads of the wounded who were unable to reach the ships. Such was the end of this mighty expedition, and the fleet returned, to the great dissatisfaction of the Spanish nation, whose clamours against the General could only be appeased by his dismissal from the post of Governor of Madrid.

#### 8. WAR IN EGYPT.

This year proved fatal to the gallant old Sheik Daher in Syria. Abuzcheb, tempted by the fame of his great wealth, fitted out an expedition from Egypt against him, and with so overwhelming a force, that the Sheik could make no effective resistance in the field against his foe. His strong places were all taken from him; but in the midst of these successes Abuzcheb suddenly died. There seemed a hope that the Sheik's ancient good fortune would now have saved him, but at this critical time the Capudan Pacha arrived on the coast with a considerable force, completed the enterprise, got possession of the Sheik's person, sent his head to Constantinople, and seized his treasures. The numerous sons, family, and officers of the unfortunate Daher were hunted down with a rage heightened by the avarice which was continually sharpened by the discovery of fresh treasures, so that the pursuit only ended with the extermination of the whole race.

#### 9. WAR IN PERSIA.

The Porte in the last year, during the war with Russia, had thought it its interest to send an envoy to treat with Kerim Khan, who had attained to high command in Persia. This usurper had long been troublesome in the neighbourhood of Bussora, to which he laid claim in the name of the sovereign of Persia. His troops

besieged the city during the whole or the greater part of this year; and though they met with frequent repulses and losses, yet the means of relief being very remote, the siege was continued with great obstinacy.

#### 10. DISTURBANCES IN FRANCE.

Louis XVI. had scarcely ascended the throne, and had not yet been crowned, when the feelings of the people were excited on account of an edict of the parliament against the export of grain. The insurgents, being treated with all the leniency that belonged to the young King's character, actually forced their way to Versailles, when he had the weakness to appear in a balcony and promise to lower the price of corn to the people, thus already anticipating the sad scenes which marked the month of October, 1789. The government were at length permitted to employ force, and some poor wretches were executed, but the instigators of the revolt were never discovered.

### 1776.

1. AMERICAN WAR—THE PATRIOTS GAIN POSSESSION OF BOSTON.—  
 2. BLOCKADE OF QUEBEC RAISED.—3. AN ATTEMPT OF THE BRITISH ON CHARLESTOWN, SOUTH CAROLINA, FAILS.—4. DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.—5. BATTLE OF LONG ISLAND.—6. THE BRITISH TAKE NEW YORK.—7. BATTLE OF WHITE PLAINS.—8. THE BRITISH CAPTURE FORT WASHINGTON AND FORT LEE.—9. ACTION ON LAKE CHAMPLAIN.—10. SKIRMISH AT TRENTON.—11. THE INDIANS INTRODUCED BY THE BRITISH INTO THE WAR WITH THE PROVINCIALS.—12. EUROPEAN POWERS SYMPATHIZE WITH AND ASSIST THE PATRIOTS.—13. WAR BETWEEN PERSIA AND THE PORTE.

#### 1. AMERICAN WAR—THE PATRIOTS GAIN POSSESSION OF BOSTON.

General Gage had withdrawn from the command of the British troops in Boston during the past year, and the chief command of all the troops in North America had now devolved upon General Howe. In Boston the troops and the inhabitants were reduced to much distress during the winter for want of provisions and fuel; for various circumstances had disabled the coal-ships from getting into harbour; and the dearth of food in a town occupied by 80,000 blacks and 20,000 whites occasioned much anxiety. On the other hand, the provincials were well supplied within their lines, and were looking forward with earnest solicitude to the setting in of the frost, which might enable them to act. This usually takes place about Christmas; but the winter this year was uncommonly mild, and all hope of getting into the town or of capturing the fleet by an attack from the ice was frustrated. Their only hope now rested on a bombardment, which was calculated to add to all the difficulties which the British had to contend against within the town; but although Con-

gress urged on their General the speediest decision possible, he was obliged to reply, that, "If we have neither powder, nor ice, nor shell, we shall be in no better situation than we have been all the year." At length, most opportunely, one of the American privateers intercepted and captured an ordnance vessel from Woolwich containing a mortar upon a new construction, several pieces of fine brass cannon, and a large quantity of ammunition and military stores. With these, on the 2nd of March, a heavy cannonade and bombardment were opened on the town from Phipp's Farm and Dorchester, which lasted for forty-eight hours; and on the 5th Brigadier Thomas crossed the neck and took possession of Dorchester heights, from whence a new battery was immediately opened. Nothing was now left to Howe but to dislodge the enemy and destroy his works or abandon the town. He adopted the first course with his usual spirit and resolution, and five regiments, with the light infantry and grenadiers, were told off for the attack under Lord Percy; but the design was rendered impracticable by a violent storm which happened that night. The provincials, however, worked with great industry, and threw up a yet stronger intrenchment on Noal's Hill, opposite to the south end of Boston. The attack, therefore, was now deemed untenable, and the only alternative was to abandon the town, and convey the troops, artillery, and stores on board ship. General Howe accordingly caused General Washington to be informed, that if the fire continued any longer he must burn the town to cover his retreat, and the firing ceased immediately. No obstruction was now made by the patriots to the British preparations for departure: they saw with pleasure the triumph that awaited the cause of America by getting possession of the capital of New England. At length on the 17th of March Howe sailed away with some 150 ships and with all his forces. A mutual forbearance was exercised on this occasion, for while one commander left the town uninjured, the other was suffered to retire unmolested; and as the rear of Howe's army embarked, General Washington entered Boston with drums beating and colours flying, and in all the triumph of victory. He found in the town a quantity of cannon and ammunition that had been abandoned, to the value of 30,000*l.*, all which was of the greatest service to the provincials.

## 2. THE BLOCKADE OF QUEBEC RAISED.

During these transactions the blockade of Quebec continued; and on the 25th of this month the besieging troops encountered a party of Canadians, which had been embodied by M. Beaujeu with a view of raising the siege, and dispersed them without difficulty. The siege, however, was not carried on with either skill or spirit by General Wooster, so that the arrival of the "Isis" man-of-war with two sloops, which had forced their way through the ice, and had arrived at Quebec before the passage was deemed practicable, threw the besiegers into the greatest consternation. General Carleton was too experienced to lose this opportunity; and having received by these vessels some reinforcements, he marched out on the 6th of May

against the besieging force, who had neglected to cover themselves even by an intrenchment, all of whom fled precipitately, terminating the mixed siege and blockade, which had lasted for five months with neither credit nor success. A desultory campaign was, however, continued during the month of June, which ended in preserving Canada from further molestation from the republicans.

### 3. AN ATTEMPT OF THE BRITISH ON CHARLESTOWN, SOUTH CAROLINA, FAILS.

A squadron of five vessels had been sent out by Congress under the command of one Hopkins, who sailed away in March to the Bahama Islands, which he plundered, and conveyed away the governor and some other public officers as prisoners. On the return of this squadron they made several captures, and fell in at length with the "Glasgow" frigate, accompanied by a tender, which they took, while the frigate escaped with difficulty after a sharp engagement. A squadron under the command of Sir Peter Parker, in the "Bristol," 50, had sailed from Portsmouth on the 26th of December last year, but had been so much retarded by unfavourable weather, that it did not reach Cape Fear, in South Carolina, before the beginning of May. Sir Peter Parker's fleet consisted of the "Bristol," 50, the "Experiment," 50, the "Active," "Soleby," "Actæon," and "Syren" frigates, and one or two smaller armed vessels. At Cape Fear they found Sir Henry Clinton, who had already been at New York, and with Lord Dunmore in Virginia, but who finding that nothing could be done in either of those places with his small force, had come hither to wait for the arrival of the fleet. The British troops who now arrived were commanded by General Lord Cornwallis and Brigadier Vaughan, and now were united under Clinton. Sir Henry had left the patriot General Lee with a detachment of the provincial army at New York, and had been surprised to find him in position when he arrived in Virginia, yet now he again found him in Carolina preparing for the defence of Charlestown. The Americans had long exerted their utmost ability and ingenuity to put this place in a formidable state of defence. The English commanders agreed that, the time of the year being unfavourable in that sickly climate to take the field, they might employ the interval in making an attempt on Charlestown. They accordingly sailed from Cape Fear on the 1st of June, and the necessary steps for the attack were so vigorously and expeditiously taken, that the squadron arrived off the bar on the 4th of June. The first object was to pass the bar, after effecting which an attack was to be made against a fort upon Sullivan's Island, which commanded the access to Charlestown. The Carolinians had posted some forces with a few cannon near the extremity of this island, and General Lee was encamped with a considerable body of forces on the continent at the back and to the northward of it, with which he held communication by a bridge of boats. Some delay occurred in carrying the design into execution, so that it was the 28th of June before the Admiral made signal to the Generals that he would go in on the attack. The ships were sent

in about eleven o'clock to take their station between the island and the town, but by the unskilfulness of the pilot three of the frigates were entangled in the middle grounds, where they all stuck fast; the "Actæon" so firmly, that she could not be got off, and was only saved from capture by being scuttled and burned. The other ships were abreast of the fort nearly ten hours, and a brisk fire was maintained with such effect that it obliged the garrison to slacken their fire very much, and the provincials were several times more driven out by the sailors; but about six in the evening a much more considerable body returned and took possession, and they now renewed the fire from the few guns that were not dismounted. About nine in the evening the Admiral, hearing nothing of the land forces, withdrew from his moorings, for the seamen had looked frequently and impatiently to the eastward, expecting to see the land forces advance from Long Island; but, indeed, General Clinton, on landing his troops at Long Island, had found to his surprise that the communication with Sullivan's Island, instead of being a ford passable at low water, was seven feet deep, for which he was utterly unprepared, and therefore he could not render that assistance to the fleet that he intended. The "Bristol" had in the cannonade 111 men killed, and the "Experiment" seventy-nine. Captain Morris, who commanded the former, was mortally wounded; and the Commodore also received some contusions, and was almost the only man left in the ship not *hors du combat*, exhibiting a spectacle of intrepidity and firmness never exceeded. The loss of the provincials has not been stated; but Colonel Moultrie, who commanded the fort, received great and deserved applause for his distinguished defence of it.

#### 4. DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.

While these things were going on, a Congress constituted upon the most comprehensive principles of representation were deliberating on a most important measure, to obtain union and give vigour to the contest, and repel the danger of provincial isolation by the firm countenance of an independent state. Urged by the bolder of their partisans, it was determined to assume the form of a republic. The measure was gravely deliberated in each province; and at length a manifesto, written with more force than elegance, was issued on the 4th of July, boldly declaring the thirteen American colonies to be independent of the British Crown, by the style and name of the United States of America.

#### 5. BATTLE OF LONG ISLAND.

The British army that had embarked at Boston was conveyed to Halifax, where it was detained above two months waiting for reinforcements. Having no doubt that the British intended to direct their movements against New York, General Washington repaired thither in April, and established his head-quarters in that city on the 14th. Reinforcements were daily expected to arrive from England with Admiral Lord Howe, the brother of the General, who, as the summer advanced, grew impatient at the delay in their coming, and

probably was urged to take some decisive step by the scarcity of provisions. Accordingly, without waiting any longer for them, he departed, with Admiral Shuldham and the fleet and army, from Halifax about the 10th of June. On their passage they were joined by six transports with troops on board, who had become separated from their convoy on the voyage. The General found every approachable part of the island of Manhattan, on which New York is situated, strongly fortified, defended by a numerous artillery, and guarded by an entire army. The extent of Long Island did not admit of its being so strongly fortified or so well guarded, but it was nevertheless in a good state of defence, with a considerable force encamped upon it. Staten Island, being of less value and consequence, was less attended to, and here the British forces now disembarked without opposition on the 3rd of July. Lord Howe arrived at Halifax about a fortnight after his brother's departure, and forthwith proceeded to join him at Staten Island, where he arrived before the middle of July. It is difficult to ascertain with precision the amount of the British forces thus collected upon Staten Island under the command of Admiral Lord Howe and his brother the General. The New World had never seen such an armament on its shores before, in respect of the number and excellency of the troops, the abundant provision of all manner of military stores and warlike materials, and the force of artillery of all sorts with which it was provided. The Admiral's flag was hoisted on board the "Eagle," 64, at the head of a numerous fleet well adapted to the nature of the service. Besides their military powers, the two brothers were appointed commissioners from the British Parliament for restoring peace to the colonies, and for granting pardon to offenders. The first act, therefore, after Lord Howe's arrival was to send by a flag of truce an official letter giving information as to the powers thus entrusted to them, which letter was addressed "George Washington, Esq." The patriot General, accordingly, refused to receive it, insisting very properly upon the respect due to himself, and to the appointment he had received from his country; a conduct which was highly approved by the Congress, who forthwith moved "that he had acted with a dignity becoming his station." This attempt to conciliate the offended patriots proved abortive; the official reply to it being, "That they who had committed no fault wanted no pardon." This was the answer received by the Commissioners from Congress.

The month of August was considerably advanced before the whole of the forces were assembled at Staten Island: in the mean time they were joined by about 13,000 Hessians and Waldeckers, also by Sir Peter Parker and General Clinton, who were called up with the squadron and forces from South Carolina, and also by some regiments from Florida and the West Indies. No hope now remaining of an accommodation, the army moved forward on the 22nd of August, and was landed without opposition on Long Island, between Utrecht and Gravesend. General Putnam commanded a strong force encamped within lines at Brooklyn on the north coast, having the East River, which separated him from New York, on his left, a



marsh near Gowau's Cove on his right, and his rear covered from an attack from the English ships by some batteries on Red Hook and Governor's Island at their back. The armies were separated by a range of steep hills covered with wood, which intersect the island from east to west. General Putnam occupied these woody hills and all the passes through them, his posts being secured by a strong line of intrenchments defended by abattis and flanked by redoubts. Lord Cornwallis was directed to take the road through a village called Flatbush, where the hills commenced, and near which was one of the most important passes, but finding the enemy in possession of this with a redoubt, he acted upon his orders and halted, taking post in the village. When the whole army had landed, the Hessians under General Heister moved up to support Lord Cornwallis. Major-General Grant commanded the left wing of the army, which extended to the coast at Gowau's Cove; and the central portion of the British troops, with General Clinton and Earl Percy, approached the opposite coast at Flatland. Sir Henry Clinton and Sir William Erskine, having reconnoitred the American position, saw it would not be difficult to turn its left flank, and, accordingly, a combined movement during the night was determined upon. Howe ordered Clinton with one column to move in the direction of Bedford; and Grant was directed to attack Lord Stirling on the side of the sea, while General Heister was to march forward right in front as soon as he received his signal.

On the night of the 26th, while it was yet dark, the army raised their camp, and passing through the country called the "New Lots," arrived upon the road which crosses the hills from Bedford to Jamaica. Here they had the good fortune to seize a pass of the utmost importance, which they fortunately found unguarded. The engagement began at Flatbush early in the morning by the Hessians, and by General Grant on the coast; and at the same time the ships attacked a battery on Red Hook, as well to distract the right of the enemy as to call off their attention from the left and rear. The patriots were not apprised of their danger till they found the Hessians and General Grant's men upon them, when they attempted to retreat in tolerable order with their artillery, but soon found themselves intercepted by the British troops, who had passed through the hills, and who now furiously attacked them and drove them back into the woods. Here they were chased and driven about by the light infantry and dragoons, so that it was with difficulty any of them escaped. Such of them as did not choose to take to the woods, threw themselves into the marsh at Gowau's Cove, where many perished miserably in the mud, though some made their escape by this way to the lines. The ill success of the Americans has been thought to have been mainly owing to the circumstance that three or four generals were in command in the course of the day. General Greene, to whom the island had been entrusted, was sick. General Sullivan had then taken the command, but had been superseded by General Putnam. General Washington, who had passed the 26th at Brooklyn, had returned at night to New York, but again

returned in the middle of the day, and beheld with poignant grief the inextricable confusion in which the troops were involved, and ordered back all he could collect and form. Generals Sullivan, Udell, and Lord Stirling, with ten field-officers, were among the prisoners, together with about 1200 men. The loss of the British and Hessians was about 350 killed and wounded. The victorious army encamped in front of the lines at Brooklyn the same night, and on the 28th broke ground in form against them at 600 yards' distance. Washington having consulted with his officers determined to give up Long Island, and not to divide their forces nor risk the safety of their communications with their rear. Accordingly, on the night of the 29th the patriot troops were quietly withdrawn from their intrenchments, and, thanks to a thick fog on the morning of the 30th, the retreat was made across the East River without loss of men or ammunition, and with all their cannon and stores, except a few heavy pieces which they could not move in the rough ground. Washington issued a stirring address to his army, calling on them to remember that they were free men, fighting for the blessings of liberty, and amongst other things said, "Be cool, but determined; do not fire at a distance, but wait for orders, from your officers. It is the General's express orders that if any man attempt to skulk, lie down, or retreat without orders, he be instantly shot down as an example."—not bad military advice this to any army, young or old.

#### 6. THE BRITISH TAKE NEW YORK.

After another fruitless attempt at accommodation, the royal army being now only divided from the island of Manhattan by the East River, were impatient to pass that narrow estuary, and it soon became apparent to the American leaders, that a further retreat of their army from New York to some position in the interior, where their opponent could not derive advantage from his naval armament, had become desirable. Washington was, indeed, in a critical situation, with part of his army in the environs of the city and part at Kingsbridge, at the extremity of Manhattan Island. He began, therefore, to move all his stores from the city with great industry and activity. Early in the morning of the 15th of September three British ships of war came up the North River as high as Bloomingdale, which put a stop to any further removal of provision by water. Other ships seized the island of Montresor, near Hellgate, and erected a battery to silence one at Horens Hook: and in order to cover a landing in that part which was nearest to Manhattan Island, the first division of the army under the command of Clinton, with Lord Cornwallis and Generals Vaughan, Leslie, and Donop, embarked at Newtown Creek, covered by five ships of war, and proceeded to Keep's Bay, about three miles north of New York. Here they were less expected than elsewhere, and the preparations, though not neglected, were not very far advanced, but the fire from the ships was so terrible and so well sustained, that it was impossible to check the British advance, and their army landed without opposition. About eleven o'clock, Washington coming up to some breastworks which had been thrown

up between Turtle Bay and the city, found his troops retreating. He used every means to rally them and get them into order, but his attempts were fruitless and ineffectual, and those ordered up to their support ran off in every direction. On the appearance of some sixty or seventy soldiers on the height of Indenburg, these provincials fled away without firing a single shot. Under such circumstances the General became unusually agitated, and almost despaired of the preservation of the infant republic. "Are these the men," he exclaimed, "I am to defend America with?" New York was immediately taken possession of by a brigade of the British army, and the patriots retired to the heights of Haarlem, leaving their artillery, which was considerable, and their military stores of all kinds behind them.

General Howe had not been in possession of New York many days when, on the 25th of September, it was set on fire in different parts by some incendiaries, and nearly a third of the city was reduced to ashes. The patriot army still occupied strong works on the island of Manhattan, extending from shore to shore, near Kingsbridge, and Howe perceiving that no attempt could be made on the enemy in that position, which would not be attended with more danger than advantage, determined on a plan of operations which might force them out of it. Accordingly, about eight in the morning of the 9th of October, the "Roebuck," 44, the "Phoenix," 41, and a frigate of 20 guns, with two or three tenders, got under weigh from about Bloomingdale, where they had been lying, and stood towards the enemy's defences, which they forced through without the least difficulty, and without receiving much damage from the forts and batteries. On the 12th the greater part of the army embarked in flat-bottomed boats and small craft, and passed through the dangerous navigation of Hellgate, near the town of West Chester, upon the side of Connecticut. Earl Percy with two brigades of British continued opposite the lines of Haarlem to cover New York. General Washington, however, was not inattentive to the danger of his situation, and drawing in all his forces from the island (except a garrison in Fort Washington), possessed himself of the heights, passes, and advantageous grounds between New Rochelle and the North River. The British forces were then extended from Frog's Point opposite, and about ten miles eastward from New York, with their left upon a creek and their right near to Rochelle, being masters of the lower road to Connecticut and Boston: but if they now desired to gain the upper road it was necessary to advance to the high grounds called White Plains, a rough, strong, and mountainous tract, on which Washington had established his head-quarters.

#### 7. BATTLE OF WHITE PLAINS—THE BRITISH CAPTURE FORT WASHINGTON AND FORT LEE.

To prevent the British from outflanking them, the Americans occupied every height and strong ground behind the Bronx from Valentine's Hill on the right, to the White Plains on their left, and in this position they faced the whole line of the King's troops at a

moderate distance, the deep river flowing between the armies. On the 28th of October, about ten o'clock, the royal army formed in two several columns and marched towards the enemy, the right led by General Clinton, and the left by General Heister. Colonel Rahl, who commanded a brigade of Hessians on the left, crossed the Bronx, and took possession of a height on the other side of the river; he was immediately followed by the brigade under the command of Leslie, and some Hessians under Donop. While Colonel Rahl attacked in flank, the 28th and 35th regiments passed the river in a place more practicable, but under a severe fire; then ascending the steep hill, in defiance of all opposition, these two battalions, supported by the 5th and 49th, rushed upon the enemy with the bayonet, and took possession of their works. Other regiments now moved forward and formed up on the White Plains upon the road leading from Terrytown. Here the British lay upon their arms during the night, and intrenched themselves, holding the hill with a sufficient force till the arrival of Lieut-General Earl Percy from New York with his battalions, who came in on the 31st of October. The British loss at White Plains was Lieut.-Colonel Musgrave, commanding the light infantry, wounded; Lieut.-Colonel Cars of the 35th, and Captain Evelyn of the 4th regiment, killed; with twenty-three men killed and wounded. The patriots' loss was a lieut.-colonel killed, and about ninety men. The attack was deferred owing to the extremely wet state of the weather, but Washington was too prudent to await a general engagement, and finding Howe advancing his forces towards Kings-bridge and the North River, he broke up from White Plains on the 1st of November, and proceeded towards New Jersey. The British General seeing that the Americans refused a general engagement, determined to lose no further time, but to drive them out of their strongholds on Manhattan Island. For this purpose General Knyphausen obtained possession of Kings-bridge without opposition, on the 2nd of November, and took his station within cannon-shot of Fort Washington. This fort lay on the west side of the island, near Jeffery's Hook, and almost facing Fort Lee on the Jersey side. It was by no means a contemptible work, but not of sufficient strength to resist heavy artillery. It was garrisoned by Colonel Magaw with about 2000 men, and there were some lines and works round the fort, upon a commanding hill lying to the north of it, which had been thrown up by Washington on his retreat from New York. Magaw having refused the summons, four attacks were ordered to be made upon the fort and lines at the same time. The first was conducted by Knyphausen at the head of the Hessians and Waldeckers. The second, consisting of the guards and light infantry, was led by General Mathew, supported by Lord Cornwallis. These troops crossed the East River in boats under the protection of batteries erected to cover the landing of the troops. The third was commanded by Colonel Stirling with the 42nd regiment, intended as a feint to distract the enemy; and the fourth attack was conducted by Earl Percy with his whole corps, to assault the right flank of the enemy's intrenchments. These attacks, supported by a powerful and well-served

artillery, commenced about ten o'clock on the 16th of November. The Americans at first stood well and returned the British fire, but they were soon overpowered and forced to give way, and Colonel Cadwallader ordering his troops to retreat, they did so with so much confusion that a number of them were taken prisoners. Lord Percy succeeded in carrying an advanced work, and sent orders to Colonel Stirling to support him, who, bringing up the 42nd through a heavy fire with great perseverance, forced his way up a steep height where he took 170 prisoners, and this enabled Lord Percy to pass the lines opposite to him. The Hessians had a short wood to pass through, which much impeded them, but they nevertheless behaved with great firmness and bravery, and after a warm engagement, which lasted a considerable time, overcame their opponents, who retired under cover of the fort. Colonel Rahl pushed forward after them and lodged his column within a hundred yards of the works, where he was soon joined by General Knyphausen, who again summoned the fortress, and although Washington sent to direct Magaw to hold out, it was too late, for he had already surrendered with his garrison prisoners of war. The loss on either side was fairly proportioned to the length and severity of the action; that of the patriots in killed, wounded, and prisoners in all these engagements was nearly 5000, of whom three officers and fifty men were killed, and six officers and ninety wounded; the British lost about 130 killed, and 300 wounded.

After this acquisition a strong body of forces, under the command of Lord Cornwallis, passed over the North River in order to lay siege to Fort Lee, but on the 18th the garrison of 2000 men abandoned the fort, leaving the whole of the cannon undestroyed, and a great deal of baggage, tents, flour, and other stores. The British troops afterwards overran the greater part of the two provinces of Jersey, and extended their cantonments from New Brunswick to the Delaware. During these successes, General Clinton with a force of British and Hessians, and a squadron under the command of Sir Peter Parker, were sent to make an attempt upon Rhode Island. The expedition sailed on the 1st of December and arrived at Weaver's Bay on the 7th. General Prescott, supported by Lord Percy, landed and took a few prisoners and eight pieces of cannon, obliging the enemy to quit the island and retire to the continent. The island being then abandoned, it was taken possession of without resistance on the 8th of December. Hopkins's squadron, belonging to the patriots, remained blockaded in the harbour of Providence by the British ships, which, with the troops, passed the winter in this station.

Washington and his Congress now became fugitive, and the latter sought refuge in Maryland. It was the darkest hour of America, and to most men it seemed as if all were over with her cause. Among the smaller incidents which added to the gloom of the patriots was the capture of General Lee. This officer being on his march with the few men he could keep together to join General Washington, took up his quarters in New Jersey, at some distance from his main

body. Intelligence of this having reached Colonel (afterwards Lord) Harcourt, he pushed forward with a party of light horse on the 13th of December, and eluding the guard and seizing the sentries, carried off the General with a rapidity that prevented any rescue.

#### 8. ACTION ON LAKE CHAMPLAIN.

General Carleton was too full of zeal to remain inactive after freeing Canada from the provincial intruders, and determined to carry the war into the enemy's country, for it was indeed part of the plan of the campaign that had been arranged with General Howe. Very great exertions were become requisite to equip a naval force to act on the lakes. A fleet of about thirty fighting-vessels of different kinds and sizes, all furnished with cannon, was, as it were, to be created, and transported overland and down rapids, the whole presenting a complexity of labour almost sufficient to appal even the spirit of British seamen and soldiers. This equipment was nevertheless completed in about three months; but it was not until the month of October that the fleet was in a condition to seek the enemy on Lake Champlain. The armament was under the conduct of Captain Pringle, who hoisted his flag as Commodore on board the ship "Inflexible," 18, having under his command two schooners, ten flat-bottomed rafts mounting 12-pounders, besides howitzers, and twenty smaller vessels or gunboats, navigated by above 700 seamen. The enemy had not been inactive during the preparations required for this armament, but with assiduity, perseverance, and spirit they had got together some fifteen vessels of different kinds, with a superior schooner mounting six guns, all under the command of Benedict Arnold, now recovered from his wounds, and prepared to support on a new element the renown he had already acquired in his land expedition to Canada. On the 11th of October the two squadrons came in sight of each other; the Americans, advantageously posted to defend the passage between Valicour and the main, were so well placed behind the island that the King's squadron nearly passed by without seeing the ships, which might have been attended with serious consequences to them. As soon, then, as they came in sight of each other the fight began; but the wind being unfavourable for a considerable time, the gunboats alone could be brought into action. The big British ships could not be well worked up to the enemy, and the force of the contest fell so unequally upon the others, that although he had burned the best schooner opposed to him, and sunk others, Captain Pringle with the concurrence of Carleton, who was on board his ship, withdrew the gunboats, and brought his whole fleet into line as near as possible to his opponents in order to prevent their retreat. This purpose was nevertheless frustrated by the extreme darkness of the night, under which the patriot squadron got a considerable distance up the lake, and was out of sight of the British by the morning; chase was immediately given, and they were at length overtaken, and brought again to action about noon on the 13th, a few leagues short of Cove Point. A very warm engagement now ensued for two hours, during which some of the vessels escaped to Ticonderoga; but two galleys

and five gondolas (under Arnold) remained and made a desperate resistance, until hopeless of the issue, and determined that neither he nor his people should be prisoners, nor his ships a prey to the enemy, he ran them on shore in such a manner that the men were landed in safety, and the vessels blown up, notwithstanding every exertion to prevent both. Arnold, it is said, was very nearly taken on this occasion by young Pellew, afterwards Lord Exmouth, who chased him in a boat on the lake so closely, that when he got to shore and ran off he left his stock and buckle behind him, which are said to be still in the possession of the Pellew family. The "Washington" galley struck during the action, and Crown Point was evacuated and burned, so that Carleton only got possession of some ruins, where, however, he remained with his whole force for a month; but as the season was too far advanced to force the post of Ticonderoga, or to hold it if it were obtained, the General now re-embarked his whole force and returned to Canada.

#### 9. SKIRMISH AT TRENTON.

The British army under Sir William Howe had gone into cantonments, forming an extensive chain from Brunswick on the Rariton to the Delaware. Colonel Rahl, with a portion of the Hessians, was at Trenton on the latter river; Colonel Donop, with the remainder, lay at Bordentown, a few miles lower down, and at Burlington, still lower, and within twenty miles of Philadelphia. In this state of affairs a bold and spirited enterprise, which showed more of brilliancy than of strategy, changed the whole fortune of the war. General Washington apprehended, perhaps with justice, that as soon as the ice would afford the means of conveyance the British would advance on Philadelphia, which he endeavoured to protect with his army. Having his camp above the falls near Trenton, he observed that the Germans were enjoying themselves in a fancied state of perfect security, with great licence and laxity of discipline, and he determined to beat up their quarters. On the evening of the 25th of December he ordered the troops intended for this service to pass the Delaware, in order that they might arrive at Trenton by five in the morning. But the quantity of ice on the water impeded the passage so much that it was already four before the troops had got over and could resume their line of march. It was, however, too late to recede; and he accordingly formed his detachment into two divisions, the one to march by the lower or river road, and the other by the upper or Pennington road. Both arrived together about eight o'clock at the enemy's camp, and, notwithstanding the delay and the daylight, the Hessians seemed to have no knowledge of their approach, but finding themselves attacked in two places at once, were thrown into disorder. They were, indeed, quite undetermined how to act until Colonel Rahl, putting himself at the head of the main body, charged the enemy; in this charge, however, he was mortally wounded; and the troops, altogether shaken by this event, attempted to file off by a road on their right leading to Princeton, leaving their artillery behind. Here, however, they found a body of the patriots in

their way ready to check them; and thus, finding themselves surrounded, the three regiments of Lossberg, Rahl, and Knyphausen laid down their arms, to the number of nearly 1000 men; while only a few officers of the chasseurs and 200 men from the brigade escaped towards Bordentown, where they joined Colonel Donop. The ice had prevented Generals Ewing and Cadwallader from passing the river, but they now assisted in enabling their comrades to bring the prisoners and cannon across. The loss of the patriots was only two officers and two privates wounded. On the side of the British several officers were wounded and about forty men. The arrival of the runaways struck such alarm in Colonel Donop, who commanded at Bordentown, that he immediately decamped, and retired towards South Amboy. Washington, who had laid his account only to make a surprise at Trenton, was by this fortunate enterprise enabled to recross the Delaware with a very respectable force, and now ordering Generals McDougall and Maxwell, who were at Morristown, to follow him with as large a body of militia as they could collect, he looked to driving the enemy altogether out of the Jerseys. The force he had collected was about 3400 men, with which he crossed the river on the 29th; but the alarm had now spread in the British army; General Grant immediately got together his forces at Princeton, whilst Lord Cornwallis, who had gone to New York on his way to England, returned to defend the magazines at Brunswick and to oppose the further attempts of Washington.

#### 10. THE INDIANS INTRODUCED BY THE BRITISH INTO THE WAR WITH THE PROVINCIALS.

In another quarter and against a very different enemy the colonists were now called upon to defend themselves. The British agents had been very active in instigating the Indian tribes in the Creek, Chickesaw, and Cherokee countries, which border on the southern colonies, to invade the Carolinas and Virginia. These tribes accordingly fell upon the unfortunate inhabitants with great fury, carrying ruin and desolation wherever they went, scalping and destroying the people, and ruining their settlements. At length the militias of the invaded provinces took up arms, and drove back the savages, inflicting such severe chastisement that the Cherokees applied to the Creeks to come to their aid; but these had with a foresight uncommon among Indians opportunely stopped short, and replied, "That those who had plucked the thorn out of their foot were welcome to keep it."

It was known that the provincials were in great dread of these Indians from their desolating manner of making war, and they were therefore employed by the mother country at great labour and expense from every dark corner of the continent. This plan of enlisting the American Indians into the war was denounced by the two most distinguished men in the British Parliament, who brought against it in both houses an array of reasoning and eloquence without any parallel. Mr. Burke's speech in the Commons is lost to posterity; all that is known of it is that it lasted three and a half hours in its delivery:



but that of Lord Chatham has been preserved. "Who is the man," exclaimed the noble Lord in almost his last speech, "who has dared to authorize and associate to our arms the tomahawk and scalping-knife of the savage? Who dares to assert that these are the arms put into our hands by God and nature? These abominable principles and this most abominable avowal of them demand the most decisive indignation. I call upon the bishops to interpose the unsullied sanctity of their lawn, I call upon the judges to interpose the purity of their ermine, to save us from this pollution. I call upon the honour of your lordships to reverence the dignity of your ancestors and to maintain your own. I call upon the spirit and humanity of my country to vindicate the national character. I invoke the genius of the constitution. From the tapestry that adorns these walls I can imagine the immortal ancestor of the noble lord who has confessed and avowed these principles, to frown with indignation on this disgrace of his descendant. I am old, my lords, and weak, and unable to say more, but my feelings and indignation would not permit me to say less. I could not have slept this night in my bed, nor reposed my head upon my pillow, without expressing my eternal abhorrence of such enormous and detestable principles."

#### 11. EUROPEAN POWERS SYMPATHIZE WITH AND ASSIST THE PATRIOTS.

At this time Europe was in general enjoying a state of general tranquillity, for although troops were moving on the Spanish and Portuguese frontiers, on some dispute respecting the limits of the possessions of the two crowns in South America, no collision as yet took place between them. Public attention was therefore fixed almost exclusively upon the struggle going on in America, and the sympathy of all the European governments was unhesitatingly expressed in favour of the American cause; not so much, as may be believed, through approbation of its principles, as from jealousy and dislike to Great Britain.

The Bourbon courts openly avowed their inclinations. The French and Spanish ports were freely opened to American ships; and the American privateers, which were now greatly increased in number, were allowed to dispose of their prizes in them. Artillery and military stores were sent either as gifts or objects of sale to the Americans, and several French engineers and other officers entered their service. The British ministry remonstrated in vain, and at length determined to put sixteen more ships of the line into commission. Either this or the prospect of gaining advantage in the dispute going on, brought about great military preparations in France, particularly on the coast, where large naval armaments were preparing.

#### 12. WAR BETWEEN PERSIA AND THE PORTE.

The war between Persia and the Porte still continued, and the ancient, venerable, and once great city of Bussora was, after a siege of more than twelve months, compelled by sickness and famine to submit to the Persian commander on the 16th of April. In a subse-

quent attempt, however, to reduce the city and province of Bagdad, the Persian troops were routed with great slaughter.

### 1777.

1. AMERICAN WAR—AFFAIR AT PRINCETON.—2. SIR WILLIAM HOWE TRIES IN VAIN TO DRAW WASHINGTON FROM HIS DEFENSIVE POSITION.—3. THE BRITISH SEND AN EXPEDITION BY SEA TO THE DELAWARE AND CHESAPEAKE.—4. BATTLE OF BRANDYWINE AND CAPTURE OF PHILADELPHIA.—5. SOME FOREIGNERS OF DISTINCTION JOIN THE PATRIOT ARMY.—6. THE BRITISH FLEET AND ARMY FORCE THEIR WAY UP THE DELAWARE.—7. FORTS MONTGOMERY AND CLINTON ON THE HUDSON TAKEN BY CLINTON.—8. GENERAL BURGOYNE ADVANCES ON TICONDEROGA, WHICH IS CAPTURED.—9. COLONEL ST. LEGER FAILS BEFORE FORT STANWIX.—10. BURGOYNE CROSSES THE HUDSON.—11. SURRENDERS WITH HIS WHOLE FORCE TO GENERAL GATES.—12. WAR BETWEEN SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.—13. WAR IN THE CRIMEA.—14. WAR IN PERSIA.

#### 1. AMERICAN WAR—AFFAIR AT PRINCETON.

As soon as Lord Cornwallis had rejoined the army at Princeton, on the 2nd of January, he meditated an attack on the enemy, whom he found in a strong position, formed at the back of Trenton Creek, being in possession of the bridge and other passages which were well covered with artillery. In anticipation of such an attack Washington had called in the detachments of Cadwallader from Crosswicks, and Mifflin from Bordentown, amounting in the whole to about 3600 men, who joined his camp the previous day. The British attempted to pass the Assumpinck, which runs through Trenton, but finding the fords guarded they halted, and a cannonade ensued on both sides that continued till night. Seeing the superiority of force against him and fearing to be surrounded, Washington determined to avoid a general engagement, but resolved to fall suddenly on his enemy, and try by a fortunate stroke to induce General Howe to withdraw from Trenton. A brigade of the British troops under Brigadier Leslie lay that night at Maidenhead, six miles from Trenton, and another was on its march from Brunswick, under the command of Lieut.-Colonel Mawhood, who was planned to arrive at Princeton, about the same distance beyond Maidenhead, in the morning. In the dead of the night, therefore, keeping up the fires of his encampment, and leaving small parties to go the rounds to avoid suspicion, Washington marched with the greater part of his troops (making a considerable circuit by Allentown) towards Princeton, which he reached about sunrise, and found there to his surprise the 17th and 55th regiments, with some light horse, under Mawhood, which had just effected their march. The foginess of the early morning and the circumstances

of the ground prevented the British commander from having a proper idea of the force which thus suddenly appeared in his path; but, considering it to be only some flying party sent to interrupt his march, he made a most gallant resistance, and by dint of the bayonet forced his way through the American ranks and pursued his march to Maidenhead with the 17th. The 55th retired by way of Hillsburgh to Brunswick, where the 40th also joined them. Mawhood left about seventeen killed on the field, and about 250 wounded and missing, fourteen being British officers of high rank; and two brass field-pieces were captured. The patriots suffered considerably, and General Mercer, Colonels Haght and Potter, and other officers, with about thirty men, were slain on the field. In pursuing Mawhood, the Americans came up with the detachment from Maidenhead, who would have retaliated upon them, but that Washington had had the precaution to destroy the bridge over Stoneybrook in Leslie's rear, which gave him time to move off in good order to Pluckemin, but they were thus prevented from carrying off the two guns they had taken, and could only burn and destroy some hay and other trifling stores. Generals Howe and Lord Cornwallis were certainly much shaken by these dashing inroads into the middle of their troops, and fearing for their magazines and military chest at Brunswick, they determined to withdraw from both Trenton and Princeton without halting, taking up cantonments for the rest of the winter in New York, Long Island, and the adjacent parts of New Jersey. Washington therefore overran the whole province and seized Newark, Elizabeth Town, and Morristown, so that the royal army retained no more ground than that about the two ports of Brunswick and Amboy, situated on the Rariton, which held an open communication with New York by the sea. The great difficulty experienced by the provincial army was the indisposition of the soldiers to the service, who were soon tired of the labours of it, and ardently desired to return to their homes. Congress therefore endeavoured to remedy this by establishing engagements for seven or eight years, instead of voluntary service.

General Howe was assiduous in collecting a militia force from the districts still favourable to the cause of the crown, which he placed under the command of Governor Tryon, to whom he gave the commission of major-general. He now resolved upon employing that officer with the troops he had thus raised on an expedition against the principal magazines of the enemy, which had been established in a mountainous tract called the Manor of Courtland, to which a place called Peckshill served as a kind of post on the river. On the 23rd of March a detachment of 500 men commanded by Colonel Bird, under the protection of a frigate and some armed vessels, was sent up to this place, which was immediately abandoned by the enemy. The magazines, which, however, were not found of the importance and magnitude expected, were all destroyed, and the expedition re-embarked and returned. It was now reported to the General that there were deposited large quantities of stores and provisions at the town of Danbury, on the shores of Connecticut, contiguous to Court-

land Manor. An expedition was accordingly fitted out under General Tryon, assisted by Brigadiers Agnew and Sir William Erskine, consisting of about 2000 men, which under convoy of a proper naval armament was landed near Norwalk on the Sound, on the 25th of April, and advanced the following day without interruption to Danbury. They soon perceived, however, that the country was rising to intercept their return, and they accordingly hastened to the destruction of the stores, in which service the town was unavoidably burned, and on the 27th the troops set off on their return by way of Ridgefield. Upon this, Generals Wooster, Arnold, and Silliman hastily collected some militia from different quarters, and by every possible means interrupted their march. Wooster hung upon the rear of the detachment: he was an old and experienced officer, who had served with reputation in former wars, and who, at an age approaching seventy, was still active in every exertion of valour; but in one of these skirmishes he was mortally wounded. Arnold got possession of Ridgefield before the royal troops, and in less than an hour's time had thrown up a sort of breastwork to cover his front. The village was, however, soon forced by the courage and discipline of the British; but Arnold's horse was shot under him, and he himself very narrowly escaped being transfixed with a bayonet. Tryon encamped that night at Ridgefield and renewed his march on the 28th, but by this time the provincials were reinforced with troops and cannon, and every advantageous post was seized and disputed, while parties hovered on the flank and rear of the British detachment. At length the British gained the hill of Campo within cannon-shot of the ships, and the General formed up his little army and ordered them to the charge, which checked the enemy, so that the troops were enabled to re-embark without molestation. The British in this expedition lost a few men, but no officer on their side was killed; still the effect of it scarcely answered the risk, for the stores found and destroyed were not by any means of the extent and importance that they had supposed or had been represented.

On the 23rd of May an expedition was planned by the provincials, under Colonel Meigs, who made a dash at Jagg Harbour, burned a dozen vessels lying at the wharfs, and carried off about ninety prisoners.

## 2. SIR WILLIAM HOWE TRIES IN VAIN TO DRAW WASHINGTON FROM HIS DEFENSIVE POSITION.

It was the policy and scheme of the British commanders to effect a union of the two branches of their army from New York and Canada, and thus disjoin the New England states from the rest of the confederation. To prevent such a result, a division of the American army at first under command of General Schuyler, and afterwards of General Gates, was stationed in the vicinity of Lake Champlain, to prevent any irruption from the side of Canada. Towards the end of May, Washington quitted the position he had held through the winter in the neighbourhood of Morristown, and established himself at Middlebrook, whence he commanded a view of the British encampment on the hills of Brunswick, and of

much of the country towards Amboy. Here he fortified the ground he occupied with many natural and artificial defences, and well covered his works with artillery. At length it became apparent to Sir William Howe, that as matters stood he could neither hope to penetrate through Washington's forces to the Delaware, nor to draw off that General's army from the Hudson, so as to give an opportunity for the army from Canada, now under the command of General Burgoyne, to advance against Albany. He thought therefore to make a feint of removing his army from New York to some more southern point, and thus make it necessary for the American General to concentrate and collect his forces for the defence of the coast he proposed to threaten: by this scheme the northern division of the American army would be left unprotected, and would fall a prey to the British troops advancing from Canada. He accordingly embarked a considerable force in the ships. On the 31st of May Washington advertised Patrick Henry in Virginia, that a fleet of some 100 vessels had stood out to sea from New York, suggesting every precaution in case it should be designed for an invasion of the country in the Delaware Bay. Some idea of such an expedition was probably entertained; but Howe finding that all his pretended embarkations and re-embarkations were ineffectual to allure Washington from his position, determined now on other expedients. About the middle of June, having received reinforcements of British and German recruits, Sir William passed over to the Jerseys, and made the most vigilant reconnaissance of the position of the American army, hoping that some weak or unguarded part might be found, upon which an attack could be ventured with a probability of success. But Washington was not here to be circumvented, and on the 13th of June Howe tried another expedient by suddenly breaking up his army and beginning a march from Brunswick, seemingly with an intention to push directly upon the Delaware. On the 19th they returned to Brunswick again, but on the 21st the British evacuated Brunswick altogether and retired to Amboy. The Americans under General Greene now advanced briskly after them, but Howe established a bridge over the channel which separates the continent from Staten Island, by which the heavy baggage and all the incumbrances of the army were passed over, and every thing being left clear for the passage of the troops, they were soon after crossed over and threw themselves into redoubts which they had constructed. Washington, with all his caution and penetration, was so far imposed upon by this feint, that he quitted his secure post upon the hills and advanced to Quibbleton, a place nearer at hand, for the protection of his advanced parties, who were sent close to the enemy's lines to watch their motions. The British General lost no time in endeavouring to profit by this circumstance, and on the 26th he marched his army back with great expedition to Amboy. He hoped to cut off some of the American advanced parties, and bring them to a general action. Lord Cornwallis in taking a considerable circuit to the right fell in with Lord Stirling, who with about 3000 men was strongly posted in a woody country near Westfield: here the

British guards not only routed this party, but captured from them three field-pieces; and having got possession of the town, they remained there the night, and then moved towards Samptown. On this advance of Sir William Howe, Washington withdrew his army again from the plains and recovered his strong camp on the hills, and the British General became convinced that his opponent was too firmly attached to this defensive system to be induced to hazard a battle. Accordingly on the 30th of June the British army totally evacuated Amboy, and encamped opposite to it on Staten Island. No art could entice, and no power could drive Washington from the position he had so skilfully assumed, which prevented at once the movement of his enemy on Philadelphia, or any attempt by the British General to give his hand, on the waters of the Hudson, to the force approaching Ticonderoga under Burgoyne. At last Sir William Howe concluded that nothing short of a real *bonâ fide* invasion of a southern district could draw the American General from his ground, and he therefore determined to abandon any further manœuvring, and to transport his whole army with a view to make a descent on some point of the coast.

During the preparations which were accordingly made towards this object a spirited adventure occurred, which had probably a considerable influence on the fate of General Lee, who having, as has been related, fallen into the hands of the English cavalry, was regarded as a deserter from the British army, and lay in durance, threatened with the extreme punishment of such an offence. Colonel Barton, a provincial, stationed at Providence in Rhode Island (where the British General Prescott had his quarters), crossed to the island by night on the 10th of July, and eluding the watchfulness of the ships of war and guard-boats, surprised that General, and brought him and his aide-de-camp prisoners to the continent, thus securing a pledge of equal value for the safety of the American captive.

### 3. THE BRITISH SEND AN EXPEDITION BY SEA TO THE DELAWARE AND CHESAPEAKE.

It was not until the 23rd of July that Sir William Howe could embark at Sandy Hook thirty-six British and Hessian battalions, with artillery and one regiment of light cavalry, all of whom on that day set sail on an expedition to the south. He left seventeen battalions and a regiment of cavalry at New York under General Clinton, while Rhode Island was still occupied with seven battalions. This movement of Howe's caused great embarrassment to Washington from the difficulty of getting any insight into the probable destination of the expedition. He ordered the most vigilant look-out to be kept at the Capes of the Delaware; and still fearing that it was intended for the Hudson River to co-operate with Burgoyne's advance, he detached Lord Stirling with his division to Peckshill. At one time the ships stood up towards the North River; they then went up the Sound, and at last went out of the Hook. On the 30th of July the British fleet arrived at the Capes of the Delaware; when Washington instantly broke up from his position in Jersey, and ordered the two brigades of General

Putnam to march off through Morristown to the Cloor, a narrow pass leading through the highlands about eighteen miles from the river, and over Moryell's Ferry towards Philadelphia. On the 31st, however, the fleet sailed out of the Capes, taking an easterly course; and the American General, in much anxiety lest Howe should fall back to the Hook, and thus gain possession of his highland position by a *coup-de-main*, ordered back all his troops, and called out the militia under Governor Trumbull to prevent this movement. But this marching and countermarching of his troops in the extreme heat harassed Washington exceedingly and gave him the greatest anxiety. Nothing was now heard of Howe till the 22nd of August; and in the interval Washington was effectually puzzled in his attempts to penetrate the mysterious intentions of the British commander. On this day an express came to hand that the fleet had doubled Swan Point, and entered Chesapeake Bay at least 200 miles distant from the Capes. The patriot General now saw clearly that there was no danger of a junction with Burgoyne, and he forthwith ordered all the preparations made against Howe to be directed against the force from Canada. He had no longer any doubt that the object of the British General was to withdraw him from the support of General Gates, in order that the advancing and confident army of Burgoyne might advance with less opposition upon Albany.

#### 4. BATTLE OF BRANDYWINE AND CAPTURE OF PHILADELPHIA.

Washington had, nevertheless, to meet Sir William Howe with all the strength he could collect. On the 23rd he moved to Philadelphia, whence he proceeded to Wilmington, and on the 26th he went himself to the head of the Elk to get news of the enemy. On the 25th of August Howe disembarked his troops on the banks of the Elk River in Chesapeake Bay, and occupied Iron Hill and Gray's Hill with his encampment. They were not so quick in their movements but that large public stores of corn and salt were moved away in teams before they could be got at, by the activity of the people of the country. On the 6th of September he had advanced inland about seven miles, and the two armies were not above eight or nine miles apart from each other. Some rather sharp skirmishing soon took place between the advanced posts. Suspecting it to be the intention of Howe to get between them and Philadelphia, the patriots on the 9th retired beyond the Brandywine River, which falls into the Delaware near Newcastle. Here they took possession of the heights and covered the fords, with an evident intention to dispute the passage of the river. On the 11th Sir William Howe ordered the troops forward in two columns, under Lord Cornwallis and General Knyphausen, to proceed to Chad's Fort. Washington, on receiving intelligence of this, ordered General Sullivan to move to his right with about 10,000 men, who took up a commanding position above Birmingham Church, with his left near the Brandywine, both flanks being covered by very thick woods and his artillery advantageously posted.

About four o'clock the King's troops advanced against this position in

## 192 DISTINGUISHED FOREIGNERS JOIN THE PATRIOTS. [A.D.]

two columns. General Knyphausen, to amuse and deceive the enemy, made a feint to attempt the passage at Chad's Ford. Here, however, he encountered Generals Wayne and Maxwell, and had some severe fighting. Lord Cornwallis, taking a circuitous march to the left, gained the fork of the river, where the division of the waters rendered the passage easier. It was at Rink's and Jefferey's Fords that he got his people across; but Washington had not prepared against this passage, and accordingly they encountered no opposition here. Cornwallis formed his men, after getting across, in two lines, with a brigade in reserve. The light infantry and chasseurs now began the attack; and the guards and grenadiers, under a heavy fire of artillery and musketry, pushed up the opposing hill with an impetuosity not to be sustained by the enemy, who fell back into the woods followed by the King's troops. The pursuit continued for nearly two miles, when the pursuers came upon a second line, which had not been engaged. Here a very warm contest ensued; but the post was so vigorously defended, that it was some time after dark before the patriots could be induced to give way. The greater portion of them retired upon Chester, where they remained that night. The defeated troops lost about 300 killed, 600 wounded, and 400 prisoners, with ten brass field-pieces and a howitzer on the field. The British had eight officers and seventy-four men killed, and 400 wounded. The result was that Knyphausen, after successfully amusing the force opposed to him all day with the apprehension of an attack, made good his passage at Ewing, and carried the intrenchment which defended Chad's Fort with all it contained.

On the 18th of September, upon intelligence that General Wayne was in the woods with some 1500 men and four pieces of cannon, Major-General Grey was detached with the 42nd and 44th regiments to surprise them. Directed by the light of their fires at night, they forced the out-posts and pickets and rushed upon the encampment, killing and wounding not less than 300 on the spot, and taking several officers and about eighty men prisoners; but the Americans carried off their guns in the dark, and hastily decamped. On the 25th the King's army marched in two columns to Germanstown, and Lord Cornwallis with his detachment took possession of Philadelphia the next morning.

### 5. SOME FOREIGNERS OF DISTINCTION JOIN THE PATRIOT ARMY.

Washington was aided for the first time at the battle of Brandywine by the presence of some bold and enterprising foreigners who had been induced by an enthusiasm for liberty, and some hereditary hatred for Great Britain, to cross the Atlantic and give consistency and courage to the cause of her rebellious colonies. Among the first was Casimir Pulawski, a Polish count, who, losing all hope for the independence of his own country, lent his sword to the young liberty of America, and here led to the charge a regiment of cavalry of which the patriots had given him the command. With him was Kosciusko, young in years and distinction at this time, but who was at first employed by Washington as an adjutant, until his distinguished ser-



vices obtained for him the rank of general; and the Marquis de la Fayette, a French nobleman of foremost rank and fortune, who had but just landed at Charlestown, and who had already received from Congress a brevet of major-general. La Fayette was severely wounded in the leg on this occasion: he was accompanied by many French officers, and especially by Captain Fleury, who afterwards gained some distinction, and by the Baron St. Ovary, another Frenchman, who was among the prisoners taken by the British at Brandywine.

#### 6. THE BRITISH FLEET AND ARMY FORCE THEIR WAY UP THE DELAWARE.

The British army had been but two days in Philadelphia when the American frigate "Delaware," 32, came up within 500 yards of their batteries and opened a heavy cannonade against them; but this was vigorously returned, and she was soon disabled by a shot, and driven on shore. The patriots had with much labour and industry constructed great and numerous works, to render the ascent of the Delaware impracticable. One fort was constructed on Mud Island, at the junction of the Schuylkill, and another at Red Bank, on the opposite shore of New Jersey, and they had sunk in the waters of the river great frames of transverse beams of wood shod with iron, which they called *chevaux de frise*, of such weight as not to be raised or moved while the banks were in the hands of an enemy. But no sooner was Lord Howe apprised of the success at Brandywine, and of the possession of Philadelphia, than he took the most effectual measures for bringing the fleet and transports round the Capes, and conducting them up the river, in order to concur in the further operations of the campaign. The Congress were obliged to remove their sessions to Lancaster, about sixty miles off, where, on a creek of the Susquehanna, they were in full security; but the British troops were pushed across the Schuylkill on the 22nd, and hoped to cut off Generals Wayne and Smallwood, who had been left behind, but they effectually eluded all pursuit. The next object of the British was the town of Reading, where there was a depôt of military stores, but Washington took up a camp near Pottsgrove to protect them, at the same time that he planned the throwing of a garrison into Fort Mifflin to maintain the obstructions of the river. On a representation to the Admiral by Captain Hammond, of the "Roebuck," in regard to these impediments, an attack was made on the 1st of October by some of the ships, and a military detachment was sent under Colonel Stirling, to dislodge the enemy from Billingsfort and the forts on the Delaware. Upon this the patriots, without waiting to be attacked, spiked all the guns, set fire to the barracks, and abandoned the forts; and Captain Hammond succeeded, in spite of every opposition, in weighing so much of the *chevaux de frise*, as opened a narrow and difficult passage for the ships to pass up the river.

Washington, on the 3rd of October, having by this time received a reinforcement of 1500 men from Peckskill, and 1000 from Virginia, and presuming that his opponents were weakened by the detachments they were sending out, thought the opportunity favour-

able to make an attack on the British, who lay at Germanstown, about six miles above the city of Philadelphia, their left wing extending to the Schuylkill. This village forms one continued street for two miles, and the British encampment crossed it at right angles, at a spot occupied by the 2nd battalion of light infantry, and the 40th regiment. The plan of the American attack was for the divisions of Sullivan and Wayne to enter the village by the way of Chesnut Hill, while General Armstrong with the Pennsylvania militia should get upon the left and in the rear. Greene's and Stephenson's divisions, flanked by McDougall's brigade, were to enter by the market-house and attack the right wing, and the Maryland and Jersey militias were to fall upon its rear. Lord Stirling with two brigades remained in reserve. At three o'clock in the morning the British patrols discovered the enemy's approach, and the army was immediately ordered under arms. The attack began soon after break of day upon the light infantry and the 40th, who, overpowered by numbers, retreated into a stone building called the Chew House, under the command of Lieut.-Colonel Musgrave, where they gallantly defended themselves in the face of a whole brigade with four guns, giving them no small annoyance from the windows, which in a great measure obstructed the advance of the enemy's other troops. At length Major-General Grey came up at the head of three battalions of the 3rd brigade, supported by Brigadier Agnew with the 4th brigade, who at once vigorously attacked and repulsed the enemy with great slaughter. At the same time the 5th and 55th regiments engaged the provincials on the right on the other side of the village, and Major-General Grant, who was on that flank, moved up the 49th and 4th regiments with four pieces of cannon, who forced the enemy's left to give way, and pursued them four or five miles. The American cannon were saved by being sent off early in the encounter in waggons; but their loss in killed and wounded exceeded 1000, including General Nash and many officers, of whom there were fifty-four among the prisoners. The loss in the royal army was very considerable; Brigadier Agnew with Lieut.-Colonel Bird and about seventy were killed; Sir William Erskine and 400 or 500 were wounded.

About a fortnight after this battle General Howe brought in the troops from Germanstown into Philadelphia, to be more at hand for clearing the river of the still remaining forts and obstructions. On the 22nd a combined attack was made on Fort Island by the Admiral and General. Captain Reynolds commanded a division, consisting of the "Augusta," "Roebuck," "Liverpool," and "Pearl," to which the "Merlin" was afterwards joined, and these vessels advanced with the flood tide as fast as the General was able to second the attack by a detachment of the army consisting of Hessian troops, under Colonel Donop, who were appointed to attack the redoubt opposite to Philadelphia, and they crossed the Delaware for that purpose in a division of flat boats conducted by Captain Clayton; but the ships grounded below the second line of *chevaux de frise*, and the fresh northerly wind checked the advance of the tide, so that they could not

be floated or got off. Donop here found himself opposed to 800 provincials, intrenched, and capable of making a more vigorous defence than he was prepared for, and as he did not receive the assistance he expected from the shipping, his troops were checked. This brave Colonel had his thigh bone shattered by a musket ball, and was himself taken prisoner, mortally wounded. Colonel Merjerode, the next in command, was also dangerously wounded, and Lieut.-Colonel Linsing seeing his men crippled on every side, withdrew the detachment to the boats. Fortune was not more favourable afloat than ashore. The "Augusta," 64, grounded and was set on fire. The "Merlin," sloop, was abandoned so imperfectly, that the lieutenant and a considerable number of the crew perished in her.

This ill success, however, by no means damped the resolution of the commanders. New ground was taken, new measures adopted, new batteries erected; and on the 15th of November every thing was ready for a new attack. The "Isis," and "Somerset," men-of-war, were passed up one channel to take the enemy's works in front, while several frigates drew up against a newly erected fort on the Jersey side of the river. Two ships armed with 24-pounders made their way to the back of Hogs' Island, and in concert with some newly erected batteries on Providence Island, enfiladed the principal works which the patriots had erected on Mud Island. These proceedings so overpowered the garrison there that their artillery was entirely silenced; the works were no longer defensible, and the fort was abandoned during the night. Two days after this the works at Red Back were quitted on the approach of a force under Cornwallis, and the artillery and ammunition left behind. At length all the obstacles to the free navigation of the Delaware by the British fleet were overcome or removed, and the American shipping had no alternative but to run up for safety, and were in a short time set on fire and abandoned by their crews. Thus terminated the campaign on this side. Sir William Howe cantoned his army for the winter in and about Philadelphia, and General Washington removed his camp to Valley Forge upon the Schuylkill, about fifteen or sixteen miles distant, where he took up a very strong and secure position.

#### 7. FORTS MONTGOMERY AND CLINTON ON THE HUDSON TAKEN BY CLINTON.

General Clinton, who was left in command at New York, in the beginning of October conducted an expedition up the Hudson River, and on the 6th the troops landed at Stoney Point, and were arrayed in the following manner:—The 52nd and 27th, with some provincials, amounting in all to 900 men, formed the advance under Lieut.-Colonel Colin Campbell, and marched to occupy the pass called Thunder Hill, then by making a circuit were to get close to the rear of Fort Montgomery; the centre division, composed of the 26th and 63rd regiments, a company of the 71st light infantry, and a troop of dismounted dragoons, in all 1200 men, moved under Major-General Vaughan, to cover the advance of Campbell and place themselves as near as possible to Fort Clinton; a third division, under Major-

General Tryon, were in reserve, to keep up the communication with the fleet. Vaughan being first up, (for it was five in the evening before Campbell could accomplish his task,) attacked immediately, but the enemy were fully prepared and made an obstinate resistance. Colin Campbell arrived in time to share in the work, but that gallant officer having fallen was succeeded by Lieut.-Colonel Robinson, whose gallantry carried all before him: nothing could withstand the ardour of the royal troops, and they persevered in the attack until they became masters of the place. General Vaughan then moved off to the attack of Fort Clinton, and led his men with such determination, that albeit they had to overcome an abattis defended by ten pieces of cannon, the bravery of the troops overcame the obstacle, and being now supported by General Tryon's division, which had come up, both forts were by eight o'clock in the possession of the British. On the part of the assailants the loss in killed and wounded was under 200, but the American loss did not exceed 100, although 250 were made prisoners. Two new frigates and some other vessels were here destroyed, and other damage to a large amount was sustained by the patriots.

#### 8. GENERAL BURGOYNE ADVANCES ON TICONDEROGA, WHICH IS CAPTURED.

It has been already shown that a secondary object of the expedition we have related, was to make a diversion in favour of the army advancing out of Canada under General Burgoyne, to which we must now direct our attention, for the near approach of General Gates obliged General Clinton to dismantle all the forts he had taken, and to return to New York with all haste. A plan of campaign has been already alluded to which included the penetration of a military force by the lakes, in order to come down on the Hudson near Albany, and then form a communication with Howe's army, thus to cut off all intercourse between the New England and middle states of the Union. Lieut.-General Burgoyne, an officer whose ability was acknowledged, and his zeal and enterprise unquestioned, was himself the author of this plan, for he says in his report, "I take on myself, for I called no one into council upon it, the measure of having passed the Hudson River, in order to force a passage to Albany." The regular force allotted to the expedition consisted of about 7200 men, British and German troops, exclusive of artillery; a number of Canadians accompanied the army to assist at the portages, and for other purposes in the woods; and some tribes of border Indians had been induced by liberal presents to take part in the expedition. A lesser expedition, consisting of 700 or 800 men, was fitted out to proceed by way of Oswego from Upper Canada to the Mohawk River, which was under the command of Colonel St. Leger. Burgoyne had under him Major-General Phillips of the artillery, Brigadiers Frazer, Powell, and Hamilton of the British troops, and Generals Riedesel and Specht of the Germans; and as his army was in every respect well provided, the expedition set out with every prospect of success. About the middle of June the whole force

encamped at the river Bouquet, on the west side of Lake Champlain, near Crown Point, where Burgoyne established his magazines and hospitals. On the 1st of July he invested Ticonderoga, which was the first object of the expedition. This place, originally fortified by the French, had now been much strengthened by the patriots, and it was garrisoned under the command of General St. Clair. But notwithstanding its apparent strength, the works were too extensive for a garrison not exceeding 3000 men, and they were overlooked and effectually commanded by an eminence called Sugar Hill. On the 2nd Brigadier Frazer with a brigade and some artillery took possession of the very advantageous post of Mount Hope without interruption, and on the 5th the besiegers received their battering train and stores, and had pretty well invested the place on both sides the water. They also reconnoitred Sugar Hill, where it was determined to raise a very formidable battery of light 24 and 12-pounders, which would have been ready the next day, but that soon after daylight on the 6th it was distinctly perceived that the enemy were already preparing to retire. This they effectually did in the course of that morning, and the British colours were seen to fly again upon the fort of Ticonderoga. The garrison had embarked in the night in 120 bateaux, covered by five armed galleys, and were perceived in full flight, taking their course to Skenesborough. With some difficulty the British gunboats destroyed the boom and opened a way for the frigates under Commodore Lutridge to pass forward; possession was forthwith taken of the fort, and 128 guns were found in it uninjured. The 9th, 20th, and 21st regiments were ordered to follow the enemy up the river to cut off all retreat by land, and the "Royal George," and the "Inflexible," with the best sailing boats and bateaux, took their course by water with the General, and arrived within three miles of Skenesborough by three in the afternoon. Captain Carter with the foremost gunboats came up with and attacked the galleys, of which two struck, and the other three were blown up, but the American troops entered a stockaded fort near the falls and prepared to defend themselves.

Brigadier Frazer continued his pursuit till one o'clock, when the heat obliged him to stop; here he learned from some stragglers that the rear-guard of the patriots was composed of picked men under one of their best officers, Colonel Francis. While the men were refreshing General Riedesel came up with his detachment, and then all together moved on again through the night, and at five in the morning came up with the enemy, whom they found at Haberton, well posted on advantageous ground and in great superiority of numbers. Frazer had outmarched the Germans, and now observing a commanding ground on the left, ordered it to be possessed by his light infantry; but a considerable body of the enemy advancing with the same object, they met and immediately came to blows. The engagement was severe and remained undecided and critical till the Germans came up; but as soon as Riedesel arrived he extended his line on Frazer's left flank, and the result was not much longer doubtful. The enemy fled on all sides, leaving Colonel Francis

and many officers with 200 men dead on the field. On the next day it was reported that the patriots were making a stand at Fort Anne, and the 9th regiment was ordered forward to observe them, while the rest of the troops were employed in dragging bateaux over the falls to facilitate the advance of the first brigade on Fort Anne. Brigadier Powell was sent forward with the first brigade on the 8th to reinforce Lieut.-Colonel Hill, who had sent word that he expected to be attacked, and was followed by General Phillips with the 20th and some pieces of artillery to his support. The enemy, on finding the approach of such a force, set fire to Fort Anne and fled to Fort Edward; but in the pursuit Captain Montgomery, who was wounded in the leg, was taken prisoner, and Major Grant, an officer of great experience and gallantry, was killed. The American Governor St. Clair now joined General Schuyler, and having organized some of his garrison and militia, they abandoned the fort and got away to Saratoga, striking off through the woods to avoid being taken prisoners.

Burgoyne's army was detained about the lakes till near the end of July, when he marched forward again towards the Hudson. General Arnold had been sent by Washington to reorganize the northern army and collect together the fugitives; and took a train of artillery with him; but on his arrival at Saratoga he drew back his forces to Stillwater, in order to keep in check Colonel St. Leger. This officer, on the 2nd of August, after combating the natural difficulties of crossing the St. Lawrence, invested Fort Stanwix, garrisoned by 600 or 700 men. On the 5th he encountered about 1000 of the militia, who were sent forward to raise the siege; and he was at the same time threatened by a body of regulars, who were moving against him by way of Halfmoon up the Mohawk River, so that he was effectually occupied.

Burgoyne however now began to feel the natural consequences of outstripping his supplies; and while he was obliged to establish a chain of posts to protect his convoys, the enemy had formed a large magazine at Bennington, about twenty miles from the Hudson, which was supplied from New England by way of the Connecticut River. This place he was told was only guarded by a body of militia; and the General accordingly laid a scheme to surprise it with about 500 men, partly dismounted Hessian dragoons and partly Canadian volunteers, who knew the country well, together with two pieces of light artillery, and entrusted the execution of it to the German Colonel Baum. To facilitate the enterprise he brought his whole army to the shores of the Hudson, and encamped them while he prepared a bridge of boats to cross the river. At the same time Colonel Breyman was sent out to Battonkill, and in his march thither fell in with a party of the enemy escorting cattle and provisions, which he took with little difficulty, and sent into camp to its great relief. Baum's advance across the hills was so tedious that the patriots got wind of it, and when he reached the Hosick River, about four miles from Bennington, he got alarmed at his isolation, and sent back to the General for instructions or for a reinforcement,

while he took up a post near Sandwick Mills. Breyman was accordingly sent off to support him with all haste, but before he could effect a junction General Stark, who commanded the patriot militia, had advanced against Baum, who he found had intrenched himself as well as the time and nature of the ground permitted. Stark however did not hesitate to attack, and the slight works of Baum were soon carried on every side, with his two light guns; the brave Colonel, after expending all his ammunition, then put himself at the head of his dismounted German dragoons and charged sword in hand, but his Canadian allies fled away to the woods, and he was taken prisoner. Breyman arrived on the ground just as the affair was concluded, and, expecting to be joined by his countrymen, found himself suddenly attacked by the patriots. His troops behaved with great vigour and resolution, and were for a time successful, but they were at length overpowered, and lost the guns they brought with them; this detachment then effected its retreat in the best manner it could and got safe to camp.

#### 9. COLONEL ST. LEGER FAILS BEFORE FORT STANWIX.

Colonel St. Leger continued the siege of Fort Stanwix, where the governor, Colonel Gansevoort, behaved with great firmness. A sally had been made under Colonel Willett, which did considerable mischief to the trenches and camp. This same officer, who was the second in command, was now sent with another secretly out of the fort to endeavour to bring some relief to it, for St. Leger left no means untried to obtain possession. The two officers passed by night through the besiegers' camp, and, in contempt of the danger and cruelty of the savage tribes, made their way for fifty miles through unexplored morasses and pathless woods, but in the end reached Arnold's army, whence they brought up a detachment of 900 men, with which they reached the fort on the 24th of August. St. Leger had found himself obliged from the conduct of his Indian allies to raise the siege before they arrived. Some of the tribes had gone off, and others were so ready to turn against him that he was more apprehensive of his Indian friends than his American enemies. He therefore marched away from Fort Stanwix (since named Fort Schuyler), leaving behind him most of his artillery and stores, and left his General to his fate.

#### 10. BURGOYNE CROSSES THE HUDSON.

The Congress had sent General Gates, in whose conduct and ability they had reason to trust, to supersede Arnold in the command of their army, which still lay in the neighbourhood of Stillwater; but Burgoyne, having completed his bridge of boats, had already brought forward thirty days' provision and stores for his troops, crossed the Hudson on the 13th and 14th of September, and now encamped on the plain of Saratoga, about four miles from the enemy. On the 19th, about three in the afternoon, the British army was unexpectedly attacked by the patriots in their forward advance towards them. They had passed a ravine and deployed

on some high ground beyond it, when they came in sight of the royalist force formed up in order of battle. The British right was commanded by General Frazer, and on the left Major-Generals Phillips and Riedesel kept the great road and the meadows near the river, where the 47th regiment guarded the bateaux. Burgoyne defended himself with the 20th, 21st, and 62nd regiments, who were engaged with the enemy for four hours without intermission, until the 9th, 24th, and the grenadiers were brought into action. Breyman with his light troops was very active; but General Frazer was kept to the defence of the height he occupied, and was only partially and occasionally engaged. The enemy moved boldly forward to take his line in the right flank, but finding Frazer too strongly posted, they rapidly countermarched and attacked the left of the same wing. Arnold conducted this attack, and sought danger with the eagerness and impetuosity of his character; but Major Williams with four guns opened fire upon them, while General Phillips led up the 20th regiment and restored the action at a critical point. The artillery did wonders, but Captain Jones, who commanded one of the brigades, was killed. As the light of the day closed, the patriots retired and left the royal army masters of the field.

#### 11. SURRENDERS WITH HIS WHOLE FORCE TO GENERAL GATES.

But General Gates with great assiduity set to work to render the right of his own position unassailable, and now busily employed himself to strengthen his left. Burgoyne soon perceived the danger of the position he had taken up, but he was under a firm conviction that he should receive support from Sir William Howe, and he therefore remained in it, but set himself to work to erect strong redoubts for the protection of his magazines and hospital. On the 21st he after a long suspense received a letter from Sir Henry Clinton in cipher, the first communication he had received from the army since the beginning of August; but the letter made no mention of Howe's march to the southward, and only expressed Clinton's intention to proceed to the attack of Fort Montgomery in about ten days. Burgoyne immediately despatched confidential persons by different routes with verbal messages to inform Sir Henry of his situation and of the necessity of some speedy diversion, while he continued to fortify his camp and watch the enemy, whose numbers increased every day. But while strength was thus accruing to his opponents, desertions were every day taking place in the royalist army. The Indians, always wayward and uncertain, left their friends in a body when they found there was no plunder to be expected, and the Canadians and British provincials were not much to be relied upon. Burgoyne therefore determined to diminish the rations, in order to make his supplies hold out until the 12th of October, the day he had named to Clinton as the last in which it would be possible for him to remain in position for the chance of any move in his favour. He saw clearly the difficulty he should be in were he to retreat into Canada, as in that case Gates could unite with Washington against Clinton and decide the fate of the war. He began to think, therefore,



that the expedition he commanded was meant to be hazarded, and that the failure of his junction with Clinton might be a lesser misfortune than his inability to get back to Canada. He may have heard also at this time of an American expedition which had been sent on the 17th of September under the direction of General Lincoln from the New England states to surprise all the outposts about Lake George and Ticonderoga, which had indeed succeeded in destroying all the bateaux and gunboats on Lake Champlain, besides having taken a great many Canadians prisoners. These had also captured some cannon out of a sloop and had summoned General Pooock to surrender, who had gallantly rejected their proposals, but it turned out afterwards that after four days' stay they had abandoned their design and returned. Things continued, however, in the same state with Burgoyne till the 7th of October, when there being no further intelligence or appearance of any expected co-operation, and four or five days of the proposed stay in the camp alone remaining, it was judged advisable to make a move forward to discover if there was any possible means of forcing a passage and also to make a forage, for the greatest distress was beginning to be felt on account of the scarcity to the cattle. But while the detachment formed for this object, led on by Burgoyne himself, was moving round within a mile of the enemy's left, a very sudden and rapid attack was made by the patriots on the British left. Here Major Ackland sustained the shock with great resolution. The Germans in a short time came up to his support, but the increasing numbers of the enemy soon enabled them to extend their attack along the whole front, and at length the left wing was compelled by dint of force to give way. Brigadier Frazer fell mortally wounded, much regretted by all, and especially by his afflicted chief. Phillips and Ruedesel were now ordered to cover the retreat, and the troops retired, hard pressed, but in good order; the artillery, under Major Williams, doing good execution, but all the horses having been disabled, six of the guns were obliged to be abandoned. The troops had, however, scarcely entered their camp when it was stormed by the Americans led on by Arnold. The light troops under Lord Balcarras defended the intrenchments with great spirit, and the attack was finally repulsed, General Arnold being grievously wounded. But on the right Lieut.-Colonel Breyman, commanding the German reserve, was killed, and the enemy had gained an opening into the British camp on that side. Night put an end to the contest; and under cover of it the army was enabled to quit their camp and take post on the height above the hospital, so as to require the enemy also to form a new position. On the 8th the British General offered battle in the new position, but the enemy would take no notice of him, and nothing further ensued that day but some partial skirmishes. Intelligence now came in that Gates was marching to turn the British right, and that a strong body was already pushed forward which threatened to enclose the army on every side. Nothing now appeared left to the General but an immediate retreat, abandoning his hospital to the compassion of his adversary. The army accordingly began its march at nine at night,

Major-General Riedesel leading and Major-General Phillips bringing up the rear. This retreat was made within musket-shot of the enemy, and was not impeded even into night, but the following day a heavy rain set in, and the necessity of guarding the bateaux which contained the provisions retarded the march, so that the army could not reach Saratoga till the night of the 9th, nor pass the fords of the Fishkill till the morning of the 10th. The enemy appeared in force, and had thrown up intrenchments near Saratoga, but they again retired on the approach of the British, and took up a position to defend the passage of the Hudson. Repeated attacks were made upon the bateaux which carried the provisions; these were fired upon from the opposite side of the river, and some were lost, and many men killed and wounded in their defence. At length it was determined, as the only means of saving the supplies, that they should be landed and carried up the hill, all which was effected under the enemy's fire with great difficulty.

In a council of war composed of all the general officers it was now considered what was best to be done. The only thing that seemed at all practicable was to endeavour to gain Fort Edward by a night march, the troops carrying their provisions on their backs, but for this purpose it would be necessary to force the fords. Before the attempt could be made, however, intelligence arrived that the enemy was intrenched opposite these fords, and possessed a camp in force on the high ground between Forts Edward and George, defended by cannon and by about 16,000 men, and the posts were every where so near that the army could not move a mile on any road without discovery and impediment.

Deserted by St. Leger, by the timidity of the Canadians and by the total defection of the Indians; the army reduced to 3500 men, not one-half of whom were British, all upon short allowance, with only three days' provision in store, with no apparent means of retreat, and the presence of 16,000 men in his front and around him, General Burgoyne had in truth nothing now left him but to open a treaty with General Gates, which he did on the 13th of October, the day after that named by him as the last upon which he could remain without succour. It is just to the American General to bear witness that no one could have acted with more moderation than he did on receiving this proposal. There was no sign of arrogance nor of being carried away by this unlooked-for good fortune in General Gates's conduct. Nevertheless the terms he demanded were unreasonable; to the first proposition, that the whole army should "ground their arms," General Burgoyne replied, "Sooner than his army will consent to ground their arms in their encampment they will rush on the enemy, determined to take no quarter." On the 17th of October, however, articles of convention were at length agreed upon, by the terms of which the troops were to march out with all the honours of war to the verge of the river, when the arms were to be piled by word of command from their own officers, and they should then march to embark for England, upon condition of not serving again during the war. The number of persons of every description com-

prised in this surrender is stated by the American accounts to have been 5762 men.

The news of this most important event reached General Washington near Germanstown, and the account given by a bystander of his mode of receiving such an unexpected stroke of prosperity is this: "As he read the despatch the colour gradually settled away from his countenance, his hand trembled, his lip quivered, his utterance failed him, he dropped the paper, raised his hands on high, and for several moments was lost in a rapture of adoring gratitude." In the Old World the news of the surrender of the British army brought down a storm of obloquy on the British minister, who was made responsible for all evil fortune; and France, in this day of adversity to her old rival, would not lose an opportunity of throwing the first stone, but before the end of the year rushed into a confederacy with the rebellious subjects of her rival, hoping to bring down the pride of place of Great Britain, and destroy her maritime and colonial superiority. The difficulty of supplying the loss of men sustained in this unfortunate contest with her colonies was already strongly felt in England; but voluntary exertions from her people of every rank came to the aid of the public, and the spirit of the King and country was roused to the utmost to carry on the struggle. The houses of parliament responded to the call of the minister, and 60,000 men, and such other supplies as the minister required, were immediately voted in support, and sent off with the utmost expedition.

The great Lord Chatham, who had all along predicted the most unfortunate results in the conflict, was roused with his ancient fire to the aid of his country. Although in a very debilitated condition he suffered himself to be conducted to the House of Lords, and such was the affecting stillness of the house to hear his words of wisdom, that it is said, "if any one had dropped a handkerchief the noise would have been noticed." He stated his impression that he was speaking for the last time, and in the midst of the debate he sunk back and fainted. He was borne out immediately to the bed on which he expired, leaving to the latest generations a name sanctified by all the genius and virtue that can adorn a man, a statesman, and a patriot.

## 12. WAR BETWEEN SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

The death of Joseph, King of Portugal, in February of this year, and the fall of his great minister, the Marquis of Pombal, put an end to the dispute which had led to hostilities between that kingdom and Spain; but not before a considerable fleet, amounting to no less than 116 sail of all sorts, including twelve ships of the line, under the conduct of the Marquis de Casa-Tilly, conveying 9000 men, under Don Pedro Cevallos, had departed from Cadiz against the Portuguese settlements in the New World. On the 21st of February this armament arrived at Isle St. Catherine, on the coast of Brazil, which besides its vicinity to the capital, Rio de Janeiro, was of great importance as the centre of a valuable fishery. The coast was rugged and difficult of access, nevertheless the Portuguese had neglected to

avail themselves of these advantages in their defence, and their squadron had hastily retired on the first approach of a Spanish frigate detached to reconnoitre the island. The place was however strongly fortified, and defended by a garrison of 4000 men under the command of Don Antonio de Mendoza; it was now shamefully evacuated without firing a gun. The governor, abandoning all his defences, took refuge with his troops on the mainland, so that the two forts and the whole island fell into the hands of the Spaniards. Mendoza, however, no sooner found himself safe from powder and steel, than he discovered that he was without any means of subsistence. Enveloped in a desert, with no provisions but what he had brought with him; unable to penetrate to the nearest settlements, and dreading an attack from the savages, he solicited a capitulation, and his whole force became prisoners of war. It is most probable that this governor had been bought over by the Spanish commanders.

The Spanish armament now proceeded to the Rio de la Plata. After some delays, occasioned by disputes between the General and Admiral, they occupied without a struggle the long-contested colony of Sacramento, with the dependent isle of St. Gabriel and all the Portuguese settlements in that quarter. But while thus occupied news arrived of the treaty that had been concluded between the two crowns on the 1st of October, and this put an end to the war, and fixed the frontier limits, the vagueness of which had been the original cause of difference between them.

### 13. WAR IN THE CRIMEA.

A sort of civil war sprang up this year in the Crimea, where Russian and Turkish influences contended for the election of a Khan, a privilege which had been reserved to the unfortunate people by treaty. A petty war raged in consequence, of which it is not necessary that any details should be here recorded.

### 14. WAR IN PERSIA.

During this year the war still languished between the Turks and Persians; the latter were not able to pursue their success at Bussora, and were defeated on the side of Bagdad, 2000 of their troops being driven over the Euphrates. A Turkish pacha having crossed into Georgia encountered Prince Heraclius and was defeated, with the loss of his entire army.

---

1778.

1. BURGOYNE AND HIS CAPTIVE ARMY.—2. AMERICAN PREPARATIONS FOR THE CAMPAIGN.—FRANCE PROFFERS THEM ASSISTANCE.—3. GENERAL SIR HENRY CLINTON TAKES THE COMMAND OF THE BRITISH ARMY.—4. BATTLE OF MONMOUTH OR FREEHOLD.—5. THE FRENCH FLEET UNDER ADMIRAL D'ESTAING ANCHORS OFF NEW

YORK.—6. RHODE ISLAND ATTACKED BY THE PATRIOTS.—7. NAVAL ENGAGEMENT BETWEEN LORD HOWE AND ADMIRAL D'ESTAING.—8. SULLIVAN WITHDRAWS FROM THE ATTACK ON RHODE ISLAND.—9. NAVAL ACTION OFF USHANT BETWEEN KEPPEL AND D'ORVILLEERS.—10. DEATH OF THE ELECTOR OF BAVARIA, AND CONSEQUENT WAR BETWEEN AUSTRIA AND PRUSSIA.—11. WAR IN INDIA.—12. WAR IN THE WEST INDIES, DOMINICA, ST. LUCIA.—13. WAR IN NORTH AMERICA, WYOMING, NEWFOUNDLAND, GEORGIA—CAPTURE OF SAVANNAH.

### 1. BURGOYNE AND HIS CAPTIVE ARMY.

The hostile forces passed the winter within a few miles of each other. The royal army in quarters at Philadelphia were well supplied with provisions, comfortably housed, and healthy. The republican army were hutted in the open fields, near Valley Forge, in the most dreadful condition for want of supplies, so that for some days there was little else than famine in the camp. The gallant but unfortunate army that had surrendered at Saratoga, underwent many grievous vexations in the cautionments allotted to them in the neighbourhood of Boston. Some captious objections were raised by Congress to the terms of the capitulation, and at length, on the 8th of January, they passed a resolution that the embarkation of General Burgoyne's army should be suspended until a distinct and explicit ratification should be properly notified to them by the Court of Great Britain. Burgoyne himself was allowed to go to England on his parole, but when he arrived in London he was refused admission into the royal presence, and a court of inquiry was ordered upon his conduct, but the general officers of whom it was composed, reported that in his condition of prisoner of war to an enemy he was not amenable to such a tribunal, that an inquiry was premature, for that no cognizance could be yet taken of the proceedings that led to his surrender. He then demanded a court-martial, but this likewise was refused; and he was ordered to return to his captive army. Burgoyne, not choosing to comply, was divested of all his employments. It is not very profitable to enter upon inquiries respecting this General's conduct, but every thing in the American war received its peculiar colouring from the conflict of party, and doubtless much injustice was inflicted on the General. Without doubt he had been left in the lurch by St. Leger, and to his fate by Clinton, but an abler man might have earlier foreseen and prepared himself against all contingencies. The surrender was more the fault of Burgoyne than the merit of Gates. The administration of Lord Sandwich, who was at the head of the navy, and the conduct of the two brothers, Lord Howe and Sir William Howe, were brought under the notice of the House of Commons, and the result of the investigation was, that the force sent out to the colonies was at no time equal to their subjugation; and that the General-in-Chief had represented that 20,000, or at the very least 15,000 more troops were indispensable. Sir William Howe declared that no concert had ever been proposed between him and General Burgoyne, nor had he been informed

that his co-operation in the northern expedition was expected. As to that unfortunate General, it was found that he had uniformly acted with bravery, and had deservedly endeared himself to his army, but his reputation as a commander is one which should be a beacon to future commanders, that when left without assurance of support, the safety of the entire force he commands should never be jeopardied to the casualties of the latest instant of time.

## 2. AMERICAN PREPARATIONS FOR THE CAMPAIGN—FRANCE PROFFERS THEM ASSISTANCE.

The Americans made great preparations for a vigorous campaign, and in order to lessen the number of non-effectives in their army, the General struck off all superfluous baggage, both of officers and men; and at the same time employed all the influence of his name and character to induce the farmers of the middle states to rear and fatten cattle for the service of the troops.

While these exertions were making, a messenger in a French frigate arrived at York Town on the 2nd of May, with the treaties concluded between the plenipotentiaries of France and the United States on the 6th of February, which he brought over for the confirmation of Congress. The joy and exultation of the Americans on this event, so important to their cause, was unbounded: it brought to their assistance a naval force able in some degree to compete with their enemy, and which the Americans were necessarily without. Reasonable hopes accompanied the transmission of the treaty that Spain would likewise come to their aid, and it had long since been foreseen by the great Lord Chatham, that the worst evil of the contest between Great Britain and her colonies would be, that "France and Spain would watch the maturity of their errors." It had been familiar to the people of England that the French were constantly sending supplies of men and ammunition to the colonists, and the French royal navy was rather fond of openly asserting some bravados in their favour, and of twitting their British rivals. Captain Sir John Rich, in the "Enterprise," had fallen in with a French squadron, consisting of two ships of the line and some frigates, commanded by the Duc de Chartres, a prince of the blood. The French squadron bore down and ordered the Captain to repair on board the flag-ship. Rich replied that if the French admiral had any thing to communicate he should be happy to receive him on board the "Enterprise." The Duke threatened to sink him if he did not come to him, and even pointed his guns to do so. Upon this Rich told him that he never received orders but from his own admiral, that his Royal Highness might fire when he pleased, but that for himself he would not quit his own quarter-deck. The volatile Prince then saw he had gone too far, and pretending to admire his spirited conduct sent him an invitation instead of an order, to come on board to dine with him. It is not stated whether the British Captain "had the honour of waiting upon his Royal Highness," but the anecdote marks the feeling of the service in the two countries. There is no doubt but that the surrender of Burgoyne's army had induced the

French nation to regard the moment as a favourable one for wiping off the disgrace of the last contest, and for endeavouring to rise on the ruin of an ancient rival. Dr. Franklin, too, in Paris at the time, had been in earnest negotiation with the minister, De Vergennes, to urge the great distress of the Americans for want of internal resources, and that they would be forced to submit to terms with the mother country unless foreign aid could be obtained. Singularly enough to our present knowledge of events, the Queen of France, Marie Antoinette, took up warmly the revolutionary cause, and roused the King from his natural indolence to take the decisive step that had been adopted. Other causes, it is true, actuated this royal lady in her advice, since we shall presently see that she was also interested for a family object, and that she was desirous of exerting the influence of France in the unjust and ambitious scheme of her Imperial family regarding the Bavarian succession, which had already brought on a new war in the German empire.

### 3. GENERAL SIR HENRY CLINTON TAKES THE COMMAND OF THE BRITISH ARMY.

About this time General Sir Henry Clinton arrived at the headquarters of the British army, to take the command in supersession of Sir William Howe, who at his own request had been recalled. The departing General now relinquished his command, to the great regret of both officers and soldiers. Clinton was an officer of very considerable reputation, and the army under him was in excellent order, and consisted of about 10,000 men at Philadelphia, and of about 4000 in the vicinity of New York. The whole strength of the patriot army under Washington amounted to no more than 8200 in camp fit for duty. Commissioners were also joined with General Clinton, as were the two Howes, having powers to treat upon some less urgent means of quieting the disorders now existing, than by an appeal to arms; but matters had long since proceeded too far for any compromise; nothing short of independence could possibly satisfy the colonists; so that accordingly, after considerable delay, Congress returned for answer to the Commissioners, on the 17th of June, on the propositions they had made, "that the acknowledgment of their independence, and the withdrawal of the British fleet and armies from their country, could alone satisfy them." For this they were not prepared, and hostilities therefore recommenced. Indeed the result of the negotiation had been foreseen and anticipated; no armistice existed between the armies; consequently the belligerents were so free to act, that on the 7th of May a battalion of light infantry, under the Hon. Major Maitland, of the marines, and Captain Henry, of the navy, having one battalion of light infantry with two field-pieces, had embarked for the purpose of destroying some American men-of-war known to be in the river. The troops were landed at White Hill about noon on the 7th of May, under cover of the gun-vessels, and immediately proceeded towards Bordentown. The Americans made a stand where a dam crossed Bill's Island, but the British light infantry with their accustomed intrepidity soon forced them

back, and after some fighting they drove off the enemy and burned the "Washington," 32, and the "Effingham," 28, with forty-four smaller vessels, which had escaped up the Delaware after the capture of Mud Island.

Early in May information reached Major-General Sir Hugh Pigott, at Rhode Island, that the American General Sullivan had arrived at Providence to take command of the troops in that state, and it was suspected that the object of sending him there was to concert an attack upon the British troops at that station. It was discovered, moreover, that several large boats, and a galley with a number of cannon and stores, had been collected for this object near Hickamust bridge, a very unguarded situation. General Pigott and Commodore Griffith accordingly concerted an attack in anticipation, and Lieut.-Colonel Campbell with eight companies of the 22nd regiment, and the flank companies of the 54th, in all about 500 men, were embarked on the evening of the 24th of May, in flat-bottomed boats, under the direction of Captain Clayton and Lieutenant Knoles of the navy, and landed undiscovered by the enemy, at daybreak, three miles below Warren. Finding the boats without any guard, the British burned 125 of them, also a galley armed with six 12-pounders, and laden with stores, together with the mill and bridge across the river. They then proceeded to Warren, at which place, and at Bristol, a mile farther on, they destroyed twenty heavy guns and sixteen 4-pounders, together with a quantity of ammunition, combustibles, and other warlike stores. At length the Americans assembled a force and opened fire upon them, so having now made signal for the flat-bottomed boats to cross from Papasquash River, the whole British detachment re-embarked under cover of the "Flora," man-of-war, and two galleys, and returned in safety with the loss of only five wounded, bringing away with them four colonels and field-officers, and about sixty men, prisoners.

Matters thus stood till the 19th of June, when a detachment moved out of the British quarters in force, commanded by General Grant, to surprise a body of republicans commanded by the Marquis de la Fayette. This General from the time of his joining the American army had been panting for an opportunity in which he might distinguish himself. Accordingly he had been now detached with 3000 men to occupy a post on Barren Hill, seven miles in advance of the camp, and on the opposite side of the river. Grant reached without discovery a point between La Fayette's rear and Washington's camp, while a detachment, under General Grey, marched along the western bank of the Schuylkill, and another force advanced to Chesnut Hill, to cut off the Marquis from every passage but that of Matson's Ford. The approach of the British was, however, accidentally discovered by a troop of provincial horse, and La Fayette was roused and retired with precipitation; Grant was, however, so slow in pursuit, that although the enemy had left six field-pieces behind at the ford, they had even time to return and recover their cannon, so that they escaped a most imminent peril with a loss of only forty men.



## 4. BATTLE OF MONMOUTH OR FREEHOLD.

As soon as the reply of the Congress was made known, Sir Henry Clinton broke up from Philadelphia, and transported his whole army across the Delaware without loss or molestation, under the judicious and excellent arrangement of Lord Howe and the officers of the fleet. Washington had indeed already penetrated the intention of the British General to move from that city, for he had received notice of baggage having been placed on shipboard and other symptoms of a packing up. He accordingly despatched General Maxwell with his brigade to reinforce the Jersey militia, and gave them directions to throw every possible obstruction in the way of the retiring army; and as soon as he received notice that the city was evacuated he put six more brigades in motion; still he was in such doubt as to the course or destination of Clinton's army, that although it was encumbered with so much baggage, and with so large a body of refugee royalists, that the line extended twelve miles, and although the march was greatly delayed both from the rainy weather and the intense heat, it was not until the 27th of June that the American General came up with the British. Washington had sent parties forward to break down bridges and otherwise harass the British in their retreat; and General Gates was posted on the opposite bank of the Rariton, while Washington detached Colonel Maxwell's brigade towards Princeton; but Clinton evaded these combinations by wisely moving towards Sandy Hook instead of crossing the Rariton. He took up a position at Monmouth Courthouse, having almost the whole of his front, and particularly his left wing, secured by a marsh and thick wood, and in his rear a difficult defile. The entire American corps were now placed under the command of La Fayette and amounted to about 5000 men; at five in the morning they understood that the British had begun their march, and Major-General Lee (now exchanged and restored to his military duty) was ordered to lead the attack against the British, while Colonel Morgan with his corps of 600 men, and some regiments of militia, were to threaten their flanks in conjunction with Maxwell. Clinton, judging from the number of the enemy's light troops which hovered on his rear, that their main body was near and disposed to attack him, determined to free himself from the encumbrance of the baggage, which now he sent forward under General Knyphausen towards Middleton, while he himself remained until eight o'clock in the morning in the neighbourhood of Freehold to allow it to get out of the way. As soon, however, as he had followed it on his march he received intelligence that the enemy were discovered marching in force on both his flanks; Clinton, thinking that the intention of Washington was to fall upon the baggage, resolved to attack the General in order that he might be forced to call back these flanking detachments to his assistance. The General, therefore, sent forward the Queen's light dragoons, who attacked and routed the enemy's cavalry under La Fayette; he then made an attempt on the left flank of the Americans, but being

here bravely repulsed, he made a flank movement to the right where General Greene commanded; this general, however, having advanced a body of troops with artillery to a commanding ground, disappointed the design. Clinton then made dispositions to attack the enemy in the plain. The British grenadiers, with their left on the village of Freehold, and the guards on the right, began the attack with great spirit; the former encountered the Americans under General Greene, who severely enfiladed their advance with his guns, and the latter fell upon those under General Wayne; but although the first lines of both gave way, the British came upon a second line that preserved a better countenance and resisted a fierce and eager assault with great obstinacy, in which General Monckton fell. Sir Henry therefore brought up fresh troops, but in the end contented himself with maintaining his own strong position, which it would seem that Washington now in his turn prepared to attack.

General Poor, with the Carolina brigade, moved round to the right of the position, and General Woodford, with some artillery, moved forward to attack it. Both sides, however, record that the extreme heat of this day was seldom equalled, and that the soldiers on both sides felt their energies so oppressed by the unusual sultriness that they contented themselves with removing their wounded, and desisted altogether from active hostilities. On the side of the English fifty-nine soldiers are said to have perished in this action without a wound, merely through the excessive heat and fatigue. The Americans undoubtedly held the field, on which their General, wrapped in his cloak, reposed; but as it was merely the object of the British to fall back on New York, about twelve o'clock at night they marched away in dead silence, removing all their wounded with them, so that it was not till morning that it was known by the enemy they were gone, and the patriots did not care to harass them.

Washington indeed attributed this failure of his to stop the British in their march to the misconduct of General Lee, who was to have attacked them the first thing in the morning, but who from some cause or other ordered a retreat after giving one volley on the British light horse: for this offence he was put under arrest and tried by a court-martial for disobedience of orders, and for disrespect to Washington when taunted by the General in the face of the army with some very harsh and severe expressions. The result of this trial, which lasted till the 12th of August, was suspension from his command for a year. On the day following the battle of Monmouth (or Freehold, as it has been variously called), Clinton marched without further opposition to Neversink, a high land in the neighbourhood of Sandy Hook, where he arrived on the 30th, and found Lord Howe, who had got there the day before with the fleet from the Delaware. This was a more opportune occurrence than could have been anticipated, for it had so happened that in the preceding winter a violent breach of the sea had cut off the peninsula of Sandy Hook from the continent, and converted it into an island, so that it

## 1778.] THE FRENCH FLEET ANCHORS OFF NEW YORK. 211

was necessary to throw a bridge of boats across the intervening water. This was now speedily and skilfully executed by extraordinary efforts on behalf of the seamen; and the whole army was thus passed over the new channel on the 5th of July, and were afterwards conveyed by sea to New York. Soon after this the provincial army took up its position at White Plains, on the borders of the Hudson, where it remained till late in the autumn.

### 5. THE FRENCH FLEET UNDER ADMIRAL D'ESTAING ANCHORS OFF NEW YORK.

As soon as a rupture with France had become inevitable, a French fleet consisting of twelve sail of the line and three frigates had been quietly despatched by the French government to direct its course to the mouth of the Chesapeake and Delaware River, in order to surprise Lord Howe's fleet in the latter river, and to assist in the enclosure of the British army between the French fleet and Washington's force. By a most providential accident for the British, this contingency did not happen: bad weather and unexpected impediments retarded Admiral d'Estaing on his voyage, so that it was not till the 11th of July that he appeared suddenly and rather unexpectedly in sight of the British fleet at Sandy Hook. Lord Howe's squadron was not only inferior in ships but in metal also, and had the French Admiral had the enterprise he might have pushed on over the bar, and forced a battle with little prospect of being defeated. Most of the ships under Lord Howe had been long on service and were wretchedly manned. The prestige, however, of the British flag staggered the resolution of D'Estaing. He continued seven days inactive at anchor, until Lord Howe, who had many qualifications for a great naval commander, had taken such admirable precautions for protecting his fleet, that when the French Admiral awoke to the necessity of doing something, he had to seek his enemy in the more defensible post at New York, and the opportunity of surprise was already lost.

Upon Washington's receiving information that all attempt to force the Narrows was given up by the French Admiral, he concerted with him a new enterprise to attack Rhode Island, and accordingly re-established his head-quarters at White Plains, sending forward two brigades under the temporary command of the Marquis de la Fayette to be in support, while he increased the force under General Sullivan to 5000 men. It was the 22nd of July when the French fleet got under weigh to proceed to Rhode Island, and nothing could have been more consoling for the British than its departure at that critical moment, for they had had to endure the mortification of beholding every day vessels under English colours captured by the French, which were ignorant of the change of circumstances on these coasts, while they were themselves smarting under the insult of being unable to assist them, being in fact blocked up in one of their harbours by an enemy's fleet. No sooner, however, had D'Estaing cleared the offing than Admiral Byron in the "Princess Royal," 90, the "Culloden," 74, the "Diamond," the

"Dispatch," and the "Hope," all badly equipped and provided, it is true, and much shattered and separated by the bad weather they had encountered, yet still seaworthy, arrived at different stations on the American coast; and before the end of the month the "Renown," 50, from the West Indies, the "Reasonable," 64, the "Centurion," 50, and the "Cornwall," 74, all arrived by single ships at Sandy Hook, and were added to Lord Howe's command.

#### 6. RHODE ISLAND ATTACKED BY THE PATRIOTS.

The French fleet that sailed away from off New York came to anchor near Rhode Island on the 20th of July, but was preparing to sail away again for Boston, when Generals Greene and La Fayette arrived on board the "Languedoc" to endeavour to induce D'Estaing to carry his fleet at once into Newport harbour, and who had only for the moment yielded to Washington's persuasions; the French Admiral, however, whose instructions from home were to repair to Boston, would listen to no further urging to the contrary, but weighed anchor on the 22nd and sailed for that port. Major-General Sir Robert Pigott was in command of the British forces at Rhode Island, and had prepared himself immediately against all contingencies. He had received a reinforcement of five battalions, and the troops were in excellent condition and spirit, having with them a body of seamen equal to every service of labour and danger, and the troops, artillery, and stores had been all drawn in from the mainland. The island of Connecticut had been altogether evacuated, and the defence was now confined to the small compass of Rhode Island. The works to the seaward were here strengthened by every possible means; the transports were scuttled and sunk in the channels, and the frigates, dismounted of their guns, were brought into safety. The island is divided almost into two by a kind of isthmus near the town of Newport, the space between forming a bay, which includes the harbour; the inlet into this harbour from the sea is called the Middle Channel, and is narrow; a barrier of high ground crossing the isthmus was strongly covered by the British engineers with lines, redoubts, and artillery. The French Admiral had been worked upon at Boston by Washington, so that his fleet again appeared off the island on the 29th, and two of the line of battle ships even attempted to come up the Narraganset passage, while two 36-gun frigates did in truth succeed in forcing the Sacconet passage. Other frigates advanced towards Bristol Ferry to communicate with the troops of the mainland. The American General Sullivan had here got together a force of about 5000 men, composed of regulars, with militia and volunteers from New England, but he did not feel himself strong enough to cross over to the attack till the 8th of August. Lord Howe having been, as we have seen, joined by some of the ships of Admiral Byron's squadron, though still inferior to the enemy in weight of metal, now determined to follow the French fleet and try the fortune of war. He had received information that D'Estaing had involved his squadron in the Narraganset and Sacconet passages, and he resolved therefore to avail himself of

any opportunity that might offer to attack the enemy in their divided condition, and afford relief, if necessary, to the troops under Pigott: with this view he anchored off Point Judith on the evening of the 9th. The enemy's ships, shut up in the Narraganset passage for several days by contrary winds, had remained inactive until Sullivan's troops were in motion on the 8th of August, but now they entered the harbour, cannonading the batteries and town and receiving their fire in return, but without great effect on either side. Admiral d'Estaing anchored above the town between Connecticut and Goat Island, and General Sullivan landed on the north end of North Island, at a place called Howland's Ferry.

#### 7. NAVAL ENGAGEMENT BETWEEN LORD HOWE AND ADMIRAL D'ESTAING.

To the astonishment of the British, at nine o'clock the following morning the French fleet repassed all the batteries, and sailed out of harbour, firing on them as before and having it returned with equal spirit, yet by this cannonade not one man was hurt on shore either day. Lord Howe was delighted to see the whole of the enemy's fleet stand out to sea, as well those who had been in the Narraganset passage as those who were in the bay, being in all twelve two-decked ships and six frigates; for although the wind was favourable to the enemy, and the British Admiral's force inferior in every respect, yet he judged it was impracticable for him to afford any essential relief to the General but by fully occupying the French fleet. Lord Howe as an able and experienced seaman would not however give his opponent the advantage of the weather-gage, but contended with skill and judgment to acquire it, while D'Estaing, notwithstanding his superiority, was as eager to maintain it. This contest of seamanship prevented any action till the 15th. A strong gale of wind in the mean while came on, which soon increased to a tempest that continued nearly forty-eight hours, which not only put off the engagement by separating the fleets, but caused so much damage to both sides as to render a contest for some time impracticable. The French suffered dreadfully from this tempest, and some singular rencontres were the consequence of it. The "Languedoc," 90, D'Estaing's own ship, having suffered considerably, was met with in this condition on the evening of the 13th by the "Renown," 50, Captain Dawson, who assailed her with great fury and shot away her masts and rudder, which would have ensured her capture if the daylight had lasted; but in the night six men-of-war came up to their Admiral's assistance and in turn chased the "Renown," who nevertheless in the end escaped. The "Tonnant," 80, with only one mast standing, fell in likewise about the same time with the "Preston," 50, Commodore Hotham, which ended with results exactly similar to the other. The "Isis," 50, Captain Raynor, was eagerly chased and engaged by the "Zèle," 74, which had successfully escaped the effects of the tempest, when a desperate engagement ensued within pistol-shot distance. The French ship, although she had mauled the "Isis" dreadfully in her masts and rigging, so that she could scarcely keep

the sea, was nevertheless glad to escape from so determined an antagonist by putting her sails before the wind and getting away; the Admiral spoke of this "very unequal" contest with great encomiums on Captain Raynor's skilful management of his ship, and the distinguished resolution and bravery of his men and officers. The loss of men was considerable on the side of the French, and M. de Bougainville, the celebrated and philosophic navigator, lost an arm in this engagement. Admiral d'Estaing now got his ships together as well as he could and returned to Rhode Island on the 20th, where he anchored without the harbour, but he sailed thence again for Boston on the 22nd, where he was glad to refit his shattered squadron. Lord Howe refitted his vessels with extraordinary expedition, and pursued the enemy with great eagerness, hoping to overtake them by the way; but when he got to Boston, and found D'Estaing effectually covered from all attack by the batteries erected to protect Nantucket Road, he gave up all prospect of further attack.

#### 8. SULLIVAN WITHDRAWS FROM THE ATTACK ON RHODE ISLAND.

Two batteries were opened by the patriots on the 22nd which incommoded some of Pigott's redoubts, who found it necessary to silence them by a new battery of some heavy guns which opened on the 25th. Sullivan broke ground on the 10th on Honeyman's Hill before Newport, and began to erect batteries and lines of approach, and the British were no less active on their side in throwing up new works to counteract them. On the 26th the enemy were observed to discontinue their works, and deserters came in with the information that they were removing baggage and heavy artillery. General Pigott upon this detached a lieutenant-colonel with some men of the 54th regiment over Easton's Beach in the night, who surprised and brought in a picket of two officers and twenty-five men, but little intelligence that could be depended on was obtained from them. On the following day the patriots endeavoured to surprise a British picket of the Anspach corps, but failed. It was under these circumstances, when both fleets had disappeared, that as a consequence of this desertion there was an immediate despondency and discontent apparent in the American army. The New England and Connecticut volunteers deserted Sullivan's army; and an alarming disagreement arose between the American and French officers, the former of whom cast reflections upon Count d'Estaing and the fleet under his command for deserting them, which La Fayette and the French officers with him resented. When, therefore, D'Estaing appeared to have sailed away from Rhode Island altogether, Sullivan saw the necessity of preparing a retreat, which he carried out with a skill that would have done honour to a more experienced general. He sent off his baggage on the 26th of August, and on the 29th broke up from his lines. Upon this Major-General Prescott and Brigadier-General Smith, with a part of Burn's corps, the 22nd and 43rd regiments, and the flank companies of the 38th and 54th, were sent to follow the enemy up by the East road, while Major-General

Lossberg marched by the West road with the Hessian chasseurs and the two Anspach regiments. On arriving at Quaker's Hill they found the patriots posted in force. General Smith immediately attacked and gained possession of this strong post, and obliged the enemy to retire to the north end of the island. Lossberg obliged them on his side to quit two redoubts which they had constructed to cover their retreat, and took possession of Turkey Hill. After these actions Sullivan took post on Windmill Hill, which he set to work to strengthen; but on the night of the 30th he passed all his army by Bristol and Hogland Ferries across to the continent.

#### 9. NAVAL ACTION OFF USHANT BETWEEN KEPPEL AND D'ORVILLIERS.

A formidable fleet having been equipped at Portsmouth, the command of it was given to Admiral Keppel, who hoisted his flag in the month of March in the "Prince George," 90, and on the 8th of June sailed away with twenty-seven sail of the line. It was known as early as the month of May that the French had ready for sea in the road of Brest twenty-two ships of the line and fourteen frigates commanded by Count d'Orvilliers. On the 17th of June two frigates and their tenders were discovered off the Lizard, not twenty-five miles distant, apparently reconnoitring the British fleet. The "Arethusa," 32-gun frigate, Captain Marshall, and the "Milford," Lord Longford, were ordered in chase; when the latter coming up with the French frigate "Licorne" civilly requested the captain to follow him to the Admiral, who ordered the vessel to be strictly watched, but to be treated with every possible civility and attention. As yet no declaration of war had issued, and Admiral Keppel was unwilling to incur the blame of commencing hostilities, although he determined by decisive measures to obtain information of the enemy, and to prevent his own strength from being made known to his opponent. At daybreak on the 17th the French frigate made a movement which induced the "Arethusa" to fire a shot across her bows, which was immediately returned from the "Belle Poule" by a broadside: this commenced an action which lasted for two hours, by which time both ships were close in with the French coast. The French frigate stood into a small bay and received assistance; but having had four officers and forty-four men killed and thirty-six wounded, and having lost her mainmast, she returned to her fleet. The Admiral detained the "Licorne," which had been held fast by the "Milford;" and a second of the same calibre, called the "Pallas," was secured two days afterwards. The intelligence he acquired, by papers found on board these ships, of the superior force of the French fleet, which he now found to consist of between thirty and forty sail of the line and twelve frigates, induced him in prudence to return into port for a reinforcement.

Admiral Keppel exerted himself at Portsmouth to get up a fleet of the force requisite to encounter that of D'Orvilliers; and fortunately, whilst so doing, the arrival of the West Indian and Levant

fleets afforded at this most critical period the supply of seamen he so much wanted. He was thus enabled on the 9th of July to put again to sea with twenty-four ships of the line, and was joined in his course by six more. Although there was a paucity of frigates in this fleet, the ships in general were in prime condition, and were commanded by men in point of courage, ability, and skill of the highest estimation. On the day preceding the departure of the British fleet the French, amounting to thirty-two sail of the line with a cloud of frigates, sailed out of Brest harbour. They were divided into three squadrons, the first led by Admiral the Count de Guichen, the second by Count Duchaffault, and the third by the Duke de Chartres, a prince of the blood; the whole commanded by Count d'Orvilliers. The English fleet was likewise thrown into three divisions, the van being commanded by Vice-Admiral Sir Robert Harland, and the rear by Vice-Admiral Sir Hugh Palliser; and the Admiral was assisted by the voluntary services of his friend Admiral Campbell, a brave and experienced officer, who acted as his flag-captain in the "Victory."

The two fleets came first in sight of each other on the 23rd of July; but the French commander, when he saw the increased strength of Keppel's fleet, appeared evidently desirous to relinquish the disposition he had at first evinced to bring on an engagement. He kept to windward, going off; but Keppel made use of every method to close in with him, keeping his ships as close together as he could; but it was not till the 27th that the enemy's ships, falling considerably to leeward, afforded him the opportunity of getting up with them. In this chase of three days he had succeeded in cutting off two of the French ships, who were not again able to join their comrades, so that the hostile fleets were now on an equality in point of numbers. When day broke on the morning of the 27th the wind admitted of the British van coming up and closing with the enemy. About eleven o'clock the French began firing upon the foremost ships of Sir Robert Harland's division as they successively led up, the French fleet hauling their wind instead of bearing down, and showing no colours. The Vice-Admiral was soon enabled to return their fire, and all were soon engaged. The fleets, being on different tacks, passed each other very close, and in this way the action continued for about three hours. The French as usual with them directed their fire principally at the rigging, so that the British ships were a good deal crippled, and suffered considerably in their masts, yards, and rigging. The fire on the British side was directed against the hulls of the enemy, and was not without its effect through the casualties it occasioned among the crews. Admiral Keppel himself got horribly mauled in passing, but as soon as he got clear of the enemy's ships and of the smoke he perceived that Vice-Admiral Harland with part of his division had already tacked and was standing towards the enemy. He now tried to wear, but was at first unable to do so: fearing, however, that his rear was in no condition to tack, and as he could not wear and stand back to the ships astern without confusion, he hauled down the signal for battle, and made



signal to form the line of battle ahead of all the centre and red divisions. This order was instantly obeyed by Harland; but Palliser, who had fallen considerably to leeward, took no notice of it. The situation of the British fleet at this time is represented by some who were present to have been as follows: "The 'Victory' was the nearest ship to the enemy, with no more than three or four of her own division in any condition to have supported her or each other. Sir Robert Harland with six sail of his division was to windward and ready for instant service, but Sir H. Palliser was on the contrary tack, and totally out of the line; other ships were far astern, and five that were disabled in their rigging were at a great distance to leeward." Thus it appears that the Admiral could not at this time have collected together from any quarter more than twelve ships to renew the engagement.

The French now wore, and began to form line on the contrary tack, and as the Admiral thought the enemy's intention was to separate some of his ships from the rest of his fleet, he made signal to his ships to wear, and wore himself, standing athwart the van of the enemy, but keeping the signal for the line still flying: finding Palliser, however, still unmindful of his signals, he despatched orders to him at five o'clock in the afternoon to come into his wake and renew the action, and at the same moment he ordered Sir Robert Harland to form his division astern of the "Victory," to protect the rear and keep the enemy in check until Sir H. Palliser should come into his proper station in obedience to the signal. At six and seven these orders were again repeated, but the day closed before Sir Hugh joined the Admiral. D'Orvilliers by his conduct during the night, showed every disinclination to renew the action. He stationed frigates with lights to divert the notice of the British, and lead them to suppose that his fleet still kept the position they held at sunset, but under the darkness of the night he ordered his fleet to stand in towards the land, and the wind being fair he made sail and arrived at Brest harbour on the next evening. Keppel to his infinite mortification saw at break of day the deception that had been practised upon him, and found the French fleet only just visible from his masthead; so he collected his ships and bore away for Plymouth.

These particulars were afterwards matter of much discussion and controversy, but this appears to be the history of the fight deduced from the charges afterwards brought against Admiral Keppel by Sir Hugh Palliser, and on which he was tried by a court-martial, but very properly acquitted, the court giving it as their opinion that the charge against the Admiral "was malicious and ill-founded." Sir Hugh Palliser was also put on his trial, when the sentence on him was that "his behaviour was highly meritorious and exemplary." History has some difficulty in reconciling these discrepancies, and the only conclusion at which posterity can arrive is that both Admirals did their duty. The French, nevertheless, regarded these disputes as a triumph for them, and Admiral d'Orvilliers had good reason on his side when he declared "that he had outmanœuvred Admiral Keppel." The immediate consequence of

the day was that Admiral Keppel as soon as he had repaired damages, returned with his whole fleet to his station off Brest. The French Admiral would not, however, give him an opportunity of retrieving his disappointment, and never ventured out of port during the whole period of his cruise, from which Keppel did not finally return to port till the 28th of October, leaving Harland and Palliser with a proper force to protect the homeward trade. The French fleet still pursued its policy of avoiding action, and by this means they left their commerce unprotected, which became a prey to the British cruisers to a degree unexampled even in former wars, while that of Great Britain was effectually protected.

#### 10. DEATH OF THE ELECTOR OF BAVARIA, AND CONSEQUENT WAR BETWEEN AUSTRIA AND PRUSSIA.

On the last day but one of the previous year, the 30th of December, 1777, died without issue Maximilian Joseph, Elector of Bavaria, the last of his line. This event was the occasion of a renewal of hostilities between the two great powers of Germany—Austria and Prussia—which seemed at one time likely to light up again the sanguinary contest which had so devastated the whole Empire in the Seven Years' War. The Elector Palatine of the Rhine regarded himself as the rightful successor, and proceeded to take possession of the duchy of Bavaria, and to receive the willing homage of his subjects. But he had scarcely arrived in his new capital of Munich before the Austrian troops, who had been evidently stationed on the frontiers for the purpose, poured in on all sides upon Lower Bavaria, and seized on every place they came to; whilst another body invaded the Upper Palatinate on the side of Egra with an army 60,000 strong. The Elector was not of a character to enter willingly into such a contest, which might in its results lose him his old dominions as well as those which he had, however justly, acquired by his birthright; so that he deemed it prudent to enter into a convention to secure a continuance of peace, by which he ceded the better half of Bavaria to the Emperor, regardless as well of his own rights as of those of his presumptive heir, the Duke of Zweibrucken. This latter Prince lost no time in protesting against these proceedings, and called upon the Princes and States that composed the Diet to interfere against the most arbitrary and unjust proceedings of the Emperor: but at the same time he was himself in no position to contend against his superior, and was on the point even of ratifying the agreement that had been made with Austria, when the King of Prussia, having a jealous eye to every thing that might aggrandize the Imperial house, resolved to support with vigour the constitution of the Empire, and prevent the success of this flagrant usurpation. An interchange of diplomatic notes accordingly ensued, but the court of Vienna haughtily persevered in its claims. Frederick, alarmed at this evidence of ambition in the young Emperor, began to put his troops in motion, and each party necessarily looked out for support from the neighbouring great powers. Russia was appealed to by Prussia, but her assistance was retarded at all events by the expectation of a Turkish war.

The court of Versailles was already occupied with a war with England on the American contest in conjunction with Spain, and even the influence of Marie Antoinette could not at this moment operate. Saxony was so situated that she would willingly have remained neuter : but the Emperor demanded such hard terms as the price of her neutrality, that she turned to Frederick and resolved to concur with him in an appeal to the sword. During the negotiations at Berlin and Vienna, the countries of Bohemia, Silesia, Saxony, and Moravia were gradually covered with armed men, but it was the latter end of June before matters were ready for a crisis. Both sovereigns then placed themselves at the head of their armies, and that of Prussia was accompanied by the young Prince, nephew and eventual successor to the monarchy, who passed through much tribulation and glory in the great war of the next century. The King of Prussia, in pursuance of his long-established maxim in war, determined to render the enemy's country the scene of hostilities, and accordingly marched to the borders of Bohemia, and on the 4th of July seized the city, castle, and magazines of Nachod on the confines of that kingdom, and fixed his head-quarters there. He thence threatened the strong post of Konigingrätz and Jacomirez on the Upper Elbe, which had been securely occupied by the Emperor. The country lying intermediate to the two armies became exposed right and left to the ravages of the Prussian light troops, who immediately spread with their wonted activity to collect forage and raise contributions. This state of things brought on a number of small engagements, in which both forces had occasional success, and it is said that the two contending monarchs were often present in these skirmishes, and that the Imperial one, emulous of the fame of his great competitor, exposed his person in a manner unusual on such trivial occasions. Prince Henry, brother of Frederick, commanded an army that was assembled in the neighbourhood of Dresden, consisting of about 90,000 men, with 400 pieces of cannon. He was opposed by the celebrated Marshal Count Loudon, at the head of a large and well-appointed force. A Prussian army under Generals Werner and Stutterheim was formed on the side of Austrian Silesia, and was faced there by one under the command of the Marquis de Botta, to counteract the designs of the Prussians in Upper Silesia. The plan of the Austrians was to be strictly defensive, and the King soon perceived that the judicious positions taken by his opponents, and the difficult nature of the country between the opposing armies, encumbered with woods and mountains, would very much narrow the execution of his extensive plan of operations. Prince Henry, in order to direct the attention of the enemy to a wrong quarter, detached General Möllendorf with a considerable separate corps to the right, on the side of Freyberg, and while expectation was thus awakened on that side, he threw, with the utmost expedition, three bridges over the Elbe, so that on the 20th of July he passed that river at the head of 60,000 men, between Pirna and Pillnitz. General Belling, who commanded the van of the Prince's army, advanced at the same time by way of Hansbach, in Bohemia, to

Stuckenau and Romburg. The Austrian parties among the mountains were terribly annoyed at the sudden appearance of the Prussians. Belling, in order to anticipate them before they recovered from their surprise, with wonderful celerity seized the defiles of Gorgenthal just as they were on the point of securing it, and thus enabled Prince Henry with the bulk of his army to advance from Romburg. He soon after defeated General Vans near Tollenstein, where three or four Austrian battalions were routed and 1000 prisoners and several pieces of cannon taken. Belling afterwards succeeded in seizing the important fortified pass of Gabel, and possessed himself of Krettau, Kratzau, and a number of other places, while Prince Henry advanced by way of Kottwitz in the circle of Leutmeritz, until he got clear of the mountains in that quarter: he then forced some Austrian forts and intrenchments there with equal success, and cleared the country on the right as far as Teschen. Marshal Loudon upon these movements and advantages broke up his strong camp at Pleisswodel and removed his magazines to Buntzlau on the 6th of June: he then took up such a position behind the Ier or Iser with his right at Munchengrätz, and his left at Kosmanos, near Buntzlau, as effectually to preclude any further approach upon Prague. Here he kept the communication open with the Emperor, whilst he rendered the junction of the King and Prince Henry impracticable. The Prussian monarch was little disposed to bear with patience this restraint on his operations, and exerted all the efforts which the Prince of Brunswick and other generals, or his own fertile genius, could suggest, to force or surprise his enemy out of this state of secure inaction. At length finding all his efforts vain, the King, towards the middle of August, made a grand movement to his right, leaving General Wunsch with a strong command to keep the communications open and to guard the important post of Nachod. In order to hold out a lure to the Austrians to attack him, he boldly attempted the defiles of Kowalowitz on the 14th of August, but his enemy was too wary to attempt to interrupt him and he passed through them without obstruction: then he encamped at Burkersdorf, with his right near Trautenau, and his left near Arnau. The Prince of Brunswick advanced with a separate corps on the front of the left to Langennau, whence he extended his posts to Hohen Elbe. Along most miserable roads the King advanced almost to the north-east extremity of Bohemia, amidst wild forests and dangerous mountains, into which a less enterprising commander could not have dared to venture. Nevertheless his army grew so sickly from the fevers and fluxes incident to this elevated region, that finding he could neither provoke nor force his enemy to move, the King at length determined to evacuate Bohemia; and on the 8th of September, having previously sent off his heavy artillery, he fell back upon the high grounds of Lauterwasser and retired to his former camp at Wildschütz. This retreat was conducted with consummate ability. The enemy's hussars and light troops, perfectly conversant with the ground, hung around him, and made bold pushes to seize the guns, almost inextricably involved in

sloughs and hollow ways; but so much judgment was displayed in the manner in which different columns supported and covered each other, that all their efforts were repulsed without one single piece of cannon falling into their hands. Every movement was made with the accuracy of machinery; unaccompanied by hurry, embarrassment, or confusion. On the 14th the King retired still further on the high road to Landshut, where he remained till the end of October, when he finally quitted the kingdom.

During these operations Prince Henry continued at Nimes, which, however, he quitted on the 10th of September, and advanced to a camp at Tscheschkowitz, on the great road to Prague. The King having now begun his retreat out of Bohemia, Marshal Loudon quitted his position on the Iser, and encamped at Martinowes, near Budin, to prevent the Prince's further advance in that direction, and accordingly the Prussian force quitted the camp and returned without loss to the confines of Saxony. On the side of Austria and Silesia the Prussian generals were superior to the Marquis de Botta, and overran the duchies of Troppau and Ingerndorf without much difficulty, with the design of annexing them to the King's dominions and thereby rounding the frontiers of his possession in Silesia.

#### 11. WAR IN INDIA.

The French monarch having made common cause with the revolted colonists of Great Britain, the operations of the war between the mother countries were again promptly revived in the East Indies. General Munro, who now commanded the Company's troops on the coast of Coromandel, immediately commenced preparations for undertaking the siege of Pondicherry; and with this view, early in August, assembled part of the force destined for the siege of Red Hill, within four miles of that city, so that on the 21st he invested it closely. The attack was to be aided by a small fleet under Sir Edward Vernon, consisting of the "Rippon," 60, the "Coventry," 23, "Seahorse," 20, and the "Cormorant," and "Valentine," East India Company's ships. The Admiral had scarcely arrived at the station when he obtained sight of a French squadron, consisting of the "Brillante," 64, the "Pourvoyeuse," 36, the "Sartine," 32, and two French India ships, under the command of M. de Troujolly. The two fleets were brought to close quarters on the 10th of August, and a very warm engagement ensued, which lasted above two hours, when the French thought fit to quit the scene of action. It was expected by the English that the fight would be renewed the following day, but at daybreak the enemy were totally out of sight and had got safe into Pondicherry to refit. On the 20th the French squadron came again in sight leading out of port, and Sir Edward Vernon immediately stood into the roads, in expectation of a renewed engagement in the morning, but in the course of the night M. de Troujolly sailed away, leaving Pondicherry to its fate, and was not again heard of; but one of his frigates, the "Sartine," a few days after, ignorant of his departure, came into the midst of the British fleet by mistake, and was captured.

In the mean time General Munro broke ground before the place on the 6th, and on the 18th opened a vigorous fire from twenty-eight battering guns and twenty-seven mortars. The garrison under M. Bellecombe made a gallant defence, and their efforts, aided by the heavy rains that fell at this time, which did extraordinary damage to the works, considerably retarded the progress of the assailants. A practicable breach was at length made in the bastion called *De l'Hôpital*, when a bridge was prepared to pass the wet ditch, and attempt an assault; but on the 17th of October, when all was ready for this movement, the Governor proposed a capitulation, which was willingly agreed to by the British commander. The garrison were allowed all the honours of war, and as a particular mark of attention to M. de Bellecombe, the regiment of Pondicherry were allowed to keep their colours. The loss of the besiegers was 224 killed and 693 wounded.

The reduction of Pondicherry, with the previous capture of several French factories and settlements by the Company's forces, entirely annihilated the power of that nation in the East Indies. Other expeditions in that peninsula under Colonels Braithwaite and Harpur were equally successful, but though made against French influence, they were directed against native resistance. Hyder Ali was highly offended at the capture of Mahé, and at the attempt to pass a British force through part of his territories, all which things in due time tended to a renewal of war between the British and that chieftain.

#### 12. WAR IN THE WEST INDIES, DOMINICA, ST. LUCIA.

The war with France soon awoke other hostilities. The unprotected state of the British West Indian islands did not escape the attention of the Marquis de Bouillé, Governor-General of Martinique. He accordingly landed on the 7th of September upon the island of Dominica with 20,000 men, and proceeded to attack the different forts and batteries by land, while his marine force gave its assistance by sea. He resolved to make two principal attacks with all his troops between the city of Roseau and Fort Cachacron, situated on the southern extremity of the island, while the Sieur Fontineau, captain of a privateer, was to land fifty filibusters to endeavour to surprise the fort, which was weak, covered by the "Diligente" frigate. Fort Cachacron was soon seized, and the Vicomte de Damas then landed with his chasseurs, who, under the command of the Sieur de la Chaize, stormed the battery of Lonbiere, which commanded the pass, and the Viscount was thus enabled to seize the heights which commanded the city: all resistance from the handful of regular troops on the island, under Lieut.-Governor Stuart, being unavailing, as soon as the enemy had carried their attack to the little capital of Roseau, a surrender by capitulation was proposed, and the Marquis granted extremely liberal terms. The French found 164 pieces of brass cannon, and twenty-four mortars, and some British vessels in harbour, all which became prizes to the conquerors.

To increase the vexation of Admiral Barrington, he was lying at

the time inactive with two ships of the line and some frigates, almost within sight of the island at Barbadoes, waiting for instructions; and if his orders had allowed him his force would have been fully sufficient to have saved Dominica, as the French had not at the time a single ship of the line in that quarter. Matters, however, were soon changed. D'Estaing having thoroughly repaired, cleaned, and well victualled his fleet at Boston, was now enabled to quit that part of the American continent (where it appears some blood had been spilt between the French sailors and the inhabitants in a quarrel), and to proceed to the Caribbean Sea on the 3rd of November. On the same day a detachment of about 5000 men, under Major-General Grant, was sent by Sir Henry Clinton for the protection of the West India islands, which sailed from Sandy Hook under the convoy of five men-of-war and some frigates under Commodore Hotham, so that the two fleets might have fallen in with each other on their passage; but they did not do so, for a gale that dispersed the French was weathered by the British, although the fleets were so near that a brigantine with horses, which separated from the British, fell into D'Estaing's hands on the 28th of November. Admiral Hotham reached Barbadoes on the 10th of December and joined Barrington there, who immediately planned an expedition against the French island of St. Lucia, the troops to be employed being placed under the command of Brigadier Meadows. The reserve, which consisted of the 5th regiment with grenadiers and light infantry, were securely landed at the grand Cul de Sac on the evening of the 13th, and attacked and carried the heights upon the north side of the bay. The Chevalier de Micoud, the French commandant, with such regular forces and militia as he had on the island, had taken up a position on these heights, whence he fired upon the boats as they carried the troops to the shore. Brigadier Prescott landed at another place with five regiments, then advanced upon Castries, the capital, and took possession of the batteries and posts of the ridge of Morne Fortuné in rear of it. Meadows pushed forward to occupy the important post of La Vigie, which commands the north side of the Carenage Harbour, while Brigadier Sir Henry Calder guarded the landing-place and kept up the communication with the fleet. Celerity in execution, and prudence in securing and turning to account every advantage to be obtained in war, were never more eminently and usefully displayed than on this occasion. The last white flag on the forts had but just fallen when Count d'Estaing, with a force vastly increased from that with which he had quitted Boston, hove in sight. The day of the 14th was already far advanced, so that the French commander was obliged to defer operations till the following morning. It will be easily conceived that the night called forth all the powers and industry of Admiral Barrington to form his line so as effectually to bar the entrance of the enemy's fleet. His force consisted of his own ship, the "Prince of Wales," 74, the "Boyne," 70, the "St. Albans," 64, the "Nonsuch," 64, the "Centurion," 50, the "Isis," 50, and three frigates. They were drawn up across the grand Cul de Sac. The Admiral was in the post of danger on the outward and

leeward extremity of the line, and a land battery on the southern, and another on the northern opposite points of land, crossed fire with his fleet: the bay of the Carenage was two or three miles distant, the peninsula of La Vigie, occupied by General Meadows, covered its entrance on the northern side, while the transports filled the intervening portion of the Cul de Sac. When day broke on the 15th the French Admiral, ignorant as it would seem of the extent to which the British forces had spread their conquest upon the island, stood in with his whole fleet and transports for the Carenage, but a well-directed fire from some of the batteries, which had so lately changed masters, upon the flag-ship, the "Languedoc," soon convinced him of his mistake. He then contented himself with firing a broadside and bore away seemingly at a loss how to act, but after some hesitation he forthwith changed his course and bore down with ten sail of the line upon the British squadron in the Cul de Sac. A warm conflict ensued; but the French were so severely hauled by the shipping, supported by the land batteries, that after two different attacks, the one in the morning and the other in the afternoon, they fell into evident confusion and disorder, and retired from their attempt with some loss, and without having made the smallest effect or impression on the British line. On the following day, the 16th, the whole French fleet sheered off to windward and anchored in Grosislet Bay, about two leagues to the northward. Here D'Estaing landed 9000 men, which had been collected from the different Caribbean islands, and assembled with the intention of conquering the British West India islands in succession. On the 18th, after a full view and consideration of the positions occupied by the British, D'Estaing determined upon attacking General Meadows, who with the reserve was stationed and almost shut up in the peninsula of La Vigie with only 1300 men, in possession of very strong ground, but exposed to be attacked from the sea in his rear, as well as by the troops from the land in the front. The French advanced in three columns to the attack, the right led by D'Estaing himself, the centre by M. Löwendahl, and the left by the Marquis de Bouillé; the remainder of the troops watched Prescott and the forces on the side of the Cul de Sac, to check any attempt they might make to succour Meadows. The French troops were enlisted with great effect in their advance by the batteries on the south side of the bay, but with characteristic impetuosity they rushed on to the charge in spite of every impediment. The British with equally accustomed coolness and immovable firmness awaited them without firing a shot until the enemy reached the foot of the intrenchments, when after one deadly volley they advanced on them at the point of the bayonet with such effect, that the French recoiled, but with determined bravery made a second and even a third attempt; these last were, however, no longer made with their first ardour, and they were driven back at length with irretrievable disorder, leaving their dead and wounded in the hands of the victors; 400 were killed, 500 desperately, and 600 slightly wounded, a number superior to the whole of the force opposed to them. General Meadows and a good many other officers



were wounded. It is related that the General rallied the 5th regiment of foot in front of the colours, and waving his sword in his left hand, for he was wounded in the right, cried out, "Soldiers, as long as you have a bayonet left, defend these colours;" he remained in the field and never quitted his post till all was finished. This blow seems to have paralyzed the energies of M. d'Estaing, who though still far superior both in naval and military resources to his antagonist, did not attempt another engagement: he lingered in seeming irresolution for some ten days on the island without making any attempt whatever, either by land or water, and at length on the evening of the 28th he re-embarked his troops, and on the following day abandoned the island to its fate. The Chevalier de Micoud, finding himself thus totally deserted, capitulated before the fleet was out of sight of the island, and obtained favourable terms, though he was altogether at the mercy of the conquerors without the slightest hope of assistance.

### 13. WAR IN NORTH AMERICA, WYOMING, NEWFOUNDLAND, GEORGIA—CAPTURE OF SAVANNAH.

In the course of this year the military operations in North America produced some fruits in the southern colonies. A strong party of American loyalists, called Tories, with some Indians, under the command of Colonel Butler, appeared in July on the Susquehanna and attacked Wyoming, an extremely beautiful and prosperous settlement on that river. The junction of Europeans and Indians on that expedition, breaking unexpectedly and suddenly upon a remote and peaceful people, carrying fire and sword through the settlement, and committing the most shocking cruelties, soon converted this terrestrial paradise into a frightful waste. It has given rise to one of the most pathetic poems in the English language by the celebrated Thomas Campbell.

General Grey was despatched by Sir Henry Clinton with a fleet of transports and troops to destroy some nests of privateers in the creeks adjoining Buzzard's Bay, which service was effectually performed on the 6th of September. On the 5th of October a number of privateers and prizes, together with some valuable salt-works, were the object of an expedition against Egg Harbour on the Jersey coast, under Captain Ferguson of the 70th, with about 300 men, and Captain Collins with the "Zebra" and two other frigates. A large booty was made by a similar expedition at an island called Martha's Vineyard. Admiral Montague, who commanded on the Newfoundland station, sent some frigates to take possession of the French islands of St. Pierre and Miquelon, which had been ceded to that nation at the last peace for the purpose of enabling the inhabitants to carry on their fishery, and no opposition being made, they were taken possession of, and all the people transported by agreement to France.

The southern colonies had for a considerable time partaken little in the ravages of war, and Georgia, the most southern and remote, was carrying on its traffic nearly as in peace, when towards the

close of the year an expedition was planned against it by Sir Henry Clinton, which was placed under the command of Colonel Campbell, a brave and able officer. The force of British, Hessians, and provincials appointed to act on the service consisted of about seven battalions with some artillery, and was escorted by a small squadron of ships of war under Commodore Hyde Parker, detached by Admiral Gambier, who now commanded on the North American station. This armament sailed from Sandy Hook on the 27th of November, but owing to a series of bad weather did not reach Tybee, near the mouth of the river Savannah, till the 27th of December. As they were ignorant of the force that might be opposed to them, they delayed their disembarkation for a day or two to gain intelligence: at length the boats brought off two men, from whom they learned that the defences of the river were much out of repair, and that there were very few troops in the town, which determined the Commodore and Brigadier as to their future operations. Accordingly on the 28th the "Vigilant" led the way, with one or two armed boats and three transports in her wake; and on the following morning, at daybreak, the first division, consisting of all the light infantry and the 71st, under the command of Lieut.-Colonel Maitland, were landed in defiance of a smart fire of musketry from some fifty men posted on a bluff, under which Captain Cameron, a spirited and most valuable officer, and about half a dozen Highlanders were struck down. Arriving near Gerridge's plantation, Colonel Campbell found himself about half-past one o'clock in face of the American army, under General Howe, drawn up in two divisions, one on either side of the causeway. The right division consisted of two regiments of Carolina troops, under Colonel Engee, and extended their force to a wooded swamp covered by the houses of Tatnal's plantation, which were defended by riflemen; the other division was of Georgia troops, under Colonel Elbert, and had their left covered by some rice-swamps and by the fort of Savannah Bluff, with the town of Savannah in their rear. They had several pieces of cannon in their front. Between the two camps a trench was cut across the road; and in front of this, and almost parallel with it ran a marshy rivulet, the bridge over which had been burned down. Fortune threw a negro slave into the hands of the British, as they were considering how to attack this force; this fellow knew a private path through the wooded swamp on the enemy's right, which was immediately occupied, while Campbell made a demonstration on the other flank, where, indeed, he was expected to make his attack, for which object he availed himself of a hollow way which totally covered his real advance from the view of the enemy, while Sir David Baird had directions to occupy it with his light infantry, and to penetrate if possible one of the wooded swamps. The Brigadier had also formed his artillery below a swell of ground, up which it was intended to run the guns as soon as the signal was made for action. The Americans opened a well-sustained fire from their artillery on this knoll, but failed to remark that it was not returned by the British, a circumstance which, combined with the apparent immobility of their troops, ought to have excited some suspicion as

to the real object of their opponents. At length, all being ready, the British artillery was suddenly brought forward, all the troops having attained their place, and now their well-directed and combined fire so overpowered the enemy that they fell into confusion and dispersed on every side. Nothing could exceed the confusion and rout of the fugitives, upon whose flanks the light infantry under Sir James Baird threw themselves headlong, increasing their terror and flight: thirty-eight officers and 415 men, with about seventy pieces of artillery and a quantity of provisions, together with the capital city of the province, fell into the victor's hands. Above fourscore of the patriots fell in the action. On the side of the British the only casualties were Captain Campbell of Skinner's, with two men killed, and ten wounded. Instructions had been early sent to General Prevost, who commanded the troops in East Florida, that he should collect all the force that could be spared to join and co-operate with Colonel Campbell in this enterprise; but he found no small difficulty in bringing together from scattered and remote cantonments the small parties which he had to move from that side, and accordingly he had not marched when Campbell had already completed the first object of his mission, and was preparing to set out on an expedition against Sunbury, on the frontiers of the two provinces. Prevost, however, arrived at that place before him, and, bringing forward a few pieces of artillery, entirely invested the place. It was only garrisoned by about 200 men, but they were supported by some armed vessels and galleys, and made some show of defence. On the 9th of January, however, finding themselves left alone, by the reduction of the rest of the province, they surrendered at discretion. The prisoners, including the officers, amounted to 212 men; with twenty-one pieces of cannon.

---

### 1779.

1. GENERAL LINCOLN ARRIVES TO THE DEFENCE OF GEORGIA—AFFAIR AT BRIAR CREEK.—2. GENERAL PREVOST REMOVES THE WAR INTO CAROLINA—AFFAIR AT STONO FERRY.—3. NAVAL WAR—THE FRENCH CAPTURE THE ISLANDS OF ST. VINCENT AND GRENADA.—4. ACTION BETWEEN ADMIRALS D'ESTAING AND BYRON OFF GRENADA.—5. THE FRENCH AND SPANISH UNITED FLEETS ENTER THE BRITISH CHANNEL.—6. MINOR EXPLOITS AT SEA.—7. ADMIRAL D'ESTAING AND GENERAL LINCOLN LAY SIEGE TO SAVANNAH, WHICH FAILS—THE FRENCH FLEET SAILS AWAY TO FRANCE.—8. CLINTON ATTACKS STONY POINT ON THE HUDSON, WHICH WASHINGTON ATTEMPTS TO RETAKE.—9. AFFAIRS AT PAULUS HOOK, NEWHAVEN, AND PENOBSCOT.—10. PAUL JONES ON THE COAST OF GREAT BRITAIN.—11. SPAIN OBTAINS ADVANTAGES OVER THE BRITISH IN AMERICA.—12. THE WAR IN GERMANY ENDED BY THE PEACE OF TESCHEN.

1. GENERAL LINCOLN ARRIVES TO THE DEFENCE OF GEORGIA—AFFAIR AT BRIAR CREEK.

General Prevost now took the command. Brigadier Campbell had

penetrated as far up the river as Augusta, the second city of the province, which on his approach the American Brigadier Williamson, with a body of provincials, had quitted. Alarmed at this rapid progress of the royal army, the patriot government made dispositions to avert it. General Lincoln was immediately sent off with a reinforcement of republican troops for the protection of South Carolina, and had now arrived: he was posted at P'neysburgh, on the opposite side of the river, about twenty miles from Savannah. Considering Augusta untenable, and that it was desirable to concentrate his force, Prevost recalled Campbell's party to Hudson's Ferry. Higher up the river there was posted a body of provincials under General Ashe, and on the retreat of Campbell from Augusta these were ordered to take post in a very strong situation on Briar Creek. General Lincoln, on the retreat of the British from Augusta, thought the opportunity a favourable one for attempting to cut off all communication between the British and the back country. Major-General Prevost was however at the same time acting upon a design of surprising Ashe in his strong post: with which view he had sent Major Macpherson with the 71st, and Sir David Baird with a detachment of light infantry, in all 900 men, to gain their rear by a long circuit of fifty miles. He then made some movement on the borders of the river to attract the attention of Lincoln, and as soon as he found that the enemy's attention was fully engaged, he threw the whole strength of his troops upon General Ashe's front and rear and completely surprised and routed him in open daylight: this was on the 3d of March. Some 150 men fell in the action, but a number of officers and men were drowned in attempting to escape; the British took 200 prisoners, amongst whom was General Elbert, the second in command, and seven pieces of cannon.

## 2. GENERAL PREVOST REMOVES THE WAR INTO CAROLINA— AFFAIR AT SIONO FERRY.

General Lincoln therefore quitted the post with the greater portion of his force, and left the way to Charlestown open to Prevost. The English General accordingly advanced towards that city, where he had been led by the loyalists to expect a friendly reception. Towards the end of April he passed the Savannah River at Astley's Ferry with a force of about 3000 men. General Moultrie, who commanded a corps of about 1500 militia, was unable to oppose this movement, and retreated towards Charlestown. Lincoln deluded himself with the idea that the British had no further intention than to seek supply, and it was therefore some days before he became aware of the danger that menaced the capital of Carolina, but as soon as he was awakened to it he returned with great expedition to its relief. Prevost in the mean while had readily dispersed the slight opposition he met with, and on the 11th of May stood on a position nearly within cannon-shot of the city. On the following morning he sent in a summons, and some negotiations ensued, which however ended fruitlessly, and the garrison made preparations for repelling the assault they anticipated. Prevost however hesitated to make it. He had been dis-

appointed in the temper of the inhabitants, who showed no sign of sympathy with him, and he found himself without battering guns or a naval force to co-operate in the attack: moreover he expected the speedy return of Lincoln, and he therefore thought it prudent to break up his camp and retire. Accordingly the same night, while the enemy were standing to their arms in momentary apprehension of an attack, he quietly decamped, and by morning had traversed the Ashley River and passed to the islands of St. James and St. John. In this situation he thought to remain in order to receive the supplies of ammunition and provision that he expected from New York. But General Lincoln, having now recovered himself, resolved to disturb the British in their quarters of repose; and on the 20th of June he proceeded with 5000 men and eight pieces of cannon to attack Colonel Maitland, who had been left in command of John's Island, and was strongly posted at the pass of Stono Ferry with the 71st, Hessians, and militia, amounting to about 800 men. An attack on the British pickets first gave the alarm, and Maitland immediately despatched two companies of Frazer's Highlanders (71st) to observe the motions of the enemy; but the impetuous valour of these hardy mountaineers hurried them on too far, and, falling in with the left wing of the patriots, they charged them with their claymores, and continued the conflict until all their officers were killed or wounded, and of the entire two companies only eleven men returned. This success encouraged the Americans to attack the British lines, which they did, and a regiment of Hessians had already given way, when the remaining companies of the Highlanders, determined to avenge their fallen comrades, valorously stayed the progress of the assailants, and gave a turn to the fortune of the day. Maitland, skilfully seizing the happy moment, rallied the Hessians, and the efficient fire of an armed flat that covered the left flank obliged the enemy to retire. Lincoln had made the attempt with great spirit, but was repulsed, although with a loss nearly equal on both sides. Prevost received no further obstruction after this, but securely established himself in the harbour of Port Royal, which gave him a secure footing in South Carolina, covering Georgia, and in open communication with Savannah; having excellent quarters for his troops during the intense heats of the coming season, and a harbour at hand capable of affording the best station for the royal shipping and fleets.

### 3. NAVAL WAR—THE FRENCH CAPTURE THE ISLANDS OF ST. VINCENT AND GRENADA.

It is now time to turn our attention to the events, naval and military, that were occurring in other quarters of the world. Early in the year a French squadron under the Marquis de Vaudreuil, on its way to join Admiral d'Estaing, with a body of troops under the Duke de Lauzun, made a clean sweep of all the British forts and settlements on the river Gambia and other places on the African coast, which had been ceded by the French to the English in the former war, and captured them all.

In the West Indies, however, they could not obtain the same decided superiority. Admiral Byron had arrived at that station on the 6th of January, and joining his squadron to that of Admiral Barrington at St. Lucia, assumed the chief command of the fleet in the Caribbean Sea. He was now so strong that none of the French ships could be induced to come out of their harbours, though he omitted no expedient to insult them, both off Martinique and elsewhere, but all his endeavours were fruitless. The noxious effect of the climate soon began to tell however upon the British, and a dreadful mortality in a short time prevailed amongst the soldiers and sailors on board their shipping, making a diminution of strength which it was not easy at the time to repair. Nevertheless reinforcements continued to reach both sides. M. de Grasse contrived to elude the watchfulness of the British cruisers, and got safe into Martinique with a considerable convoy, and, on the other hand, about the same time Admiral Rowley arrived on this station with 200 sail of the outward-bound under a convoy of seven ships of the line and three frigates. Towards the middle of June it became necessary for the British to convoy the homeward-bound, and the more so as it was known that M. de la Motte-Piquet would be on the sea somewhere on his way to join M. d'Estaing about this time. Admiral Byron, therefore, resolved to convoy himself the trade, part of the way with his whole fleet, and with this view left St. Lucia on the 6th. D'Estaing immediately seized the opportunity of making an attempt on the island of St. Vincent, where he knew that the native Caribs were inimical to the British settlers. A force was sent with this object, estimated at no more than 450 men, under the command of Lieutenant de Troplong du Rumau, who boldly landed upon the island, which was garrisoned by a force quite equal in number to that of the invaders, consisting of seven companies of the 60th regiment under Lieut.-Colonel Etherington; nevertheless Etherington, without firing a shot, induced the governor, Mr. Valentine Morris (a worthy and useful man in ordinary times, but one unequal to such an emergency), to sign a capitulation with too much haste, so that the French got possession of the island. Nor was this all. Admiral d'Estaing, reinforced by the arrival of the squadron under M. de la Motte-Piquet, put to sea, and arrived on the 2nd of July off Grenada with a fleet of twenty-five or twenty-six ships of the line and twelve frigates, having 10,000 soldiers on board. This island had at the time no other defence than a fortified hill commanding the harbour, and a garrison of 150 men of the 48th regiment under Lord Macartney, about 350 militia, 200 volunteers, and some seamen. Between 2000 and 3000 military under Count Dillon were landed next morning, and though they were bravely repulsed on their first attack, they made good their lodgment on the island by the aid of a well-directed fire from the vessels in the roadstead; when Lord Macartney, unaccustomed to a military command, surrendered at once at discretion, and the island was immediately occupied by the French.

## \* 4. ACTION BETWEEN D'ESTAING AND BYRON OFF GRENADA.

In the mean time Admiral Byron had returned and heard at St. Lucia of the loss of the island of St. Vincent, and of the imminent danger of Grenada. He accordingly hastened to the relief of that island, and at break of day on the 6th came in sight of the coast, where the French flag was flying and the enemy's fleet at anchor off the harbour of St. George, numbering twenty-seven ships of the line, besides frigates. Byron's force consisted of twenty-one sail, and a single frigate, and he had also to protect a number of transports with him, containing troops. Nevertheless signal was immediately made for close engagement, and at half-past seven A. M. Admiral Barrington in the "Prince of Wales," with Captains Sawyer and Gardiner in the "Boyne" and "Sultan," closed with the van of the enemy, but being exposed to the whole weight of fire before they could receive support, they suffered much damage in the ships, and great loss of men, the vice-admiral being amongst those wounded. The French fleet had weighed and got out to sea immediately they had sight of the British fleet, and it was evidently the object of D'Estaing not to risk a mere engagement of honour, since he had already obtained every solid advantage without any fighting. During the evolutions therefore which ensued on both sides, the "Grafton," Captain Thomas Collingwood, led a squadron on the larboard tack, consisting of the "Cornwall," Captain Edwards, and the "Lion," and the "Mounmouth," Captains Cornwallis and Fanshawe, but though led in the most exemplary manner the French fleet so manœuvred as to make them pass successively on attack, and they had consequently to sustain the whole fire of the French fleet, by which they were severely handled in their hulls and rigging, and the Commodore's ship alone had thirty-six killed and sixty-three wounded. Rear-Admiral Rowley had been left to cover and protect the transports, but D'Estaing was so strong that he was now ordered by signal to bring up the van division and support, and was soon so hotly engaged that he had thirty-two killed and wounded in the "Suffolk." The French Admiral made no attempt to carry off the transports, but suffered them to get away without let or molestation, without detaching ships in pursuit, so that they bore away singly for Jamaica, which they reached in safety. It was not until his ships had sustained grievous loss that to his great disgust Byron discovered the French colours raised on the fort of the island. He therefore now thought it better to quit the fight, and sailed away for St. Christopher's, leaving D'Estaing in quiet possession of Grenada. The French Admiral therefore justly claimed a victory, for which a *Te Deum* was celebrated at Paris, though they had not captured a single ship nor carried off a trophy of any kind. The French historian, Lauretelle, remarks on this event at Grenada with an impartial delicacy, that the English writers twitted their opponents with making so much fuss for such a trifling advantage, saying, "See the joy of a child," and admits that such rejoicings "*prouvaient moins la passion que la diuette de la gloire.*" The French did, however, ride the Caribbean

## 232 FRENCH AND SPANISH ENTER THE CHANNEL. [A.D.]

Sea at this juncture in triumph, though they did not venture to attack any more of the British islands. The loss in the French fleet was thought to have been very considerable, that on board the British ships amounted to 183 killed, and 346 wounded, there being three or four officers in each list.

### 5. THE FRENCH AND SPANISH UNITED FLEETS ENTER THE BRITISH CHANNEL.

It was never supposed that Spain would long remain neutral in the American contest, after France had resolved to support the insurgents: accordingly on the 16th of June the Marquis d'Almodavar, the Spanish ambassador at the court of London, presented to the British government a manifesto amounting to a declaration of war. Letters of marque and reprisal were therefore issued against the Spaniards, who on their part were not slow in making naval preparations. The French fleet, consisting of twenty-eight sail of the line, under the command of M. d'Orvilliers, sailed from Brest on the 4th of June, and took its course to the coast of Spain. They had in the previous month made an abortive attempt upon the island of Jersey with a force of about 5000 or 6000 men in flat-bottomed boats, under the command of the Count de Nassau, convoyed by some frigates and armed cutters, but they had been so effectually received by the 78th regiment at St. Omer's Bay, that they had returned to port *renfermé*, and now resolved to try their fortune on their natural element. They were in no force to compete with the British fleet in the Channel, which consisted at this time of forty-four ships of war, large ships of two or three tiers of guns, under the command of Admiral Sir Charles Hardy, who had succeeded Admiral Keppel, and who now went forth to look after the enemy's fleets. On the 24th of June, however, the Spanish fleet, under Don J. de Cordova, joined itself to that of France, and the combined squadrons assumed a formidable proportion, consisting of sixty-six of the largest vessels of the line, besides a cloud of frigates, fire-ships, and war vessels of smaller denomination. This formidable array having turned its course northward, towards the middle of August entered the British Channel, and threatened the coast of Great Britain, actually parading for two or three days before Plymouth, to the intense alarm of the population in the vicinity of that harbour. The "Ardent," 64, on her way from Portsmouth to join Admiral Sir Charles Hardy, had the misfortune to be captured by this fleet in sight of port, having mistaken the French fleet for the British. Just before the arrival of the combined fleets of the enemy the Jamaica fleet of 200 sail richly laden, had passed up Channel; and a few days later eight homeward-bound East Indiamen, having received timely notice of their danger, escaped in safety to Limerick. Sir Charles Hardy was not long in ignorance of the situation of the enemy's fleets, and on the last day of August he returned to the Channel, having the wind in his favour. The combined French and Spanish were not able to prevent him, but they nevertheless made some hostile demonstration before which the British retired, while the enemy did not venture



far in pursuit. After a few days this most powerful armament, the greatest perhaps that ever assembled in this narrow sea, showed symptoms of withdrawing from all contest to the port of Brest. It was said that the crews had become extremely sickly, and they were obliged to return to land for the medical treatment they required.

#### 6. MINOR EXPLOITS AT SEA.

Many gallant actions between detached ships were occurring at this time in different parts of the ocean, which may be now recorded together. On the 31st of January the "Apollo," 32, Captain Powell, cruising off the north coast of France, chased ten sail of merchantmen under convoy of the "Oiseau," Chevalier de Tarade, and after an action of an hour and a half, they were all taken with their convoy. On the 2nd of June the "Ruby," 64, Captain Everitt, captured the "Podesta," 36-gun frigate, at St. Domingo. On the 14th of September the "Pearl," 32, Captain Montagu, cruising off the Azores, sighted the "Santa Monica," 28-gun Spanish ship, and made her strike. On the 6th of October an action more remarkable for the desperate spirit with which it was fought than from the force engaged, took place off Ushant, when the "Quebec," 32, Captain Farmer, and the "Rambler," Lieutenant George, engaged the "Surveillante," 40, French frigate, with the "Expédition," 16. The fight lasted three hours and a half, when all the ships were totally dismantled, lying alongside of each other. With her sails lying over her side the "Quebec" still continued the action until she took fire, and burned with fury till she blew up. Captain Farmer, who was wounded, was requested to leave his ship, but he refused and was destroyed with her. The King, to mark his sense of his distinguished service, created his son a baronet. The "Surveillante," reduced to a sinking state, reached a French port with difficulty.

The Spaniards had committed great injuries and cruelties to the colonists on the Mosquito shore, and had established themselves on St. George's Key in the bay of Honduras. Sir Peter Parker accordingly despatched the "Churon," the "Lowestoffe," the "Pomona," and the "Racehorse," under the command of Commodore Luttrell, who opportunely meeting at sea with the "Porcupine," Captain Dalrymple, having a detachment of 500 loyal Irish under convoy, they determined to unite their forces and make a combined attack both by sea and land on a Spanish fortress in those parts, called San Fernando de Honduras. Having neither force sufficient, however, nor any battering train with which to carry on a siege, all their hopes of success centred in an attempt to carry the place by a *coup-de-main*. On the night of the 16th of October the "Pomona" was towed in pretty close to shore, and 150 men with scaling-ladders had orders to move silently forward on a signal being given. It was about twenty minutes to three on the morning of the 17th when a heavy cannonade opened from the shipping, which so deafened and distracted the garrison, who immediately got their batteries ready to fire, that the detachment of the troops reached the descent into the ditch unperceived. They were even enabled to fix their ladders

before they were discovered, and although many were knocked over in the ascent, they got well in amongst the garrison, who in spite of the exertions of their officers, fled on all sides in a very short space of time: the governor then gave up his sword with 365 rank and file. The booty captured here was estimated at three million piastres, besides 250 quintals of quicksilver, just imported from Spain, and of immense importance to the working of the gold and silver mines on the Spanish American continent.

In the beginning of May Admiral Sir George Collier had been sent to the Chesapeake, and took possession of some towns, burning and destroying many vessels, and much provision destined for Washington's army. The American cause had not indeed to this time benefited much from the naval operations of their French allies, but Admiral d'Estaing in the beginning of September having seen the French homeward-bound fleet from the West Indies out of danger, arrived on the American coast with twenty-two ships of the line, and so unexpectedly that the "Experiment," 50, Captain Sir James Wallace, on her passage from New York to the Savannah with supplies, came across the French Admiral. She had been already dismasted in a storm, but on being attacked made a gallant and desperate defence, though she was obliged to strike her colours. Three British frigates on separate service, totally unapprehensive of danger, likewise fell into their hands.

#### 7. ADMIRAL D'ESTAING AND GENERAL LINCOLN LAY SIEGE TO SAVANNAH, WHICH FAILS—THE FRENCH FLEET SAILS AWAY TO FRANCE.

The object of the French Admiral was now to effect the destruction of the small detached British force commanded by General Prevost, which had possession of the seaboard of Georgia and the Carolinas. On the 9th of September he anchored off the bar of Tybee, at the mouth of the river Savannah. The British force was still in quarters in the island of Port Royal, where it had taken post after the affair at Stono Ferry, but the General himself was at this time at Savannah. Circumstances had much changed since the spring. The French were now masters of the coast, and no means existed of uniting the troops but by the numerous inland navigations that intersect the country. An express to Colonel Maitland, who commanded the troops in the island, directing him to join the General, was intercepted; consequently the junction was delayed so long that the French, who had landed at Beaufort, about thirteen miles distant, and had already come into skirmish with the pickets, and whose frigates had also got possession of the lower river, now sent in a haughty summons to the town, which produced a truce for twenty-four hours. In the interval Maitland had in company with Lieutenant Goldsborough of the navy overcome all the obstacles of a junction, and arrived at Savannah; all the outposts from Georgia had also arrived on the 10th. Lieut.-Colonel Cruger came by land from Sunbury, having found himself cut off in more than one direction, but he had been obliged to sacrifice his sick and convalescents, who had capitulated. The "Fowey," and the "Rose," of 20 guns

each, with the "Keppel," and the "Germaine," armed vessels, retired towards the town, and Captains Henry Brown and Fisher came on shore to tender their assistance. In this new state of affairs a resistance was resolved upon, the sole object being confined to the defence of the town. On the day after Generals Lincoln and Pulawski joined D'Estaing's camp. The forces thus opposed were very disproportionate in numbers, the assailants being reckoned at not less than 7000 men, while the garrison, including sailors and every description of men, did not exceed 3000. The town of Savannah had been greatly strengthened by Captain Moncrieffe, an engineer officer, who gained great honour by his skill as well as by his energy and judgment. A hundred pieces of cannon in battery already supplied the place of the eight or ten that were the only effective pieces at the moment of D'Estaing's summons. The "Rose" and another vessel were sunk in the channel, and a boom laid above the town was covered by the guns of the "Germaine," which also scoured Yamacraw swamp. The enemy set to work in right earnest, and on the 24th pushed their sap to within three hundred yards of the abattis. Then Major Graham with about 100 men of the 71st made a sortie, dashing out with amazing rapidity and getting in an instant into the enemy's nearest work, till the whole French camp was in motion, and two solid columns appeared in sight, when he effected a retreat with the loss of about twenty killed and wounded, having inflicted a loss of 150 on the enemy.

At midnight between the 3rd and 4th of October the enemy's fleet and army opened a heavy bombardment upon the town, which was continued with more or less activity for five days from some fifty guns on shore and about sixteen afloat. The effect fell mostly upon the women, children, and negroes, who were in the houses, and General Prevost accordingly wrote to D'Estaing requesting permission to put them on board ships in the river, under the surveillance of French men-of-war. This request was not only refused, but the refusal was conveyed in unusual and insulting language in a letter signed by both D'Estaing and Lincoln. The temper of the assailants appears to have failed them with their patience, and accordingly without waiting the slow result of the sap, they determined on the 9th of October to assault with their utmost force. Some hours before daylight the firing began to the left of the British lines, when it was still too dark to determine with certainty the movements of the enemy, but the several commanders waited coolly at their posts, prepared for whatever might happen. The ground, notwithstanding all the efforts of the engineers, was favourable for the assailants, a swampy hollow could bring them up to within fifty yards of the principal works, and under cover of this hollow they now advanced in three columns. The grand attack was led by D'Estaing in person against the right. Here they were met with a most determined resistance from the fire of the seamen's batteries, so that they were checked in their advance, and at this most critical moment Major Gasier with the 60th and marines charged with such fury that the ditches were soon cleared and the enemy driven in confusion over the abattis and into the swamp.

With daybreak an impenetrable fog came on, but a smart firing was heard on the left and centre, though nothing could be seen. Lieut.-Colonel Porbeck of Weissenbach's regiment, being placed in command of a redoubt with some Carolina loyalists, some dismounted light dragoons, and some of the 4th and 60th regiments, in all about 100 men, here signaled himself in a remarkable manner. However, the attack was made with great spirit and perseverance, and cost one general and about 700 killed to the French, and 300 or 400 to the patriots. Admiral Count d'Estaing was wounded in two places. It was soon apparent that the design against Savannah would now be given up, and on the 18th it was discovered that the whole force had abandoned the camp during the night. D'Estaing, extremely mortified at the end of all his vast projects, returned to his fleet, and on the 1st of November quitted the coast altogether, carrying off the greater part of his fleet with him to France, and sending back the remainder to the West Indies.

#### 8. CLINTON ATTACKS STONY POINT ON THE HUDSON, WHICH WASHINGTON ATTEMPTS TO RETAKE.

The appearance of the French fleet on the American coast had excited great alarm at New York. The war had languished in that quarter all the spring, only detached expeditions and desultory invasions, productive of no important event, having hitherto taken place. On the 30th of May Commodore Sir George Collier accompanied Sir Henry Clinton on an expedition against Fort la Fayette, or Verplanks Point, and the works at Stony Point on the Hudson River. The Commodore in the "Raisonné," 64, led the way, bringing with him the "Camilla," the "Vulture," and some galleys. Next morning Major-General Vaughan landed with the 17th, 63rd, and 64th regiments within three miles of the works, which were abandoned by the enemy. Some shots were fired between the fort and the ships while the troops were landing at Stony Point, but in the night the guns were landed and dragged up the cliff into a commanding position, under the direction of General Pattison, and as early as five in the morning of the 1st of June a battery of cannon and mortars was established and a cannonade opened, when the garrison, unable to hold out or escape, surrendered at discretion.

Thus these places of refuge for privateers being destroyed proved a great relief to commerce, and these posts were fortified and held in possession. In other parts of America the British ships and troops were employed in desultory operations. A detachment under General Mathews, assisted by a squadron under Sir Charles Collier, made a descent on Virginia, where they demolished Fort Nelson at the American dockyard at Gosport which they burned. A similar scene of destruction was exhibited at Suffolk, Kemper Landing, and Tanner's Creek, where they set fire to a ship of 28 guns, ready to be launched, together with eight other ships of war on the stocks: two French merchantmen with their cargoes, and 137 vessels of one kind or another were also taken or destroyed. General Washington was not satisfied to leave Stony Point and Verplanks, which had been

fortified with so much care, in the hands of an enemy, and detached Brigadier Wayne to make an attempt to recapture the entire position. On the night preceding the 16th of July this officer with 200 light infantry successfully surprised the post at Stony Point, and overcoming every obstacle under a terrible fire of musketry and grape, he forced his way at the point of the bayonet and captured Colonel Johnson and the garrison, though he did not carry through his surprise without great loss. He was himself wounded in the head and fell to the ground: it seemed to him that he had received his death-stroke, so he raised himself on one knee and exclaimed, "Forward, my brave fellows, forward," desiring to be carried into the fort that he might die on the spot he had so gloriously conquered. He did not die, however, but received the thanks of Congress for this exploit, with a gold medal. Captain Pew of the 17th regiment fell in this action, but the affair was an exceedingly moderate one, though it suited the Americans to make the most of their success. As the morning dawned the republicans opened fire against Verplanks, and this cannonade obliged the shipping to cut their cables and fall down the river; but the British garrison at Verplanks gave them a very different reception to what they expected, and Clinton took measures for its immediate relief. Sir Henry on hearing of the occurrence at Stony Point, sent off without loss of time a detachment up the river in transports, and followed with the main army to Dobb's Ferry. At the first appearance of the transports the Americans gave up their very short siege of Verplanks, and evacuated Stony Point as rapidly as they had retaken it. Washington declared that he had got all he desired in destroying the works, and carrying off the stores, but the British General considered the occupation of the post valuable, as obliging the enemy to make a circuit of sixty miles to maintain their intercourse with the provinces east of the Hudson, and having recovered possession he left a strong garrison to defend it.

#### 9. AFFAIRS AT PAULUS HOOK, NEWHAVEN, AND PENOBSCOT.

Washington was at this time urgently called upon on every side for troops, but he had few to spare; and if he had divided his army to meet the appeals of each invaded and distressed province he would have exposed himself to be cut up in detail. He apprehended that a main design of his antagonists in these proceedings on the Hudson was to draw a portion of his army from West Point, in order to favour an attack on that important possession. The American General Parsons, though closely allied with Connecticut, was too public-spirited to back the appeals of the inhabitants there, who were loud in their denunciations of Washington for his apparent neglect of them. Instead of asking for troops, Parsons wrote to him in the following patriotic terms: "The British may probably distress this province exceedingly by the ravages they will commit, but I would rather see all the towns of my country in flames than the enemy in possession of West Point." The Americans effected a surprise on the 19th of July at Paulus

Hook, on the Jersey coast, with 350 men under Major Lee, who killed about thirty men, and took 150 prisoners, but Major Sutherland, the commander, recovered it again, and "the retreat of the patriots was as disgraceful as their attack had been spirited and well conducted."

Among many desultory invasions was one by 2600 men under Governor Tryon, who, embarking on board a squadron, arrived at Newhaven in Connecticut, where they succeeded in destroying every object of naval or military warfare within their reach: they also burned some towns, with many ships and much merchandise. About the same time an expedition was undertaken by the patriots from Boston against a fort on the Penobscot, in the state of Maine, which Colonel Maclean was erecting there, to the great alarm of the Americans at Boston. It was at the time garrisoned by about 450 of the 74th and 200 of the 82nd regiments. The American armament consisted of nearly 3000 troops, and was escorted by a frigate and sixteen other vessels of war, which made their appearance before the place on the 25th of July. The British commander was only apprised of this intended expedition four days before its arrival; but though his works were very incomplete, he succeeded in putting himself in some posture of defence by the aid of his Majesty's ships "Albany," "North," and "Nautilus," whose commanders cheerfully gave their best assistance; and they thus kept the enemy at bay till the 14th of August, when Sir George Collier, who had sailed from Sandy Hook on the 3rd with the "Raisonné," 64, and the "Greyhound," "Virginia," "Camilla," and "Galatea" frigates, arrived at Penobscot Bay. The American fleet seemed inclined at first to dispute his passage, but their resolution soon failed them, and they endeavoured to escape. Accordingly they made only a show of resistance to allow their transports time to move up the river, where they landed their troops, but it was in a desert country without provisions, so that a large proportion of them perished miserably, and the rest submitted under General Lovell. The ships were commanded by Commodore Saltonstall, and amounted to twenty vessels of from 32 to 10 guns each, all of which were captured, blown up, or burned. In the mean time a war of devastation was carried on between the republicans and their Indian neighbours. General Sullivan was placed at the head of 5000 men to carry out the retribution they desired for all the injuries they had suffered from these people. The savages marched boldly to the confines of their grounds to meet the invaders, but after an obstinate and bloody conflict on the 29th of August they fled from the contest, and abandoned their settlements to the havoc that ensued: nothing was suffered to remain that could serve for human sustenance, their towns were laid in ashes, their gardens laid waste, and their supplies of corn destroyed.

In the mean while Sir Henry Clinton did not feel secure with his forces divided north and south, so long as D'Estaing commanded the whole coast, and he entertained a reasonable apprehension that an attack would be made on New York, which it was reported was

seriously meditated. He accordingly directed General Pigott to evacuate Rhode Island and join him with all his troops. As soon, however, as the apprehensions of an attack upon New York had subsided, through the discomfiture and departure of D'Estaing and his fleet, Clinton, finding himself at the head of a reinforced and concentrated army of some magnitude and in excellent condition, abundantly provided with artillery and provisions of war, and having again the command of the sea, resolved on an attack on Charleston, in South Carolina; and on the 26th of December the fleet and convoy proceeded to its destination.

#### 10. PAUL JONES ON THE COAST OF GREAT BRITAIN.

When D'Estaing quitted the West Indies the French fleet was left under the command of De la Motte-Piquet; and the British, under Admirals Parker and Rowley, recovered a decided superiority over their opponents. On the 24th of October a flying squadron cruising off Martinique, under Captain Richard Edwards, captured the French frigate "Alcmène," 32, with a convoy, a great part of which was carried off in the sight of the French Admiral at Fort Royal. On the 22nd of December Admiral Rowley, in the "Suffolk," 70, was detached, with the "Vengeance," "Magnificent," and "Stirling Castle," in pursuit of three strange sail which were seen hovering about the islands. The chase continued through the night, and about five A.M. one of the strangers after a short defence struck her colours, and proved to be the "Blanche," 36, Captain La Gaissonnière. After six hours' further chase, a second, that turned out to be the "Fortunée," 40, Chevalier Marigny, also surrendered: the third escaped. These ships were on their return from Savannah to Martinique. The celebrated adventurer, Paul Jones, first comes into story at this period: he was the son of a Scotch gardener who went out to settle in America, and embraced the cause of independence of his new country. Jones had been employed in the privateering service since 1775 with wonderful success; but he now collected seven sail, and having a thorough acquaintance with the coasts of Ireland and Scotland, did great injury to trade in that narrow sea. He made a descent at Whitehaven, where he destroyed the shipping in the harbour; and afterwards landed near the house of the Earl of Selkirk, whence he carried off all the plate and valuable furniture. After taking the "Drake" sloop of war off Carrickfergus he retired to Brest, and thence sallied out again with the "Bonhomme Richard," 40, the "Vengeance," 36, frigate, and another frigate of 32 and a brig of 12 guns. This squadron fell in with the Baltic homeward-bound fleet under convoy of the "Serapis," Captain Pearson, and the "Scarborough," 20, Captain Percy, on the 23rd of September off Flamborough Head, and after a most desperate fight these two ships of war were compelled to strike, but the convoy escaped. Jones's own ship was so battered that she sunk on entering the Texel. These bold and successful exploits gave him a great reputation not only in America, but in France, where the King presented him with a richly ornamented sword, and so far

forgot his dignity as to make the buccaneer a knight of the military Order of Merit.

#### 11. SPAIN OBTAINS ADVANTAGES OVER THE BRITISH IN AMERICA.

On the continent of North America the Spaniards were more successful against their adversary than in their naval operations. The requisite preparations having been previously made, Don Bernardo Galvez, governor of Louisiana, commenced hostilities against the British soon after the Spanish court announced its union with France. Collecting a force of 2000 men, he made an irruption into West Florida, which was defended by only 1800 men, the principal portion of whom were at Pensacola, and the rest scattered in different garrisons. Having formally recognized the independence of America, the Governor set his troops in motion, ascended the course of the Mississippi, and on the 12th of April, after a siege of nine days, reduced the British fort at the mouth of the Ibbewater, garrisoned with 500 men; in September, proceeding up the river as far as the Natchez, he occupied the forts and settlements which formed the barrier of that province on the west, and overran a fertile country 200 miles in extent.

#### 12. THE WAR IN GERMANY ENDED BY THE PEACE OF TESCHEN.

The war in Germany was renewed in the spring, but the Czarina came forward to exert her influence to put an end to a dispute that seemed likely to endanger the peace of all Europe. She threatened the Emperor that unless he renounced all schemes of usurpation and conquest she would act with vigour on the side of her Prussian ally; and Prince Repnin was ordered to keep his army ready to march. An armistice was accordingly agreed upon in March, and a congress appointed to be held at Teschen in Silesia, where on the 18th of May a treaty was concluded to settle the Bavarian succession, and Frederick of Prussia gained the honour of being the champion of the German empire against the Emperor of Germany.

One event, scarcely one of war, but honourable to the belligerent powers, signalized the year. The great English circumnavigator, Cooke, was engaged in his third and last voyage of discovery in the Pacific, and to its honour the French court issued an order to all its naval commanders not on any account to throw any interruption in the way of his surveys.

---

### 1780.

1. RODNEY DEFEATS THE SPANISH FLEET OFF CAPE ST. VINCENT—GIBRALTAR RELIEVED.—2. BIGHT OF SEARCH—GREAT BRITAIN SEIZES SEVEN DUTCH SHIPS AND A FRENCH CONVOY OF MERCHANTMEN LADEN WITH MILITARY STORES.—3. WAR IN NORTH AMERICA—CLINTON TAKES CHARLESTON—ACTION AT WAXSAW.—4. NAVAL FIGHT BETWEEN RODNEY AND DE GUICHEN IN THE WEST INDIES.—5. NAVAL WAR.—6. SPANISH SUCCESSES AGAINST THE



BRITISH.—7. WAR IN NORTH AMERICA—COUNT DE ROCHAMBEAU WITH A FRENCH ARMAMENT ARRIVES AT RHODE ISLAND.—8. WAR IN THE CAROLINAS—BATTLE OF CAMDEN.—9. GENERAL ARNOLD'S TREACHERY—FATE OF MAJOR ANDRÉ.—10. WAR IN THE EAST INDIES—COLONEL EGBERTON CAPITULATES—COLONEL GODDARD DEFEATS SCINDIA AND HOLKAR—GWALIOR TAKEN BY POPHAM.—11. HYDER ALI DEFEATS COLONEL BAILLIE AT PERAMBAUCAM.—12. HASTINGS SENDS SIR EYRE COOTE TO THE COMMAND AT MADRAS—ADMIRAL HUGHES DESTROYS HYDER'S FLEET OFF MANGALORE.—13. DEATH OF THE EMPRESS QUEEN, MARIA THERESA.

1. RODNEY DEFEATS THE SPANISH FLEET OFF CAPE ST. VINCENT—GIBRALTAR RELIEVED.

It was scarcely disguised by Spain that her principal object in entering upon this war was to attempt the recapture of Gibraltar. That important fortress had accordingly been very closely blockaded ever since the commencement of hostilities, and the garrison was in consequence at this time reduced to very considerable distress. Accordingly Admiral Sir George Rodney, who had been appointed to the chief command in the West Indian seas, was ordered with a strong squadron to proceed to the relief of Gibraltar by the way. He had only been a few days at sea when he fell in on the 8th of January with a rich Spanish convoy bound from St. Sebastian to Cadiz, consisting of fifteen merchantmen, guarded by the "Guipuscoa," with four frigates and two smaller armed vessels. The greater part of these vessels were laden with wheat, flour, and other provisions much wanted in Gibraltar. The whole of these he captured; but he sent the Spanish 64 to England, and named it the "Prince William," in compliment to the Duke of Clarence, who was in the action for the first time, having now been introduced into the service of his country and placed as a mid-shipman under Rear-Admiral Digby. The Admiral then continued his voyage, and on the 16th fell in with a Spanish fleet of eleven ships of the line under the command of Don Juan de Langara off Cape St. Vincent, where he was awaiting the convoy which Rodney and the tempest had destroyed. As soon, however, as the Spaniards discovered that Rodney was far superior to him in force he attempted to escape. He was favoured by a rough gale, a terrible sea, and a dangerous coast; but Rodney with great daring and ability got between him and the shore, and, to counteract his design, changed the signal for a line of battle abreast to that for a general chase, with orders to engage the ships as they came up in rotation. The headmost ships came up to the Spaniards about four in the afternoon and began to engage, but these returned the fire of the British with great spirit and resolution. Night soon fell, and it was a dark one, and the dangerous shoal of St. Lucar was under the lee: nevertheless the action continued. Early in the contest the Spanish ship "San Domingo," 70, with a crew of 600, blew up under the fire of the "Bienfaisant," 64, Captain Macbride, which was nearly involved in her ruin. It was two hours after midnight before the battle was over, when the wind had increased to a gale; but the

Spanish Admiral's ship, the "Phoenix," 80, Captain Don Francisco Melgarys, and the "Monarca," 74, struck to the "Sandwich," the flag-ship. The "Princeza," 76, and the "Diligente," 74, were all taken and carried off safely to port. The "San Juliana," 74, commanded by the Duke de Medina, although captured and an English lieutenant and seventy men put on board her, afterwards ran on shore; and such is sometimes the caprice of war, that this vessel was recaptured, and the victors became prisoners. The "San Eugenia," 74, also ran upon the breakers, and was lost, and of the remainder four escaped to Cadiz. Such was the fate of the Spanish squadron, while the British loss only amounted to thirty-two killed and 102 wounded. The Spanish Admiral, Langara, behaved with great gallantry, and was wounded. Rodney was made a supernumerary knight of the Bath, and had the thanks of parliament, and freedoms of corporations in gold boxes showered upon him: he now proceeded on his way to Gibraltar triumphantly, and having relieved its necessities and remained there some weeks, he set sail for the West Indies about the middle of February with a part of his ships, while the other vessels, under the command of Admiral Digby, convoyed the Spanish prizes to England.

## 2. RIGHT OF SEARCH—GREAT BRITAIN SEIZES SEVEN DUTCH SHIPS AND A FRENCH CONVOY OF MERCHANTMEN LADEN WITH MILITARY STORES.

They were not many days parted before the returning fleet fell in with a considerable French convoy bound to the Mauritius under the protection of two ships, and a general chase ensued, when the "Prothée," 64, and two or three vessels laden with military stores were taken. In former years Spain had haughtily asserted the right of search on the seas, and Great Britain, since she had obtained the superiority, had done so likewise. Holland had always protested against this assumed right over neutral powers not engaged in the war, and the dispute was now at its height, because the British cruisers were every day stopping Dutch and other vessels that were conveying French or American property. Count Florida Blanca, the Spanish minister, now entered into the controversy, maintaining that what the Spaniards called the right of search and what the British called it were different things. Stimulated by France, and encouraged by the King of Prussia, the Czarina also entered into the dispute. The Danish and Swedish courts likewise engaged to maintain the system which she had recommended in a manifesto issued on the 26th of February, asserting "that free bottoms make free goods." But before this celebrated state paper was known the British, keeping no longer any terms with the Dutch, sent out Commodore Fielding with a good squadron to intercept a fleet from Holland under the convoy of Count Bylandt, said to be bound for the Mediterranean, but in reality destined to supply French ports with munitions of war. On the 1st of January Fielding came up with these Dutchmen a little to the westward of the Isle of Wight and desired to examine the merchant vessels. The Admiral refused,

and fired at the boats which were sent for this purpose. Fielding in consequence fired a shot ahead of the Count's ship, which the Dutchman replied to by a whole broadside. Fielding on this fired a broadside likewise, on which Count Bylandt struck his colours, with the two ships of the line and two frigates that were with him. He was given to understand that he might rehoist his colours and proceed on his voyage, but he refused to do the latter, although he raised his flag and saluted that of England. The seven merchant vessels that were with him were found to be laden with warlike and naval stores, and the whole of them were carried into Portsmouth harbour, leaving it to diplomacy to settle the right and the wrong of it; but before the end of the year Holland had joined the hostile confederacy against Great Britain, and what was termed the "northern armed neutrality" effectually completed the isolation of the United Kingdom at this most critical moment of her contest with her American revolted colonies. Nothing could be more formidable. But the British government had not acted upon any uncertainty as to the intentions of the Dutch, as an affair had happened in September that had put them quite *au fait* of the inimical policy of the States General. The "Vestal" frigate had captured the "Mercury," an American packet, on board of which was found Mr. Laurens, the former President of the Congress, and among his papers was discovered a treaty of amity and commerce with Holland. And when the States General had been remonstrated with on the subject of their having permitted the enemy to carry prizes into their ports, Van Berchal, the Grand Pensionary, paid no attention to their complaints, nor to the demand made upon him by Great Britain for the assistance that Holland was bound by treaty to afford.

### 3. WAR IN NORTH AMERICA—CLINTON TAKES CHARLESTON—ACTION AT WAXSAW.

It was not until the 11th of February that Sir Henry Clinton's force from New York reached the inlet or harbour of North Edisto, on the coast of South Carolina, and possessed themselves without opposition of the islands of St. James and St. John, which stretch to the south of Charleston harbour; but it was the end of March before the heavy artillery from the ships were landed under Captain Elphinstone of the navy, and the reinforcements from Georgia had arrived to enable them to cross the Ashley River, and establish themselves on what is called Charleston Neck. This is defended by a dangerous bar or sandbank, behind which the deep water afforded a convenient situation for some American ships of war, the largest of which carried 44 and the smallest 16 guns. On the night of the 1st of April Sir Henry broke ground within 800 yards of the enemy's works, and proceeded to mount his guns in battery; and soon afterwards the fleet, under Admiral Arbuthnot, forced its way into the harbour, and now proved of great service in the operations of the siege. The patriots were, however, fully prepared for these operations, and had greatly strengthened their position, which was already very strong by nature. They had built a

chain of redoubts, lines, and batteries right across the peninsula from the Ashley to the Cooper Rivers, and had above eighty guns and mortars mounted upon them, under the direction of M. Launay, a French engineer in the service of Congress. Commodore Whipple with nine sail of armed vessels was appointed to defend the entrance of the bar; and Fort Moultrie, a kind of citadel on Sullivan's Island, strongly built and bomb-proof, effectually enfiladed this approach. The whole garrison, 7000 strong, were under the command of General Lincoln.

Whipple, however, retired at the approach of the British squadron, and sank some ships across the mouth of the Cooper, for if Arbutnot could have carried up some of his large ships there he would have raked the whole of the enemy's lines. On the 9th of April the Admiral, taking advantage of a southerly wind and flowing tide, dashed past Fort Moultrie with the "Renown," 50, "Romulus," 44, "Roebuck," 44, also the "Blonde," "Perseus," "Camilla," and "Baleigh" frigates, and anchored before the town just out of reach of any of the batteries. Before opening fire the British sent a summons to Lincoln, who replied to it, according to custom, "that he would defend the place to the last extremity." Major Moncrieffe, who had gained some reputation in the defence of Savannah, was entrusted with the conduct of the siege; and on the 19th of April he had already carried his second parallel to 150 yards from the main works, and his batteries had acquired a manifest superiority over those of the besieged.

To assist his communications with the country outside, Lincoln sent some cavalry beyond Cooper's River, with some militia, who were very troublesome to Clinton, by possessing themselves of the bridges across it. Accordingly, as soon as his situation permitted, he despatched 1400 men under Lieut.-Colonel Webster, with some light infantry under Major Ferguson, and a corps of cavalry under Lieut.-Colonel Tarleton, to scour the country. This latter officer was one of the most active and daring commanders, particularly successful on these outpost duties; he had the good fortune to disperse a large force of the enemy at Monk's Corner, capturing all their stores and baggage with 400 horses; and on the night of the 19th he surprised, and almost wholly cut off, a party at Biggin's Bridge, about thirty miles from Charleston, which permitted Webster and Ferguson to advance to the head of the Wanders River, that flows into the Cooper. By this movement he permitted a strong reinforcement to arrive from New York; and Lord Cornwallis was sent to command this important post, which cut off all escape from the beleaguered garrison, while Tarleton again encountered and ruined a body of the enemy's cavalry under Colonel White.

On the 6th of May the besiegers had advanced to their third parallel, and pushed forward a sap to the ditch, which they were enabled effectually to drain of the water. In the mean time the Admiral, having obtained information which he deemed important as to the garrison of Fort Moultrie, landed a body of seamen and

marines to storm it; but before they could do so it surrendered to Captain Hudson, with 200 men in garrison. There was nothing now but consternation and despair in the town, and Clinton thought the opportunity favourable to open a negotiation with Lincoln for a surrender; but the conditions were thought too severe, and being rejected, hostilities recommenced. Four days later, however, the conditions were accepted as proposed; and on the 11th of May the place surrendered, and General Lealie's division took possession of Charleston. The loss to the British in this siege amounted to seventy-six killed and 189 wounded. The besieged were thought to have lost nearly an equal number, but the amount of prisoners of course brought up their casualties to a very imposing total; for although Routledge, the governor of the province, had himself quitted the town as soon as the siege began, his deputy remained, with half his council, all of whom became prisoners; and to these were added seven generals, a commodore, and about 6000 men, with 400 pieces of artillery, and the whole naval force collected in the harbour, which included 1000 French seamen, with a frigate and polacre, all which were the fruits of victory on this occasion.

Lord Cornwallis had not been idle outside; and having received intelligence that a body of provincials under Colonel Burford had been collected on the north side of the Santee River with a view of being thrown into Charleston, he again despatched Colonel Tarleton at the head of a body of cavalry and mounted light infantry, who after a long and rapid march surprised the enemy at Waxsw, and upon their refusing his conditions of surrender he attacked and defeated them. The American colonel escaped with a few horsemen; but the rest, with all their artillery and baggage, were killed or taken prisoners. The whole of South Carolina being now clear of an enemy, Sir Henry Clinton gave over the command in that province to Lord Cornwallis, and withdrew to the army at New York.

#### 4. NAVAL FIGHT BETWEEN RODNEY AND DE GUICHEN IN THE WEST INDIES.

Admiral Sir George Rodney proceeded to the West Indies and took the command of the British fleet there on the 27th of March. He had learned before his arrival at St. Lucia that the French Admiral, M. de Guichen, with twenty-three ships of the line, one 50 gun ship, and eight frigates, all full of troops, had paraded for several days before the island, with a view to a surprise or to carry into effect some hostile intention, but the steadiness of the British squadron under Admiral Parker, and of the troops under General Vaughan had evidently alarmed him, or at all events frustrated his design. Sir George now determined to return the visit, and sailing out of harbour with twenty ships of the line, and the "Spartan," a 50-gun ship, for two days he insulted De Guichen in Port Royal harbour, going in so close as to count the enemy's guns. Notwithstanding his superiority of force De Guichen would not venture out, and Rodney leaving some fast-sailing frigates to watch them, returned to Grosilet Bay. Matters thus rested till the 15th of April,

when news was brought him that the French fleet had put to sea in the night. By five in the evening of the following day Rodney got sight of them; and the signal was made immediately for a general chase. The night was passed in manœuvring; De Guichen showing every intention to avoid an engagement, and Rodney endeavouring to counteract him; the British Admiral's skill in the end, however, rendered a battle inevitable. At daybreak on the 17th the British fleet moved in line ahead, on the starboard tack, to the windward of the enemy; but now departing from the established rule of naval tactics, that of fighting in line, Rodney signalled to bear down with all his force upon one division of the enemy, and after crippling that to attack the rest on more equal terms. It was a little before one o'clock when the French were brought to action. Rodney in the "Sandwich," 90, commenced it in the centre, and was nobly supported by Admiral Rowley. After beating three ships out of the line the "Sandwich" found herself alongside the "Couronne," 80, De Guichen's flag-ship, with the "Pendant," and the "Triomphante," in support. The contest was unequal, but the "Couronne" was on fire from her own red-hot shot, and Rodney in the end obliged the French Admiral and his two seconds to bear away, by which the French line of battle was broken in the centre. It was now a quarter past four o'clock; but some of the British captains, either from obstinate attachment to former usage, or from misconception of the Admiral's orders, disconcerted his plan and prevented a final issue to the conflict. The French fleet were driven from the scene of action, and in Sir George's own words "at the conclusion of the battle the enemy might be said to be completely beat," but Rodney in his public letters passes high encomiums on the French Admiral and is very sparing of commendations of his own officers, with the exception of one captain of a frigate. Some of them appear to have acted very discreditably, and he brought Captain Bateman, of the "Yarmouth," to a court-martial for disregard of signals, who was sentenced to be dismissed from the service. He also gave notice to all his captains that he expected implicit obedience to any signal made, under the certain penalty of instant suspension, if disregarded. But Vice-Admiral Sir Hyde Parker in the "Princess Royal" had nobly come up to the Admiral's aid, and it was owing to the efforts made by the "Ajax," the "Terrible," the "Grafton," and the "Trident," that the enemy's van were put into disorder. Sir George himself had nobly set the example in close action, but such was the condition of his flag-ship, the "Sandwich," that for twenty-four hours she was with difficulty kept above water, and it was therefore impossible to pursue the French fleet that night with any advantage. The flag-ship during the engagement expended 160 barrels of gunpowder, and fired not less than 3500 round shot.

Such expedition was used, however, in repairing the damage done to the ships that on the 20th the Admiral was again in sight of the enemy, and pursued them for three days, but without effect, for De Guichen took shelter under Guadaloupe, cautiously keeping the wind, while Rodney's fleet continued baffled with calms under Prince

Rupert's Head, Dominica; but Sir George still kept some frigates in sight of the enemy's fleet, and on the 6th of May again put to sea, on intelligence of their being out, and had the good fortune to sight them on the 10th, when the French Admiral again had recourse to manœuvring for several days. Upon this the British Admiral, mortified at not having it in his power to gain the wind, and thereby force the enemy to battle, directed his fleet by signal to make all possible sail on a wind. The manœuvre succeeded, so that the enemy were emboldened to approach. On the 15th Captain Bowyer, of the "Albion," the headmost ship of Admiral Rowley's division, came upon some of the enemy's heavy ships, before the Admiral in the "Conqueror," and two or three more, could come to his assistance. On the 19th a partial engagement was again brought on, but nothing decisive could be effected, and both fleets separated on the 22nd of May, the British to Barbadoes, and the French to Martinique. The total losses in these actions were, English, 120 killed and 362 wounded; French, 158 killed and 820 wounded.

After improving the condition of his fleet as much as circumstances permitted, Rodney again left Barbadoes, having been warned of the approach of the Spanish fleet, which he hoped to intercept before its junction with the French. But the cautious Admiral, Don Joseph Solano, instead of sailing direct to Martinique, the place of rendezvous, stopped short at Guadaloupe, and was enabled from thence to inform De Guichen of his whereabouts. The French Admiral immediately sailed with eighteen ships of the line and effected a junction with Solano, who had with him twelve sail of the line besides frigates and transports, with 10,000 or 12,000 troops on board, and a considerable train of artillery. Before this vast superiority of force Rodney was obliged to retire. Indeed, such a force was sufficient to have captured every British island in the Caribbean Sea. The Spaniards, however, were so careless and indifferent to the health and cleanliness of their ships, that a frightful mortality now soon spread among them and extended itself to the French fleet. In order to check this it was proposed to land the troops and part of the seamen at Fort Royal Bay, but the juxtaposition of these two nations revived national animosities, and as no agreement could be come to between the leaders as to the line of operations to be pursued, in the night of the 5th of July the combined fleet sailed out of the harbour without showing lights or signals, and directed their course to St. Domingo, where they separated—De Guichen returning to France with the homeward-bound trade, and Solano with the Spanish fleet proceeding to the Havannah. Rodney supposed that they had gone to convoy their squadrons to a certain latitude, and would then proceed to the continent of America: therefore seeing Jamaica and the other islands safe for the present he set sail for New York with eleven ships of the line and four frigates to anticipate their arrival.

#### 5. NAVAL WAR.

The independent naval actions of the war were for the most part

favourable to the British. Captain Cornwallis on the Jamaica station acquired great honour by the gallant defence he made with a very inferior force against the French Admiral, De la Motte-Piquet. On a cruise off Monte Christo on the 20th of March with his own ship the "Lion," 64, the "Bristol," 50, and the "Janus," 44, he fell in with and was chased by the French ships the "Hannibal," the "Hero," the "Vainqueur," and the "Diadème," and the frigate "Amphitrite." It was five in the afternoon when these neared the British, and a running fight was maintained through the whole night. In the morning the "Janus" was found to be disabled, and the "Lion" and the "Bristol" had to go to her assistance, which brought on a general engagement that lasted between two and three hours, in which the enemy suffered so much that they were obliged to lay-to to repair for the whole day; but the fight was again renewed during the night, and when morning broke the "Ruby," 64, with the "Niger," and the "Pomona," frigates, hove in sight and wholly changed the face of affairs. The French squadron was, it is true, still superior, but Cornwallis signalled a pursuit, and they were chased for five hours with great exultation but without any result.

On the 1st of July, off Cape Finisterre, the "Romney," 50, Captain R. Horne, captured the "Artois," 40, French frigate, considered the finest vessel at that time afloat. The action was sharp and close for forty minutes, when she was taken and added to the British navy. The "Romney" lost sixty killed and wounded out of a crew of 460. Within a few days and at a distance only of a few miles, off Cape Ortegal, on the 4th, the "Pendant," 32, Captain the Hon. W. Waldegrave, and the "Licorne," 32, Captain the Hon. T. Cadogan, captured the "Capricieuse," 40, after a gallant defence, in which they lost 100 killed and wounded. Again, in the same seas, on the 14th, the "Nonsuch," 64, Captain Sir James Wallace, when off Belleisle, chased a convoy into the mouth of the Loire, but in the moment of her escape Wallace sighted three large ships in the offing making signals: he immediately bore down upon them and soon after midnight he overtook the sternmost, the "Belle Porte," 32, Chevalier de Kergarion, which struck to him after an action of two hours' duration, in which she lost her commander and most of her officers, with about seventy men killed and wounded; the other two ships made off. On the 10th of August the "Flora," 36, Captain Peere Williams, captured the "Nymphe," 36, Chevalier du Romain, off Ushant. This gallant commander was killed after having made several attempts to board the British vessel; but at length Lieutenant Thornborough, of the "Flora," headed the crew, and after a short struggle carried the "Nymphe," with the loss of some twenty-six killed and wounded. On the 30th of September, the "Pearl," 32, Captain Montague, off Bermuda, after a well-contested action captured the "Espérance," 28. On the 2nd of November, off the river Gambia, the "Zephyr," 14, Captain Inglis, captured the "Senegal," 18. This last had been formerly taken from the British under the name of the "Racehorse," and now when she was sent home in



charge of a lieutenant, she took fire and blew up: twenty-two officers and men perishing in the catastrophe.

On the 3rd of November the "Maidstone," 28, Captain Alan Gardner, cruising about sixty leagues from Cape Henry, fell in with the French frigate "Lyon," 40. After a contest of about an hour Gardner found it necessary to haul off for the night to repair damages. At daybreak he discovered a ship which he supposed to be the consort of the one he had engaged the day before, and which made him a private signal: this he did not answer, but about twelve o'clock brought her to action, and in about an hour's time she struck, so disabled as to have four feet of water in her hold. She had a cargo of about 1300 hogshheads of tobacco, which was a prize of very considerable value to the captors. The "Lyon" had eight killed and ten wounded, and the "Maidstone" four killed and eight wounded, Captain Gardner being included among the latter. On the last day of the year, off the Downs, the "Bellona," 74, Captain Onslow, fell in with and captured the "Princess Caroline," 54. She was the first Dutch prize obtained during this war.

Cruising off Ostend on the 6th of July the "Apollo," 32, Captain Pownall, brought to close action the French privateer, "Stanislas," mounting twenty-six long 12-pounders. After an engagement which lasted nearly an hour, and in which Pownall was killed, the privateer was driven on shore and carried into Ostend, whence she was claimed and added to the British navy as the "Proselyte." The "Apollo" had five killed besides her captain and twenty wounded, but she was so much disabled as to have three feet in her hold when the action ceased. On the 13th of August the "Bienfaisant," 64, Captain Macbride, and the "Charon," 41, Captain Symonds, were despatched off the Irish coast to look after a celebrated privateer, the "Comte d'Artois," 64, and fell in with her while sailing under British colours. Captain Macbride, scarcely deceived, ranged up within pistol-shot of the privateer and spoke her, when receiving no answer he ordered the marines on the poop to fire, which was immediately returned with great smartness, and the action commenced on both sides in a manner very unusual in sea fights—entirely with musketry. After a gallant defence of an hour and ten minutes, the privateer, with the British flag still flying, surrendered just as the "Charon" came up, which was so little engaged as to have had only one man slightly wounded. The "Bienfaisant" had about twenty-five killed and wounded.

#### 6. SPANISH SUCCESSES AGAINST THE BRITISH.

The Spanish Governor of Louisiana, Don Bernardo de Galvez, thought to surprise Major-General Campbell, who commanded a British station at Pensacola. This officer had a force, part British and part German, amounting to about 500 men. Lieut.-Colonel Dickson of the 16th regiment, immediately on the approach of the Spaniards, threw himself into a field redoubt, called Baton Rouge, in which he stood a siege of nine days, after which the Major-General surrendered the settlement on conditions. Following up

his success Galvez sailed with a strong squadron from New Orleans, and with a force consisting of Spaniards, negroes, and half-castes, compelled Colonel Durnford to surrender Fort Mobile on the Mississippi.

The Spanish government were at this period well served by their private intelligence, through which they learned that the united British East and West India fleets, outward bound, were about to leave England, under a very weak escort. Accordingly, the minister, Florida Blanc, sent out Admirals Cordova and Gaston with every vessel that could be obtained, to intercept these ships near their point of separation at the Azores. Unfortunately for England they were but too successful. On the 8th of August they came up with the fleet, the "Ramillies," 74, and three frigates, being all the convoy, and although these escaped, the whole of the merchantmen, sixty in number, fell into the hands of the Spanish cruisers, and were carried into the harbour of Cadiz. The booty was estimated at two millions sterling, and there were besides some 1800 soldiers on board, on their way to reinforce the British army in India, who at this time very much required them. This success elated the Spaniards in an extraordinary degree, the prize being so great and such successes so rare in their wars with England. Florida Blanca, when the news reached him, was actually in discussion with Richard Cumberland, the well-known dramatist, who was employed by the British cabinet together with an Irish priest of the name of Hussy, to enter into some private negotiations with the Spanish government to detach it from the French alliance, by suggesting some equivalent for Gibraltar, which was the rock that always lay as heavily on the heart of Spain, as the real gigantic mass lies in the Mediterranean. On hearing of this success to his country's navy, the Spanish minister is said to have exclaimed to Cumberland, "Gibraltar is an object for which the King, my master, could break the family compact or any other engagement with France," and then, as if to give force to the asseveration, he threw a paper on the floor and trampled it under foot. Such trifling incidents show the temper of the statesmen of former times; but we regard the possession of this mighty fortress now with such different feelings, that the Spanish minister who would propose, or the British minister who would listen to any scheme for giving it up, would be thought insane. In 1780, however, the greatest exertions were made, as well in the field as in the cabinet, for the capture of the place. After the departure of Rodney from the Bay the Spaniards had redoubled their vigilance to cut off all relief to the garrison from the sea, and for that purpose they made an attempt to destroy a small British squadron which lay still in the harbour, by sending down upon it a number of fire-ships supported by row-boats and galleys, and covered by a squadron of men-of-war. The enterprise was, however, entirely defeated by the dexterity and intrepidity of the British ships and sailors, and by the steady fire from the batteries.

#### 7. WAR IN NORTH AMERICA—COUNT DE ROCHAMBEAU WITH A FRENCH ARMAMENT ARRIVES AT RHODE ISLAND.

On the American shores a destructive predatory war was at this

time carried on, attended with no event tending to a decision of the contest. About the 10th of June a force under the command of General Knyphausen, landed at Elizabethtown Point and proceeded towards Springfield, at that time the head-quarters of General Washington. Some patriot troops were instantly put in motion, and a pretty warm skirmishing ensued, in which Brigadier Stirling was wounded, and the British retired again in the night to Elizabethtown. On the 22nd Knyphausen again advanced with a view of driving the enemy from his post at Morristown, but although opposed with great conduct and spirit by Generals Greene and Dickinson, he succeeded by superiority of numbers in getting possession and burning the village of Springfield, and a settlement called Connecticut Farms, after which he again retired, crossing over to Staten Island. The British allies are accused by American writers of excesses, "according to their common mode of warfare." These are sometimes uncalled for, and very greatly to be deprecated, but they very frequently cannot be altogether prevented in war, and especially in affairs of this kind, where individual cupidity can never be quite checked. It is said that "a meeting-house on this occasion was burned, and the act rendered still more odious by the murder of the clergyman's wife, who was shot dead with her infant at her breast." Many of these stories were doubtless circulated to unite and exasperate the patriots, whose cause was at this period languishing, for Washington even at this time was not "without despondence." A delusive notion had been raised among the most ardent republicans that such an alliance as that of France and Spain in their favour must soon finish the war, and this produced a false confidence, and some decay of national enthusiasm. Congress were already dreaming of curbing such military power as should survive the contest, which might otherwise endanger their liberties, instead of exerting themselves with energy first to bring their contest with Great Britain to a safe conclusion.

At length, while the Americans were altogether unprepared for the campaign, the first division of the French armament arrived in the middle of July at Newport. A squadron of ten or eleven ships of 84 guns each, and five frigates or armed vessels, under the conduct of M. de Ternay, reached the coast and took possession on the 11th of Rhode Island, which had not been again occupied by Clinton. It conveyed a land force of five regiments of infantry and a battalion of artillery consisting of about 6000 men, under the command of the Count de Rochambeau. They were received with great delight, for their commander announced that they were but the vanguard of greater intended succours from the French King. On the 20th of June this armament at sea had come across Commodore Cornwallis, having with him the "Sultan," 74, the "Hector," 76, the "Lion," 64, the "Ruby," 64, the "Bristol," 50, and the "Night," frigate. The enemy on discovering the British squadron heeled up towards him. The two squadrons had nearly approached each other about half past four P.M. when Cornwallis, perceiving them to form line with seven ships, leaving the others for protection of the trans-

ports in company, got his ships into order. About half-past five o'clock the French opened fire, but it was a very distant and harmless one, and the commodore wholly disregarded it: in the course of the night, however, the French continued on their course with so much expedition that in the morning not one of their ships was to be seen. The British had two killed and five wounded, and the "Ruby" had her jib-boom carried away. In the course of July Admiral Graves had been sent out from England with a reinforcement of six ships of the line to reinforce Admiral Arbuthnot at New York, and if possible to intercept M. de Ternay. This he failed to do, but on the way he had the good fortune to capture a valuable French East Indiaman, which he sent home by the "Amphitrite," the only frigate attached to his squadron.

The arrival of Admiral Graves and Commodore Cornwallis to the fleet under Admiral Arbuthnot, turned the balance of the British and French power in these seas in favour of the former, and the British fleet, being now superior, sailed to Rhode Island to block up the French squadron there, while Sir Henry Clinton meditated an attack on the place, but it was found that the fortifications had been put in such good condition and so well manned that an attack on them was impracticable, and the commanders accordingly abandoned the expedition. During the temporary absence of Sir Henry, General Washington thought to execute his favourite project of pouncing upon New York, for which purpose he crossed the North River on the 1st of August, and marched towards Kingsbridge by Dobb's Ferry, but he found that Clinton had returned on the 31st of July, which prevented any attempt against that place. Washington now learned that the second French armament was blockaded in Brest harbour by thirty-two British ships of the line, and was not, therefore, to be expected. Accordingly, though his army with the French reinforcement now amounted to 20,000 men, the extreme difficulty of supplying the magazines, and the material change that this occasioned in the prospect of a campaign, determined Washington to dismiss the greater part of the militia to their homes, and remain inactive. All hope of any advantage in the war was still further darkened by the return of De Guichen with his fleet to France, (as already related,) and by the course which the war was taking in the Carolinas.

#### 8. WAR IN THE CAROLINAS—BATTLE OF CAMDEN.

Great exertions had been making by the republicans in Virginia to strengthen their brethren in those colonies, and Washington had been directed by Congress to detach a considerable force in that direction, under the direction of Baron von Kalb, a German officer in their service. This officer was afterwards succeeded by General Gates, who reached the camp in North Carolina on the 25th of July. The high reputation which Gates had acquired at Saratoga pointed him out for the chief command in the south, and his arrival at the scene of action tended to revive the hopes of the provincials. Lord Rawdon had in the mean while been sent by Lord Cornwallis towards

the frontier of the two colonies, and fixed his head-quarters at the town of Camden. Here he was joined by Cornwallis himself in the second week of August, who brought up a few men with him; but his Lordship's whole force did not exceed 2000 men, for great desertions had taken place; one Lisle, with a whole battalion of militia and others, having gone bodily over to the enemy with all their arms and ammunition. Gates had a force of some 6000, many of them militia, under Rutherford, Caswell, Sumpter, and others, and he was now joined by the traitor Lisle. Skirmishes soon took place on both sides, and attacks were made at Rocky Mount and Hanging Rock, where Colonel Sumpter was unsuccessful. The position held by Cornwallis at Camden was a bad one to receive an attack, and he therefore determined not to wait to be attacked in it, but boldly to move forward, since little would be lost under all the circumstances by a defeat, but much gained by a victory. Gates was at Rugeleys, about thirteen miles distant, encamped also in a bad situation. The Earl accordingly marched from Camden about ten o'clock of the night of the 15th of August, with an intention of attempting to "rouse and turn out" Gates from Rugeleys. Almost at the same hour Gates had set out to steal a march on Cornwallis at Camden. The surprise, therefore, was mutual when the advanced light troops fell in with each other in the woods at two o'clock in the morning. Some firing forthwith took place, and a Maryland regiment was entirely discomfited in the skirmish that ensued; but by mutual accord it soon ceased, and both armies were halted and formed, waiting for the break of morning. As soon as it was light Cornwallis reconnoitred, and found that he had the best of the ground. The position occupied by the British was narrow in front, which lessened the disadvantage of superior numbers; and there were swamps on either side, so that his flanks and rear were pretty secure. Gates attempted at dawn to make some change of disposition in two brigades of militia on his left, which was not lost upon Cornwallis, who instantly seized the advantage, and directed Colonel Webster with the 71st, 23rd, and 33rd regiments and four guns to advance and charge the enemy while employed in this very hasty and injudicious proceeding. This movement was executed with so much spirit that the Virginia militia, which chiefly composed Gates's left, at once threw down their loaded muskets and fled from the field without firing a shot, and their example was presently followed by nearly the whole of the North Carolina regiment, which formed the centre. The second line or reserve, consisting of about 2500 regulars, was then brought forward, and Gates went himself back to try to rally the fugitives, but he never returned to the field, for finding it impossible to get them back he believed all to be lost, and fled to Charlotte, eighty miles distant. Baron Kalb, with some artillery, made good use of it against Lord Rawdon, who advanced to charge him, but he kept his ground six nearly three-quarters of an hour, until he fell mortally wounded, on which his men broke and fled in all directions. The cavalry, under Colonel Tarleton and Major Hanger, now rushing in upon the flying army,

pursued them all the way to Hanging Rock, twenty-two miles from the scene of action. Never was a victory more complete, for of the 6000 men who composed Gates's army not sixty could again have been collected. All their artillery, amounting to seven or eight brass guns, with 2000 stand of arms, and 150 waggons of stores and provisions were taken. Nine hundred were killed, and General Gregory and 1000 men taken. The loss of the British was seventy killed and 250 wounded, most of whom belonged to the 33rd regiment. General Gates had before the battle detached Brigadier Sumpter with about 1000 men round the left of the British to occupy the west bank of the Waterce and seize the fords of the Catawba. Cornwallis, accordingly, after the battle, on the 17th, detached Colonel Tarleton with some 350 light infantry and cavalry to intercept and cut off this detachment. This brave and active officer by forced marches, excellent intelligence, and judgment, surprised Sumpter, who had no idea of danger, before he could get his men to arm or mount. One hundred and fifty of his men were killed on the spot; some 300, with two pieces of cannon, were taken, with a number of waggons, and 250 British prisoners were recaptured. Tarleton had moved so rapidly that he made the attack with only about 100 dragoons and sixty light infantry, and the loss he sustained did not exceed nine killed and six wounded, but among the former was Captain Campbell of the light infantry, a very promising officer.

Lord Cornwallis on the 8th of September began his march into North Carolina, and established himself at Charlottesburgh by the end of the month. There was now hardly any fighting, for there was scarcely any enemy, but occasional patrols were frequently shot at and killed by men who lay in ambush and then fled to the woods. To scour the province of these parties detachments were sent under several officers; but one of them under the command of Colonel Ferguson, an excellent partisan officer, having penetrated as far as the King's Mountain, in the extreme western parts of Virginia and North Carolina, was pursued on his return by 1500 American militia cavalry, who overtook him, and after a most gallant resistance against a vast superiority of numbers he was on the 7th of October defeated and killed, together with 150 of his men, and some 800 were made prisoners. By this misfortune Lord Cornwallis's schemes in North Carolina were frustrated; and being annoyed by the inveterate hostility of the natives, who were not cowed even by some acts of questionable severity which he had exercised since the battle of Camden, he determined to fall back into the southern colony until he could receive reinforcements from New York. The retreat was difficult; it rained without intermission, the roads were knee-deep in mud, the soldiers had no tents and very little food, and were often obliged to live upon the Indian corn which they collected as it stood in the field. Lord Cornwallis himself fell sick, and was obliged to leave the further management of the march to Lord Rawdon, who conducted it with great energy and no inconsiderable military skill. On the 29th of October the troops reached Camden again, where they halted for General Leslie, who had been detached by Clinton

into Virginia to join in the expected advance into that province. Whilst here Tarleton drove back an enterprising partisan named Marion, and gave another defeat to his old adversary Sumpter at Blackstock Hill, who was here wounded, and forced to quit the field. General Gates was now superseded by General Greene, the confidential friend of Washington; but that General found himself in no condition to advance into South Carolina, and so all further enterprise ended for this year.

#### 9. GENERAL ARNOLD'S TREACHERY—FATE OF MAJOR ANDRÉ.

An incident occurred in the autumn of this year which formed an interesting topic at the time, exciting great attention on both sides of the Atlantic, and which is still one of the memorable events of the American war. General Arnold had stood conspicuous for his daring courage and enterprise from the beginning of the contest, but he was a man of unsteady principles, and much pressed (it was said) by pecuniary embarrassments, the result of his extravagance. Disgusted, as he himself alleged, at the interference of the continental nations in a dispute between the mother country and her colonies, he now entered upon a plan for betraying to the British General the important post at West Point, on the Hudson, which had been entrusted to his care. He had, indeed, been lately forced to undergo the ordeal of a court-martial for malversation in his office of Governor of Philadelphia, which Congress had awarded to him as a reward for his services, and to enable him to recover from the wounds he had received; and it has been thought that from this period he meditated designs of revenge, and had contrived, in order to facilitate them, to obtain from Washington a post, which was one of the first importance, and considered at the time as the very Gibraltar of America. The loss of this would have been a very severe blow to the Americans, as the possession of it by the English would have enabled them to cut off all communication between the northern and southern provinces. For some one or all of the causes named he communicated his views to Colonel Robinson, an officer in the British service, through whom he was enabled to open a secret negotiation with Sir Henry Clinton, who accordingly sent his Adjutant-General, Major André, to confer with him confidentially on the subject. André was a young gentleman of high spirit and undaunted courage, and of considerable talents and accomplishments, in whose ability, prudence, and address Sir Henry reposed implicit confidence. He adopted in his communications with Arnold the fictitious name of John Anderson. On the 21st of September André was landed at night from the "Vulture," sloop of war, at the foot of a hill called Long Clove, where he was received by Arnold at Joshua Smith's house, and remained with him all that night and the following day. Having gone ashore in his military half-uniform, he borrowed of his host a grey great coat, which effectually concealed it. The "Vulture" had been forced by the batteries to shift her station in the interval and drop down the river, so that it became obligatory on André to return by land. He was provided with a horse and passport, under his assumed name of

Anderson, to find his own way back to New York, and passed the outposts of the army in safety; but on the way he was stopped by three volunteers, named John Paulding, David Williams, and Isaac Van Wart, who examined his passport, and some suspicions occurring to the mind of one of them to whom André had very imprudently offered his watch and purse to be suffered to pass on, which these men honourably refused, they at once led him to headquarters, where papers were found on him lodged in his boots, containing exact returns in Arnold's handwriting of the patriot force at West Point. This General, hearing of his apprehension and that Washington was coming over to his head-quarters to visit the redoubts under his command, immediately escaped on board the "Vulture" at Verplanks Point, and on hearing of this André threw off all disguise, and acknowledged his real name and situation, avowing himself to be the Adjutant-General of the British army, but that he had come into the American lines under the sanction of a safeguard that had been transmitted to him by a flag of truce from General Arnold, an officer at that period in command and authorized to grant it. Washington immediately ordered him to be tried by a board of general officers, of which the Baron von Steuben and La Fayette were members, and General Greene president. No precise charge was exhibited against him; but the board proceeded by a series of interrogations to extract from their unfortunate prisoner something like an acknowledgment that he could not return to the "Vulture" under the sanction that brought him on shore, whence they drew their own inference that he could not have conceived himself under the protection of the American flag; and upon this enforced confession they convicted him of being a spy. The magnanimity and candour with which Major André admitted that obedience to his General had led him into the American lines under the sanction of a flag of truce, with none of the intentions of a spy, procured him the sympathy of his judges, but could not avert his fate: his change of dress was adduced as fatal to the character of a mere military messenger, although it was only a great coat over his half-uniform.

From the moment of his capture every effort was made by Sir Henry Clinton to save the life of a man to whom he was strongly and sincerely attached; and he deputed General Robinson to lay before Washington facts and arguments, urging it as a point of the highest concernment that he should fully understand the business before proceeding to the extreme he meditated; but the only alternative Washington would listen to was his exchange for Arnold, which was of course out of the question. André himself did not so much regard death as the ignominious character of it, and as soon as his fate was irrevocably fixed he appealed to Washington that he might die the death of a soldier and not that of a malefactor. His request was refused; and he was hanged as a spy on Monday, the 2nd of October, at Tappan. By the admission of his rigorous enemy "he acted with great candour from the time he avowed himself, and met his fate with a fortitude that was to be expected from an accomplished man



and a gallant officer;" his country honoured his memory with a monument in Westminster Abbey, and embalmed it with a nation's sympathy in the annals of this war.

**10. WAR IN THE EAST INDIES—COLONEL EGERTON CAPITULATES  
—COLONEL GODDARD DEFRATS SCINDIA AND HOLKAR—GWALIOR  
TAKEN BY MAJOR POPHAM.**

The different presidencies of the East India Company had by this time so deeply entered into the intrigues and quarrels of the native rulers, that it is not easy to unravel the causes of any new war in that quarter. In the midst of their feuds French emissaries made their appearance at Poonah, endeavouring to obtain authority from the Mahratta chieftains to establish a station on the Malabar coast. These things coming to the knowledge of Hastings, the Governor-General, he formed a scheme to anticipate their designs. He determined to march an army from Bombay upon Poonah, which should be supported by a force to be sent from Bengal. Never were expeditions conducted with less judgment or productive of more humiliating results. A detachment set out from Calpee under the orders of Colonel Leslie with instructions to make their way, by fair means or foul, through Berar and Aurangabad, while a force of 4500 men under Colonel Egerton, accompanied by two field-deputies from Bombay, marched to meet them. Leslie's progress was so slow, that in five months he only advanced 120 miles, but fortunately he died and left the command to Colonel Goddard, an officer formed in a very different school. Colonel Egerton had arrived within eighteen miles of Poorah when his civilian colleagues became alarmed and urged him to retreat. He most unwisely listened to their fears, and on the night of the 11th of January, 1779, this detachment turned its back in flight, was pursued, cut off, and obliged to capitulate on the 13th. Fortunately Colonel Goddard was made aware of this surrender in sufficient time to provide for his own safety; and by a forced march of nineteen days' continuance he avoided by this extraordinary celerity 20,000 horse which had been sent from Poonah against him, and made his way from Buchanpoor to Surat, where he arrived with his army in safety. Mr. Horsley, the Governor of Bombay, refused to recognize the convention made by his field-deputies, and forthwith invited Goddard, who had conducted himself with much judgment and discretion, to come to the presidency and join in the deliberations of his council. He also addressed a despatch to Hastings, recommending him to appoint that officer to the chief command of the forces. General Goddard accordingly took the field under the full sanction of the Governor-General on the 2nd of January, 1780, and took possession of Dubhui on the 20th. On the 10th of February he marched against Ahmedabad, the capital of Guzerat, which he took by storm in five days. Intelligence then came to him that the Mahratta chiefs, Scindia and Holkar, were approaching with an army towards Surat: Goddard therefore marched and attacked their camp on the 5th of April, and obliged them to abandon their ground with great loss. This victory was

followed by numerous less important successes, after which the troops, in consequence of the approach of the rainy season, went into quarters.

On the side of Bengal, military movements were taking place under the direction of Sir Eyre Coote, who had now succeeded to the chief command in India, and the strong fortress of Gwalior, hitherto regarded as impregnable, was taken by escalade on the 3rd of August by a force under Major Popham. Nor was this the only exploit for which Popham deserves a name in military history, for he also entered some of the Mahratta districts and stormed Lahar, a fortified place about fifty miles west of Calpee, with no very great loss, drove the invaders from Gohud, crossed the Lindi, and battered and assaulted the city of Jehan.

#### 11. HYDER ALI DEFEATS COLONEL BAILLIE AT PERAMBAUCAM.

On the side of Madras the forces on the establishment did not exceed 30,000 men, dispersed in very distant quarters, and this presidency had been unfortunately more engrossed in internal disputes among themselves than in active measures against the formidable enemy who was now advancing upon them.

Such was the state of affairs at Madras when on the 10th of June, an express from the officer commanding at Vellore, communicated information that a prodigious army was assembling at Bangalore. The intelligence came like a thunderbolt on the government, although both the language and acts of Hyder had long manifested hostile intentions against the English. Still never was a presidency so ill prepared to resist invasion. The Governor had indeed sent a detachment across the Kistna under Colonel Baillie for the protection of the British ally, Basalet Jung, but no efforts had been made to collect depôts, nor even now was any exertion used to bring into the field even the insufficient force at their disposal. Before the fall of Gwalior, Hyder had already passed the Ghauts, he now burst like a torrent with a numerous army upon the Carnatic, and had also sent his son, Tippoo Sahib, at the same time, to advance with a great body of cavalry upon the northern Circars, while other parties were approaching the Madura and Tinnevely districts in the south. Hyder made this irruption with every circumstance of horror possible. Around every place which he destined to fall before him, he drew a circle within which all was consigned to desolation. The towns and villages were speedily wrapt in flames, and the inhabitants with their flocks and herds peremptorily required to depart. Porto Novo on the coast, and Conjeveram, not fifty miles from Madras, were already in the hands of the "despoilers." On the 21st of August Hyder invested Arcot, the garrison of which had been reinforced from Vellore, on which Colonel Baillie, who was at the head of a body of men in the Gunton Circar, was summoned back to Madras. Sir Hector Munro, a general who had already gained some fame in India, was fortunately at the presidency, and on the 29th of August took the command of the forces. He found himself at the head of 5000 or 6000 men, with 100 cavalry in addition to some irregular horse

and a train of artillery badly equipped. To frustrate Baillie's junction with him, Hyder broke up his camp before Arcot and posted his army about six miles to the westward of Munro. The same day, the 6th of September, Tippoo attacked Baillie at Perambaucam, near Conjeveram, but without success, but the Colonel sent word to Munro that he doubted his ability to effect a junction. To aid this object, therefore, Sir Hector on the 8th of September despatched 1000 men, under Colonel Fletcher, who with great judgment and address effected a junction with Baillie on the 9th, and on the same evening Colonel Baillie began his march. Hyder was prepared against this step and now hovered round the British flanks with his light troops, until at length he advanced a heavy body of cavalry, and some guns which they covered, opened. These were soon silenced by the superior execution of the English artillery. It has been said that Baillie should now have continued his march, but unhappily for him he remained where he was till the 10th, and then only sent forward a body of sepoy grenadiers to attack Hyder's guns: their progress was interrupted by a deep trench or nullah which formed a complete defence to the enemy's artillery, nevertheless possession of some of the guns was obtained and the defenders put to flight. In the mean time the horizon was darkened with the advance of cavalry covering the plain like a cloud, and accompanied with infantry and artillery. Hyder's whole army was upon the British force: it is said to have consisted of 78,000 horse, 15,000 infantry, disciplined in regiments, a corps of 400 European auxiliaries, in all 90,000 troops, and some fifty pieces of artillery. These last opened on the British corps, while the rest of the troops pressed upon them on every side. Ten field-pieces returned the fire of the enemy with powerful effect as long as the ammunition lasted, but at length two tumbrils exploded, and the guns being now without powder were silenced, when Tippoo at the head of the cavalry rushed in upon them. Repeated charges of the enemy were met and sustained with great steadiness, but at length Colonel Baillie and 200 Europeans surrendered themselves prisoners, the rest were left dead on the field. Of eighty-six officers engaged no less than thirty-six were killed, amongst whom was Colonel Fletcher: thirty-four were wounded, and only sixteen surrendered. It is natural to ask, how was it that Sir Hector Munro permitted this total annihilation of a division of his own army not many miles distant from him. Indeed, it is difficult to account, on any principle, civil or military, for Sir Hector's conduct: he rested quietly all this time at Conjeveram, and only began his march to support Baillie when it was already too late. He had proceeded some way towards Perambaucam, when he met a wounded sepoy, who reported to him Colonel Baillie's defeat. On hearing of this disaster Munro returned to Conjeveram, and from thence to Chingleput which he reached on the 11th, and where he was joined by a considerable detachment under Lieut.-Colonel Crosbie, with which he now removed to St. Thomas's Mount, a few miles from Madras, and on the 15th of September took up a secure position at Marmalong to cover the city. Hyder then resumed the siege of Arcot.

The fortifications of the place were good, but under the direction of French officers two practicable breaches were made at the end of six weeks, and the town was taken by storm on the 31st of October; the citadel which Clive had defended for fifty days, surrendering the same day.

**12. HASTINGS SENDS SIR EYRE COOTE TO THE COMMAND AT MADRAS—ADMIRAL HUGHES DESTROYS HYDER'S FLEET OFF MANGALORE.**

When intelligence of the impending danger of Madras reached Calcutta, Hastings sent off Sir Eyre Coote to assume the command of the army in that presidency. Coote arrived at Madras on the 5th of November, bringing with him a reinforcement of European artillery and infantry with a body of Lascars, and at the close of the year he found himself in position on the coast with 7000 men. Admiral Hughes was also sent to make a diversion by attacking the ports and shipping belonging to Hyder Ali on the Malabar coast. On the 8th of December, off Mangalore, he sighted a large snow, three ketches, and other vessels, all of force, and armed for war. The Admiral instantly anchored as close as possible to the enemy, and ordered the boats of the squadron to attack and destroy them, a service which was accomplished with the ordinary spirit and activity of British tars. In two hours they took and burned the whole of the force, except one ship, which escaped into harbour, after having thrown every thing overboard to lighten her.

**13. DEATH OF THE EMPRESS QUEEN, MARIA THERESA.**

On the 29th of November this year died the Empress Queen Maria Theresa, who has been the subject of many incidents in these pages. She was an amiable and right royal lady, of a lofty and noble character. None but a woman, "a beauty and a Queen," could have so well "set the world in arms" to have defended her inheritance; none but a woman, injured and abandoned, could have so long retained her animosity against her ruthless and reckless adversary and spoiler. When the peace of Aix-la-Chapelle had healed the cicatrice of the Silesian spohation, she devoted all her energies to repair the ravages that war had occasioned over her extensive territories. It might have been better for her fame had she died earlier—before the dismemberment of Poland—but when that project was first laid before her, it is said that she dissented from its gross injustice, and was at length only overcome by arguments addressed to her religious zeal, and that she signed the treaty for it with tears and under protest. Maria Theresa was succeeded in all her sovereignties by her son, the Emperor Joseph II., but with her ended the great house of Hapsburg, for the present dynasty of Austria, Hungary, and Bohemia, is of the house of Lorraine.

## 1781.

1. THE FRENCH SURPRISE THE ISLE OF JERSEY—DEATH OF MAJOR PEIRSON.—2. WAR IN NORTH AMERICA—ARNOLD, NOW A BRITISH COMMANDER, RAVAGES VIRGINIA.—3. NAVAL ACTION OFF THE CHESAPEAKE BETWEEN AEBUTHNOT AND DESTOUCHES.—4. BATTLE OF COWPENS.—5. BATTLE OF GUILDFORD.—6. BATTLE OF HOBKIRK'S HILL.—7. LORD RAWDON RELIEVES FORT NINETY-SIX.—8. LORD CORNWALLIS ESTABLISHES HIS ARMY IN YORK TOWN.—9. NAVAL WAR—CAPTURE OF THE DUTCH ISLAND OF ST. EUSTATIA.—10. THE BRITISH AND FRENCH FLEETS SAIL AWAY FOR THE NORTH AMERICAN COAST.—11. WASHINGTON ASSEMBLES HIS ARMY TO ATTACK YORK TOWN.—12. CLINTON SENDS AN EXPEDITION WHICH TAKES POSSESSION OF FORTS TRUMBULL AND GRISWOLD.—13. SURRENDER OF LORD CORNWALLIS AND HIS ARMY AT YORK TOWN.—14. WASHINGTON DESPACHES A REINFORCEMENT TO GENERAL GREENE IN GEORGIA.—15. BATTLE OF EUTAW SPRINGS—STUART AGAINST GREENE.—16. NAVAL AFFAIR AT THE ISLAND OF ST. IAGO.—17. GIBRALTAR RELIEVED BY ADMIRAL DARBY.—18. THE FRENCH AND SPANIARDS BESIEGE FORT ST. PHILIP AT MINORCA.—19. NAVAL WAR.—20. BATTLE OFF THE DOGGER BANK BETWEEN THE BRITISH AND DUTCH FLEETS.—21. THE CONFEDERATE FLEETS OF FRANCE AND SPAIN ENTER THE BRITISH CHANNEL.—22. ADMIRAL KEMPFELDT CAPTURES TWENTY SAIL OF FRENCH TRANSPORTS—JOHNSTONE'S SQUADRON DESTROYS SOME DUTCH EAST INDIAMEN AT THE CAPE.—23. THE MARQUIS DE BOUILLE RETAKES ST. EUSTATIA AND DUTCH GUIANA.—24. ELLIOT MAKES A SUCCESSFUL SORTIE FROM GIBRALTAR.—25. WAR IN THE EAST INDIES—SIR EYRE COOTE BELIEVES THE FORTS BESIEGED BY HYDER ALI, AND DRIVES OFF A FRENCH FLEET FROM PONDICHERRY.—26. BATTLE OF PORTO NOVO.—27. BATTLES OF POLLALORE AND SHOLINGUR.—28. THE DUTCH POSSESSIONS IN THE INDIAN SEAS CAPTURED.

1. THE FRENCH SURPRISE THE ISLE OF JERSEY—DEATH OF MAJOR PEIRSON.

Hostilities this year commenced in Europe by an attempt of the French to carry the island of Jersey by a *coup-de-main*. The Baron de Rollecourt, who commanded the expedition, surprised the town of St. Helier with 700 men, to the astonishment of the natives, who at dawn of day on the 6th of January found their market-place in possession of French troops. The Governor's house was forthwith surrounded, and the Lieut.-Governor, Major Corbet, was made a prisoner in his bed, and brought to the French General, but not before he had contrived to send his orders to the different regiments quartered in the island. A capitulation of the whole island was immediately laid before him, with the threat of instant destruction to the town if he refused. This capitulation was accordingly signed by Corbet, who in truth at first refused to do so, but the General allowed him no time for deliberation, and he appears to have lost all presence of mind on the occasion. Elizabeth Castle was summoned

by the French commander, but Captains Aylesward and Mulcaster refused to pay any regard to their Governor's surrender, and firing on the French troops in their advance, compelled them to retreat. Meanwhile Major Peirson, of the 95th regiment, collected such a force as he could, and assembled them on the heights to the north and south of the town, and while doing so received an order from the Governor for an immediate surrender, requiring him to be with the General in half an hour or that he would surely be attacked. The Major, pulling out his watch, sent Rollecourt word that he would be with him in twenty minutes. By that time he had collected his men and came suddenly upon the French invaders in the market-place, where the French General placed Corbet in front of the line to deter the troops from firing, but without effect, although the poor Governor was not killed, but left to the subsequent tender mercies of a court-martial. Rollecourt was mortally wounded in the volley, and the rest of his force were either killed or taken. Major Peirson at the instant of victory and by almost the last shot that was fired received a death wound. His untimely and deeply regretted fate has been immortalized by a well-known picture by Copley, a celebrated British painter, and a splendid monument has been erected to his memory by the States of Jersey in the town church of St. Helier.

## 2. WAR IN NORTH AMERICA—ARNOLD, NOW A BRITISH COMMANDER, SAVAGES VIRGINIA.

Under the impression that he might aid the party called the "Loyalists," in America, the renegade Arnold was made a brigadier-general in the British army serving in that quarter. He arrived on the 1st of January in Hampton Road, in the Chesapeake, bringing 1200 men with him, partly American deserters like himself. With this small force he proceeded up James River, and landed at Westover, twenty-five miles from Richmond, the capital of Virginia. Jefferson, who was governor of the state, called out the militia, but so few came at his summons, that knowing the activity and boldness of his old associate, he with his council fled out of the town with the greatest precipitation. Arnold's landing-place was only twelve miles from Richmond, and the following morning he resolutely mounted his horse, and led his small force into that capital, which he entered about noon. After some negotiations had been opened with Jefferson, which failed, Arnold sent Colonel Simcoe with half his small force to Westham, to burn and destroy a cannon foundry, powder magazine, and other military stores there. Simcoe executed his commission without the least difficulty, and rejoined Arnold the same day. Richmond was then set on fire with all the public buildings and tobacco stores, the small of which infected the country for miles, when Arnold quitted the capital of Virginia, and encamped his force at Four-mile Creek. On the 7th he returned to his shipping at Westover, having thus penetrated thirty-three miles into the country without loss, and Jefferson returned back to the half-consumed capital of his province. On the 8th Arnold detached a party to Charles City Court-house, where 150 militiamen were surprised and

routed. On the 18th Arnold again descended the James River, and on the 26th returned to Portsmouth, having on his way been obliged to land 800 men under Simcoe to keep back the militia who had been collecting under Baron Steuben, but one volley sent them all to the right about, and he continued his way, having now increased his force to 2000 men. He proceeded to the mouth of James River, and having destroyed a valuable cannon foundry, barracks, stores, and many vessels, succeeded in establishing a post at Portsmouth. Great bitterness of spirit every where existed against "the traitor," and it is related that on Arnold's asking a prisoner what his countrymen said of him, he replied, "They say that if they catch you they will cut off your leg that was wounded in the service of our country, and hang and quarter all the rest of your body."

Washington was extremely anxious to send a force to the relief of his native state, and accordingly despatched the Marquis de la Fayette with 1200 American infantry to establish a permanent post in Virginia, and if possible to capture the renegade Arnold. For the same purpose he also requested the assistance of the French from Rhode Island, who sent 1500 French troops on board a squadron under Admiral Destouches. The success of Arnold's expedition had, however, been mainly owing to the discontent prevailing in the patriot army, from want of pay, clothing, and food. Thirteen thousand of the Pennsylvanian line had broken into open revolt at Morristown, and three weeks later the Jersey line followed this example. The mind of Washington was, notwithstanding, equal to the emergency, and with mixed resolution and forbearance he contrived to suppress these mutinies.

### 3. NAVAL ACTION OFF THE CHESAPEAKE BETWEEN ARBUTHNOT AND DESTOUCHES.

It was thought desirable to obtain some assistance from the French naval force to reach Arnold. The French squadron had remained constantly blockaded in Rhode Island, where the Chevalier de Ternay having died, the command had devolved on Monsieur Destouches. This Admiral not being certain of Admiral Arbuthnot's whereabouts, would not risk more than one 64-gun ship, which he sent off under the command of Commodore de Tilly, who sailed for the Chesapeake on the 9th of February. He found Arnold so well posted as to defy attack, and after making a vain attempt to enter Elizabeth River, returned to Rhode Island. On his way back, however, M. de Tilly accidentally encountered the "Romulus," 50, near the Capes of Virginia, and captured her. As this scheme for getting possession of Arnold had failed, a new expedition was resolved upon in a conference held on the 6th of March, at Newport, between Washington, Destouches, and Rochambeau, when it was determined to send a part of the French army, under the Count de Viomenil, to the south, and take the whole French fleet to escort it. Accordingly, Destouches set sail on the evening of the 8th of March with a favourable wind, which was not equally so to Arbuthnot, who followed him with the British fleet on the 10th, and overtaking him on

the 16th, brought him to action. The line was composed of eight ships on each side, the British having a small superiority of guns, and the French of men. After fighting for an hour the French fleet gave way and returned to Rhode Island. The contest ended without the loss of a ship on either side, but the British gained their object by frustrating that of their opponents, and Arnold was saved from the danger that threatened him. On the 25th of March a reinforcement of about 2000 British arrived in the Chesapeake from New York, under Major-General Phillips. Some affairs of outposts continually took place near New York, but nothing very serious. On the 15th of May Colonel Delany with sixty horse and 200 foot surprised the advance near Croton, in which the American commander and another were killed.

#### 4. BATTLE OF COWPENS.

Early in the year Lord Cornwallis advanced with his army towards the borders of the Carolinas, and took position between the Broad and Catawba Rivers; General Greene assembled his principal force in Mecklenburg county, having his head-quarters at Charlotte, and thought to make a diversion by an attack on Fort Ninety-six. To favour this movement Greene with the main body of his forces marched to the Cheraw hills, on the Pedee; and General Morgan, with a force of about 500 regulars, some Virginia militia, and about 100 cavalry under Colonel Washington, advanced upon the Pacolet River, to the west of the Catawba. Cornwallis, not choosing to have such an enemy in his rear, detached Colonel Tarleton to attack Morgan. The force under this officer consisted of about 300 cavalry and as many infantry, with a battalion of the 7th and 71st regiments and two 3-pounders; and he was directed to oblige the republican force to cross the Broad River. Morgan retreated before Tarleton, but found his enemy so close upon him that he could not pass the Broad River in his face, and therefore choosing his ground, boldly prepared to give him battle. The American commander showed no common ability and judgment in the disposition of his force. Seven hundred militia, in whom he placed no great confidence, were exposed to open view in the first line, on the edge of a wood without any artificial defences; but the continental and other regular troops were kept out of sight in the wood, drawn up in excellent order and prepared for all events. Tarleton came in face of this position about eight in the morning of the 19th of January, at a place called Cowpens. His line of attack was composed of the 7th with some light infantry, and a troop of cavalry on either flank. The 71st and the remainder of the cavalry formed a second line. The militia line of the enemy were little capable of sustaining the impetuosity of such assailants, and were soon broken, routed, and scattered on every side. The British, thinking the day their own, with their wonted confidence fell into the snare prepared for them, and, following up the fugitives, received a close and deadly fire on both flanks, which took the most fatal effect: the ground was covered instantly with killed and wounded, and the survivors thrown



into irremediable disorder and confusion. A total defeat was the consequence. The 7th lost their colours, and the two guns were abandoned, the artillerymen who were with them being cut to pieces. The loss every way in killed, wounded, and prisoners, exceeded 400 men. Tarleton in the midst of defeat exhibited a trait of his peculiar character and spirit. When all appeared lost he placed himself at the head of fourteen officers and as many of the troopers of the 17th dragoons as he could get together, and who were well accustomed to follow such a leader, when he unexpectedly charged and repulsed Colonel Washington's horse and recovered the baggage, which however he could not carry off, and was therefore content to destroy. As this was the first battle in which the patriots had defeated their opponents with the bayonet, its moral effects were felt throughout the country, and Congress voted medals to Morgan and his officers commemorative of so distinguished a day.

Lord Cornwallis was much displeased with Tarleton for his carelessness in this disaster; but on the news of it immediately despatched a force unencumbered with baggage to intercept Morgan, who was moving off towards Virginia, or at least to recover his prisoners; and nothing could exceed the exertions of the pursuing troops, but such was the celerity of this dexterous commander, that he gained the upper fords on the Catawba before they could get up to him. On failing to cut off this body the army was assembled on the 25th of January at Rumpfomer's Mills, on the south fork of the Catawba. The loss of so many of his light troops induced Lord Cornwallis to destroy every article of superfluous baggage and every thing that could retard the celerity of the troops, and that was not absolutely necessary for existence or action. The example was set by the commander himself, and was enforced throughout the army with the utmost rigour: it was new in modern warfare to find headquarters incapable of supplying a glass of wine, or a chair or table. The Catawba was much swollen with the rain in all its various forks, and the militia under General Davidson watched every ford. Colonel Webster was sent to Beattie's Ford, six miles higher up the river, to lead Davidson in that direction, and he was ordered, as well by cannonade as by daring, to show a determination to cross at that ford. The real object of Lord Cornwallis's attempt was a private ford about a mile further. About one in the morning of the 1st of February the main force, consisting of the brigade of guards, the regiment of Bose, the 28th regiment, 200 cavalry, and two 3-pounders, began their march. The morning was dark and rainy, so that these guns, light as they were, got embarrassed in a swamp, and the line of march was pushed on to the ford without them. The General soon perceived from the number of fires apparent that this ford was not neglected, but was better guarded than he expected; and since he knew that the rains would soon render it impassable, and that Greene was in full march to join the troops on the Catawba, he saw that something must be hazarded, and determined to force the passage of the river. Brigadier O'Hara with the guards accordingly dashed into the stream, and struggled over a rocky bottom with the

water above their middle, exposed to the deliberate aim and continued fire of the enemy, but without returning a single shot. The light infantry of the brigade, being the first that landed, instantly formed, and in a few minutes killed and dispersed all before them. General Davidson, who had returned to the spot on the news of Cornwallis's approach the previous evening, was among the slain. Colonel Hall of the guards was the only officer who fell on the side of the British. The whole afterwards passed over with the utmost expedition; and Tarleton with his cavalry and the 23rd regiment scoured the country and pushed on ten miles in advance, driving on the militia to such an extent that they fled to their houses, and the army continued its march to the banks of the Yadkin. Here they hoped to have come up with Morgan, on whom the army desired to retaliate the disaster at Cowpens; but he was before them, and on the nights of the 2nd and 3rd of February had crossed all his force over that river and secured the boats on his side of it; moreover a sudden rise of its waters stopped the British, and this was regarded by the Americans as another interposition of Providence little less than miraculous.

Greene had put himself in motion as soon as he had heard of Morgan's danger, and repaired himself to the Catawba, riding 160 miles across the country with great speed. He now led his force behind the Pedee, and marched to form a junction with the retiring troops at Guildford. Cornwallis, therefore, knowing that the American General had not received the reinforcements he expected from Virginia, and had not had time to collect the North Carolina militia, was determined to reduce Greene either to the necessity of fighting under this disadvantage, or to abandon his communication with the northern province. The British, however, laboured under great difficulties in the way of intelligence, which was not only defective, but often purposely delusive; and although they cut off the Americans from the upper fords of the Dan River, yet on their arrival at Boyd's Ferry on the 15th, they discovered that the enemy had been furnished with boats sufficient, and had passed, with all their troops and baggage, during the preceding day and night, over the river. Lord Cornwallis accordingly now rested his army, which had been much harassed by their rapid movements, at Hillsborough. This retreat of General Greene was considered a very masterly movement, and raised his reputation highly among his countrymen.

During these transactions Colonel Balfour, who commanded at Charleston, equipped a small force for an expedition to the Cape Fear River, to operate as a diversion to Cornwallis on that side. Major Craig with about 300 men was despatched on this service towards the latter end of January, supported by the "Otter" and "Delight" sloops of war, under Captain Barclay, and with little difficulty took possession of Wilmington, and four or five vessels laden with ammunition and provisions in the river. Here they made a port of some respectability and strength.

## 5. BATTLE OF GUILDFORD.

These occurrences and partial successes disconcerted Lord Cornwallis's schemes, for the change that success gave to the sentiments of the people was immediately evidenced in impeded supplies, defective information, timid friends, and more enthusiastic foes. He accordingly broke up from Hillsborough and retreated to a position on Allowance Creek, between the Haw and Deep Rivers. General Greene had indeed received some of his expected reinforcements from Virginia and repassed the Dan. Cornwallis accordingly called in his detachments, and thought it expedient to push Tarleton with a force towards the Deep River. This officer came up on the 2nd of March with a considerable body of the enemy, whom he routed, and took some prisoners, from whom he learned that Greene with a part of the army was at no great distance. He had, in fact, only crossed the Haw near its source, and taken post between Troublesome Creek and Reedy Fork, and therefore not having yet received all the reinforcements he expected, he carefully avoided getting too near the British. Colonel Pyle had collected a body of nearly 300 loyalists, and was proceeding with them to the British army when he came across an American corps under Lieut.-Colonel Lee. These unfortunate men, mistaking the troops for British, cried out "God save the King!" and were immediately surrounded and cut to pieces. Tarleton happened to be within a mile of this scene of slaughter, and immediately recrossed the Haw, when meeting with another portion of these most unlucky loyalists, he mistook them for militia and put them to the sword.

On the 6th of March Cornwallis carried his army across Allowance Creek, and determined to beat up the enemy's quarters. He found them at Weitzell's Mill, where he attacked them and drove them across the Haw River again. Cornwallis did not dare, however, to go forward lest he should lose his communication with Wilmington, and accordingly on the 13th of March he encamped at the Quakers' Meeting-house on the forks of the Deep River. Here he learned that General Butler with the expected reinforcements had now effectually come up with General Greene; and the same evening he heard that Greene had brought forward his head-quarters to Guildford, twelve miles from the British camp, manifestly considering himself now strong enough to face Cornwallis, who instantly prepared to meet him.

The American army consisted of nearly 5000 men, of whom more than one-half were militia. The British were 2400, all veteran troops, inured to war and victory. On the 15th of March, at day-break, the advanced guard under Tarleton came up with Lee's legion, forming the American vanguard, about four miles from Guildford: these troops Tarleton drove back, and soon discovered Greene's army drawn up in order of battle about a mile and a half from the Court-house on a very commanding ground. A large and extensive road on the right, and a considerable plantation or cultivated clearance with a strong rail fence was in front of the

position, while an extensive space of cleared ground surrounded Guildford Court-house. The American army was in three lines: the first, the only one in sight, was composed of the two North Carolina brigades of militia, under Generals Butler and Eaton; the second, in the wood, was composed of Virginia militia, under Generals Stephens and Lawson; and the third was composed of regular troops, under General Huger and Colonel Williams. In the front there were some artillery. Colonel Washington with his cavalry covered the right flank, and Colonel Lee with his legion were appointed to the left flank. The British General was induced, after observing the disposition of the American forces, to direct his attack against the left wing; and he accordingly brought up his guns and opened fire, under cover of which he resolved to make his arrangements. The Hessian regiment of Bose, with the 71st, were to be led by Major-General Leslie, and supported by one battalion of guards. The 23rd and 33rd regiments were to be led by Colonel Webster, and supported by the other two battalions of guards under Brigadier O'Hara. The German Jagers and the light infantry of the guards were thrown into the wood on the left of the guns; and Colonel Tarleton with his cavalry remained drawn up on the road, in readiness to act as circumstances might require. As soon as these arrangements were completed the troops received orders to advance, but to reserve their fire till they were close up to the enemy. It was half-past one in the afternoon when Leslie, finding himself so much outflanked by the enemy's left, brought up the guards to the right of Bose's regiment, and they then moved forward across the open field exposed to the enemy's artillery, and at the distance of 140 yards received the fusilade of Greenc's entire first line; but, unmindful of this effect, they steadily moved on till they were near enough to deliver their own fire in one unbroken, tremendous crash, and they then rushed forward with the bayonet. Webster advanced with equal vigour on Leslie's left, and the American first line fell back before them upon the second among the protecting trees. But the Virginian militia in the second line were by no means influenced by the example thus set them, but stood their ground for a considerable time, and fought with great resolution, keeping up a galling fire which did great execution on the British, whose fire could not reach them. Cornwallis had, however, brought up nearly the whole mass of his infantry, so that the American line was completely outflanked, and they were obliged to fall back on the third line, which was posted in the woods. The excessive density of the congregated masses rendered the bayonet now almost useless, and the battle degenerated into a hard-fought hand-to-hand encounter, in which the operations of every regiment were independent of each other. Nevertheless the British pushed onward, guided by the firing of the others, and in this manner the two battalions of the guards and the 71st regiment, which composed the centre, reached the cleared ground near the Court-house, where they found a corps of continental infantry formed in the open field on the left of the road. The Hon. Lieut.-Colonel Stuart who commanded the second bat-

talion of the 71st instantly attacked and routed these troops, and they fled, leaving two 6-pounders behind them; but pursuing them with too much ardour in the wood, the British were suddenly thrown into confusion by a very heavy and unexpected fire, and were at the same moment charged by Colonel Washington at the head of his cavalry, who drove them back with slaughter and re-captured the 6-pounders. Lieutenant Macleod at this critical moment reached the open ground at the Court-house, and opened his 3-pounders on the cavalry with such effect as to check them; and the 71st was soon seen emerging from the wood with the brigade of O'Hara, who, notwithstanding a severe wound, had rallied the guards, and was now reinforced by the grenadier battalion. At this time Webster came up with the 23rd on the left, so that in a few minutes the British line was united in front of the Court-house. Tarleton also came sweeping on with his cavalry at this opportune moment; and General Greene did not think it advisable any longer to prolong the contest, but abandoned the advantageous ground on which he stood and retreated in tolerably good order, leaving behind him all the artillery which he had brought into the field and two ammunition-waggons. In proportion to the number he had brought into the battle Lord Cornwallis's loss was serious; he had to lament the loss of nearly one-third of his force, ninety-three killed, 413 wounded, and twenty-six missing. As a considerable part of the conflict was bush-fighting, the loss was particularly heavy in officers. Stuart of the guards and four other officers were killed. Brigadiers O'Hara and Howard and Colonels Webster and Tarleton were wounded; the first of these died of his wounds, and was greatly regretted; nine captains, four lieutenants, five ensigns, and two adjutants, were wounded, and Cornwallis had two horses shot under him. The Americans abandoned from 200 to 300 dead on the field. General Huger, Major Anderson, and about thirty of their officers were killed, wounded, or missing. General Greene rallied his force behind Troublesome Creek, eighteen miles from the field of battle, but found he had none left with him but the regular troops. The militia had to a man returned the nearest way to their homes. Victory, however, at the price was a defeat to Cornwallis: he felt that he was in no condition to follow up his victory, for he could obtain no provisions where he was, and therefore it was necessary for him to fall back on Wilmington, whence they could be obtained. Under these circumstances his army moved on the 18th to Bell's Mill, on the Deep River, and here he left in the Quakers' Meeting-house about seventy of his wounded, addressing them under a flag of truce to the care and humanity of the Americans. The British rested two days at Bell's Mill, and then retired to Cross Creek, on the river Haw, where Lord Cornwallis had been taught to expect he should be enabled to give his army repose and plenty; but neither provisions nor forage could be had here, and he therefore continued his march to Wilmington, where he arrived on the 7th of April. General Greene slowly followed the British army to within two or three marches of Cross Creek, when he no sooner found that they

descended towards the sea-coast, than he halted his army at Ramsay's Mill, and now resolved to carry the war into South Carolina.

### 6. BATTLE OF HOBKIRK'S HILL.

Lord Cornwallis as soon as he was aware that Greene, whom he had looked upon as ruined, was in full march again, and that Lee had crossed the Pedee, sent an express to Lord Rawdon, whom he had left in command at Camden, but Greene arrived there before this express; and Lord Rawdon was astonished at receiving intelligence that an enemy that he had heard was defeated, was coming upon him, and had nothing left him but to resist, relying upon his own resources. He immediately called in all his detachments, when he found himself at the head of about 900 men. Greene had got about 1500 regulars, and some militia had again come back to him. Rawdon was totally ignorant of the amount of this American force, or of Lord Cornwallis's whereabouts, and having received no instructions he thought it his duty simply to maintain his post at all hazards. At length on the 19th of April General Greene appeared and took post on the brow of a height called Hobkirk's Hill, about a mile and a half from the British redoubts. It was said that it was his intention to remain here until joined by Lee and Marion. In this situation Lord Rawdon received a letter from Colonel Balfour at Charleston, acquainting him with Lord Cornwallis's situation, and that Colonel Watson with the South Carolina regiment was on his way to join him from Ninety-six; but at the same time conveying instructions to his Lordship to retire for security behind the great river Santee. Some skirmishes now ensued between the opposing forces, and from some prisoners it was learned that Greene's force was much less considerable than was anticipated, but at the same time the intelligence was that Marion had taken up a position that would render it impossible for Watson to reach the British lines. Lord Rawdon observed, however, that the American General had sent off his artillery and baggage a day's march to the rear, and soon afterwards that he had detached his militia to bring them back again: such irresolution and apparent indecision as to his intentions, induced the British commander to think that he could avail himself of an opportunity to venture a sudden surprise upon his enemy. Accordingly on the 25th of April in open daylight at ten in the morning, he sallied forth from Camden with all his force, and making an extensive circuit came down on the enemy's left unperceived. The driving in of their pickets was the first intimation to the Americans of this unexpected attack. They formed with expedition, and attempted to outflank the British, while Colonel Washington with his cavalry tried to get into the rear, and at the same moment three 6-pounders were brought up which opened grape upon the British advance. This was led by Lieut.-Colonel Campbell of the 63rd, with the King's American regiment. Lord Rawdon conceived in this emergency one of those quick and happy designs which the exigencies of war call forth in those who are fitted for command. Seeing the patriots extending their front with an apparent intention

of surrounding him, he quickly brought forward the volunteers of Ireland and some provincial corps, and forming them into one line with the South Carolina regiment and a squadron of cavalry and reserve, he charged the enemy with the entire line thin as it was, and completely frustrated the enemy's attempt. These three corps now pushed the Americans with much resolution to the summit of the hill, and then drove them, cannon and all, down the opposite slope of it. Their rout was complete, and they were pursued for some miles, but from his inferiority in cavalry Lord Rawdon would not suffer his infantry to proceed further, and they were accordingly stopped and recalled. During the pursuit Colonel Washington contrived to get into the rear of the British and made some prisoners, but as soon as he saw the British flag flying from the summit of Hobkirk's Hill, he made haste to follow after Greene, and was not himself pursued: the loss on the side of the republicans was about 200 or 300 killed and wounded, and Rawdon's was 258, of whom thirty-eight were killed, a number that could be ill spared out of so weak a force. Greene retired about fourteen miles from Camden, where he took post to collect his scattered troops and await reinforcements. Lord Rawdon, however, was obliged to retire from the scene of his victory, and to act on the defensive.

#### 7. LORD RAWDON RELIEVES FORT NINETY-SIX.

On the very day that Rawdon fought and conquered on Hobkirk's Hill, Lord Cornwallis hoping that that General would be able to maintain his ground, and in the most unfavourable event, flattering himself that the recovery of the Carolinas would be at any time practicable, began his march from Wilmington. His object was to take advantage of Greene's absence, in order to advance through North Carolina, and give his hand to Arnold, and to General Phillips, who had taken the command in the Chesapeake, and with 2500 men was on the 24th of April at Petersburg. After ravaging and burning Manchester on the James River opposite to Richmond, where La Fayette was posted with 2000 militia, that commander had fallen back on Warwick, to await the order of Lord Cornwallis. Here the General-in-Chief arrived after a long and laborious march of a month, on the 20th of May, and received the unwelcome news of the death of Phillips, who had died of fever a little before his arrival. A further reinforcement of from 1500 to 2000 men had however been sent to the Chesapeake by Sir Henry Clinton, and Cornwallis now received intelligence of the departure of three regiments from Cork destined for Charleston, at the same time that he heard of the success of Lord Rawdon over General Greene. La Fayette on the other hand was expecting to be joined by General Wayne as well as by Greene, so that the grand catastrophe of the war seemed at length about to open to the fatigued attention of the world, for the plot now thickened around the estuary of the Chesapeake River.

Rawdon effected a junction with the troops under Colonel Watson

on the 7th of May, after a long, circuitous, and exceedingly difficult march, in which he had been obliged to pass the Santee twice. Circumstances nevertheless induced him to quit Camden on the 9th, after destroying the works and all that he could not bring away, and on the 13th he safely crossed the Santee River at Nelson's Ferry, and established himself on the other side. The republicans had invested a post at Motte's House on his rear, and opened batteries against it before he quitted Camden, and he now received the unwelcome news that after a gallant defence it had fallen into the hands of the enemy. Lord Rawdon was met at Nelson's Ferry by Colonel Balfour from Charleston, who came up to consult him on the state of affairs, and on the general, if not universal, defection of the people of the country. The difficulty of obtaining intelligence had become extreme, but he had heard that the provincials were pressing down on Orangeburgh, which, together with Fort Motte, Granby, and several other places, had fallen into the hands of the enemy. This induced Lord Rawdon to fall back to the Eutaws, and afterwards to move to Monk's Corner for the protection of Charleston. This abandonment of the upper country left the post at Ninety-six entirely exposed to the enemy, and on the 22nd of May Greene sat down before it in form. The works were complete and strong, and there was a garrison of 400 men, under the command of Colonel Cruger. The fortunate arrival of the detachment from Ireland on the 3rd of June now enabled Lord Rawdon to return and undertake the relief of this garrison. In four days after he marched from Charleston with about 1700 foot and 150 horse, and was joined on his way by Colonel Doyle with the troops which he had left at Monk's Corner. On his road he received the news of the loss of Augusta, and that the troops who had been engaged at that place had joined General Greene. A partisan of the name of Middleton somewhat incommoded him, but Major Coffin at the head of some royalist cavalry, completely routed him. Greene, on hearing of Lord Rawdon's advance, determined, as he had carried his sap close to the principal redoubt of Ninety-six, to attempt a storm before it could be relieved; but, although this was carried out with undaunted courage, it was resisted with equal gallantry, and after a bloody combat the General called off the troops, raised the siege, and retired with all the incumbrances of the camp across the Saluda River.

Lord Rawdon arrived on the 21st of June at Ninety-six, but as he was in no mind to let Greene escape, he instantly proceeded across the Saluda the following night in pursuit of him, and arrived at the fords of the Ennore, forty miles from Ninety-six, in pursuit of the republican General, but Greene's army was still two hours before him and had passed the river, not ceasing its flight till it had crossed both the Tyger and Broad Rivers. It was Lord Rawdon's intention to destroy Ninety-six, and he left Colonel Cruger, the late Governor of it, behind, with directions to do so under certain circumstances. He himself set off for the Congaree, having previously requested Colonel Balfour to send a regiment as far as Orangeburgh,



on which he might fall back in case of any sinister result. Rawdon arrived at his destination on the 1st of July, two days before the appointed time, and found General Greene's light troops there before him. A few days after, his foragers going out against his express orders, were surprised by Lee's legion, and two officers and forty dragoons were taken prisoners. Not only the loss of these men and horses, which to his very small force was important, but the conviction that his design had been anticipated by the enemy, who would now fall upon him in force, induced him to determine at once to give it up and to fall back on Orangeburgh. His route lay across Congaree Creek, which Colonel Lee, with a considerable body of cavalry and some infantry of his legion, was appointed to guard, and who had already destroyed the bridge, and felled trees to make the ford impracticable. The intense heat of the sun about noon was considered by Lord Rawdon as advantageous to select that time of day for his attempt to cross the river in the face of such obstacles, and the American force was found happily quite off their guard. After the interchange of a few shots, he got over the water a part of his infantry, who dispersed the enemy on the other side, and the fords were cleared without further interruption. He found the 3rd regiment under Colonel Stuart at Orangeburgh, which had been sent by Balfour, and on the 10th of July Greene came down upon him and reconnoitred his position; but suddenly, while in full expectation of an attack, intelligence arrived that the American General had retired, and had even recrossed the Congaree before Lord Rawdon had received notice of his retreat. This closed the campaign, for the intemperate heat of the climate at this season overcame all the energies of men. Lord Rawdon was altogether upset by it, and left the country on account of his health and returned to England, allowing the command to devolve on Colonel Stuart.

#### 8. LORD CORNWALLIS ESTABLISHES HIS ARMY IN YORK TOWN.

Lord Cornwallis on taking the command in Virginia, found the enemy in no condition to oppose him with any degree of effect. He first advanced from Petersburg to the river James, which he passed at Westover, and thence marching through Hanover county, crossed the South Aurea or Pamunky River. The Marquis de la Fayette observed his motions, but inclined his route to the northward, whence he looked to receive the expected reinforcement with General Wayne, which was marching up to him 800 strong through Maryland. Cornwallis at this time received from New York the 43rd and some other British and Anspach battalions. He was also strengthened by some remounts from the breed of horses for which Virginia was celebrated, which placed Tarleton in a condition to beat up Jefferson's quarters, who with his provincial assembly were now at Charlottesville. Having destroyed on his way twelve waggons laden with arms and clothing, Tarleton dashed into the village and took seven members of the assembly prisoners; 1000 new firelocks, 400 barrels of gunpowder, some hogsheads of tobacco, clothing, and stores were also captured or destroyed. Lieut.-Colonel Simcoe was

detached on a similar service to the point of Fork, fifty miles above Richmond, but Baron Steuben was too expeditious for him, and removed the stores away across the river Fluvanna. By some ingenious stratagem, however, Simcoe made the Prussian officer believe that the whole British army was after him, and getting a handful of men across, he attacked the enemy's quarters, and obliged him to fall back and join La Fayette, abandoning the stores he had removed, and which were either carried off or destroyed. Wayne and Steuben having now united with the French General at Raccoon Ford, very dexterously threw their whole force between the British army and Albemarle, which obliged Lord Cornwallis to fall back with his army to Richmond, on the river James, and afterwards on Williamsburg, midway between the rivers James and York. La Fayette, however, was quick on his steps, and Simcoe, who brought up the rear, was pushed by the General for miles before he got into camp; but at length he beat off the advanced troops with loss. On the 4th of July Cornwallis marched from Williamsburg, and sent part of his army in the direction of Portsmouth with the rest he encamped in an open field near James Town, under cover of the shipping, preparatory to his crossing the river. The French Marquis was now grown so confident that he came upon the British by forced marches with the intention of striking some severe blow, and on the 6th, about four o'clock, he attacked the outposts in considerable force. About sunset General Wayne arrived with 900 regulars and 600 militia with some artillery, and began to form in front of the British camp. He thought he had only to deal with a rear-guard, for Lord Cornwallis had used all possible stratagems to encourage this idea of his weakness. His Lordship now therefore determined to anticipate the attack of his adversaries, and advanced in two lines on the enemy. The first line having nothing but militia opposed to them, soon dispersed them, but Colonel Dundas with the second line on the left, having in his brigade the 43rd, 76th, and 80th regiments, found himself opposed to La Fayette's continental troops, and two 6-pounders, when a short but very warm action ensued. Wayne commanded the whole and was completely routed, his cannon taken, and his people forced to retire behind a morass in great confusion. Darkness prevented any pursuit. La Fayette then retired to repose and collect his scattered force, and the British army quietly crossed the river in the night, having lost about five officers and seventy privates in killed and wounded. The Americans were thought to have lost ten officers and 100 privates killed or wounded, and some 300 prisoners.

It would appear that Lord Cornwallis and Sir Henry Clinton were not quite agreed as to the best mode of conducting the war in Virginia. It had been the idea of the government at home to make the latter colony the seat of war and to establish a permanent station on the coast. Cornwallis, forming his judgment on the spot, seems to have been of opinion that nothing but an offensive war could answer in Virginia, for which end a very considerable army would be necessary; and that the force he had with him was unequal to such a pur-

pose. Sir Henry Clinton, on the other hand, kept his attention fixed on New York, against which he apprehended an attack by the combined French and American armies. Cornwallis was therefore ordered by Clinton to look out for a good defensive post in the south, capable of protecting troops and ships of the line. Portsmouth and Hampton Roads were at first selected and abandoned, and at length Lord Cornwallis determined in August to return with his army to the peninsula which lies between the James and York Rivers, on the narrowest part of which, where it is about five miles over, is situated York Town, and on the opposite side is Gloucester Point, the distance between these being about a mile. These places entirely command the navigation of the river, which is there deep enough to admit ships of great size and burden. Lord Cornwallis applied himself with the utmost diligence and industry to fortify these posts, and to render them equally respectable by land and water, and here on the 22nd of August he concentrated all his force, amounting to 7000 excellent troops, after having sent back to Clinton the troops that had been sent him for offensive operations in Virginia.

#### 9. NAVAL WAR—CAPTURE OF THE DUTCH ISLAND OF ST. EUSTATIA.

The naval operations of the year had hitherto been only the accustomed course of independent actions with little squadrons and single ships. On the 4th of January the "Courageux," 74, Captain Lord Mulgrave, and the "Valiant," 74, Captain Goodall, fell in with three French frigates off Brest, one of them having in tow their late prize, the "Minerva," which was retaken after a running fight of great obstinacy, her captain, the Chevalier de Grimond, with forty-nine men, being killed. The following day the Dutch 50-gun ship, the "Rotterdam," Captain Volbergen, was captured by the "Warwick," 50, Captain the Hon. Keith Elphinstone. A reinforcement consisting of ships of the line arrived from England early in the year, under the command of Rear-Admiral Hood, with intelligence of the rupture that had taken place between Great Britain and Holland, and instructions for the immediate attack of the Dutch possessions in the West Indies. The island of St. Eustatia was known to be their grand dépôt, and on the 3rd of February the fleet under Sir George Rodney, with a sufficient detachment of soldiers on board to secure the conquest, feigning a design on Martinique to deceive the French commanders, suddenly appeared before the island of St. Eustatia; resistance was not attempted, for it had been a free port and was wholly unprepared to make an effectual opposition. M. de Graaf, the Governor, at once returned an answer to the summons that he was utterly incapable of defence, and relied solely on the clemency of the conquerors. With this island were captured 150 merchant ships richly laden, one frigate of 38 guns, and five other ships of war carrying from 14 to 26 guns, together with magazines filled with tobacco and sugar, valued at more than two millions sterling. A convoy had already left the island under the Dutch ship of war, the "Mars," 64, about thirty-six hours before Rodney's arrival, with West India produce valued at 500,000*l.*, and these were immediately

pursued and captured by Captain Reynolds, with the "Panther," and the "Sybil," frigates. The adjacent islands of St. Martin and Saba were also reduced. The islands having been captured at the first summons, there had been no time to destroy or secrete the merchants' books, from which it appeared that certain English capitalists had established a clandestine commerce with the Dutch to supply the Americans with warlike stores, using a cipher, that is, they called cannon-balls, fruit; gunpowder, grain, &c. The Admiral declared his determination "to bring this nest of villains to condign punishment: they deserve scourging," said he, "and shall be scourged."

While Rodney was at St. Eustatia he heard that a reinforcement of the French, under Admiral de Grasse, was expected at Martinique, and he accordingly despatched Sir Samuel Hood with seventeen ships of the line to intercept them off Fort Royal Bay. On the 28th of April some of Hood's headmost cruisers signalled a superior fleet and a numerous convoy. Hood instantly formed the line ahead and determined to continue it through the night, in order to cut off the enemy's fleet from the harbour. In the morning he sighted the enemy as their convoy was turning round the Diamond Rock, and De Grasse drew up his fleet in a line of battle abreast for their protection. The British fleet had unfortunately been carried so much to leeward in the night that four or five French ships of the line from Fort Royal harbour, were enabled to get out and join their comrades. On the other hand the "Prince William," 64, opportunely joined Sir Samuel Hood at this critical moment. A partial action commenced about half an hour before noon on the 29th, and continued, though at a very great distance, till a quarter-past three. Every possible manœuvre was resorted to to bring the enemy to close action. Hood says, "The option of distance lay with M. de Grasse (who had the wind), and it was not possible for me to go nearer, but never was more powder and shot thrown away in one day before, and as not one in ten of the enemy's shot reached us, I ceased firing." Some of the best ships in the British fleet, under conduct of captains of the most undoubted bravery, did not lose a man, but a few ships suffered very considerably. The "Russell," the "Intrepid," and the "Torbay," sustained great damage, and this was the worst loss in the engagement, for that in killed and wounded was inconsiderable, and did not reach 100. The French Admiral on the following day seemed disposed to bring matters to the point he had before evaded, and Sir Samuel Hood, seeing the French line very irregular and broken, made a bold movement to gain the wind, which, if he had succeeded in, would have cut them off and destroyed one portion of the French fleet before it could be succoured by the other; but fortune failed the brave on this occasion, and the condition of the wounded ships so hampered the movements of the British Admiral, that he came to the determination of bearing away for Antigua. De Grasse instantly pursued and nearly captured the "Torbay," but she was succoured in time, and all got safe away. Rodney with the "Sandwich" and the other ships joined

Hood, and after refitting the whole fleet proceeded to Barbadoes.

In the mean time, on the 10th of May, the Marquis de Bouillé with a body of troops under the Viscount Damas, landed in the night on the island of St. Lucia. Here Brigadier St. Leger commanded with the 46th regiment, and happily the garrison was at the critical moment strengthened by the arrival of a frigate and two sloops of war, who immediately landed their seamen and marines to man the batteries. St. Leger was admirably seconded by his officers, and not appalled at the sight of a French fleet of twenty-five sail of the line, which bore down with a view of anchoring in Grosislet Bay, but though the danger appeared imminent, the fire from the batteries on Pigeon Island was so well directed that the French appeared suddenly to abandon their design, whatever it was. The troops were all re-embarked and the whole fleet stood over to Martinique in the morning. On the 23rd of the same month a small French squadron with a considerable body of land forces, under the conduct of M. de Blanchelaude, appeared off the island of Tobago, and was soon followed by De Bouillé. Governor Ferguson instantly despatched the "Rattlesnake," a very swift sailer, to convey the intelligence to Sir George Rodney, at Barbadoes, and the Admiral forthwith despatched six sail of the line and some frigates with some troops, under the command of General Skeene, to its relief. On Drake's making the island on the 30th he discovered twenty-seven sail to seaward between him and the land. Like a good officer he did not haul his wind, until he had fully reconnoitred, and had arrived at the conclusion that it was impossible for him to land his troops or afford relief to the island in face of such a disproportionate force; but Drake forthwith despatched his swiftest sailing vessel to inform Sir George, and although he was immediately chased by the enemy for a considerable distance, he got safely into Carlisle Bay on the 2nd of June. Rodney had before his arrival received intimation of De Grasse's movements, and stood out with all his fleet, having additional troops on board under the command of General Vaughan, on the following morning, but on arriving at Tobago they found it had already surrendered to the Marquis de Bouillé with a land force. This officer is said to have adopted a singular mode to attain his object, having deliberately set fire to four plantations daily till the Governor capitulated. At the same time that Rodney arrived at Tobago, he came in sight of the French fleet, consisting of twenty-four sail of the line. The British Admiral brought with him but twenty or twenty-one ships. Never were ships cleared for action with more alacrity, yet notwithstanding the superiority of the enemy, every intention was manifested by them of avoiding the contest. On a sudden De Grasse stood away with his whole fleet, but Rodney thought the object of the French Admiral was to draw him into the channel between Grenada and the main, and therefore now relinquished all endeavours to contest the point with the French. He commanded Sir Samuel Hood to follow De Grasse with fourteen ships, and make direct for the North American

station, in order to reinforce Admiral Graves, who had in the month of July succeeded Admiral Arbuthnot in that command. Sir George Rodney, whose health had suffered in the service, now returned to England, when his conduct in the conquest of St. Eustatia was severely commented upon; but he fully justified it in his place in Parliament, on the ground of expediency and the interest of his country.

#### 10. THE BRITISH AND FRENCH FLEETS SAIL AWAY FOR THE NORTH AMERICAN COAST.

Sir Samuel Hood was wholly without intelligence concerning the fleet under De Grasse, when he arrived off Sandy Hook on the 28th of August, but he had sighted the squadron under Barras, with ten sail of the line off the Capes of Virginia. Admiral Graves had now under him nineteen ships of the line, and one of 50 guns, and with this fleet he forthwith proceeded over the bar on the 31st, steering directly for the Chesapeake, hoping to arrive before the junction of the French squadrons; but on the 5th of September his look-out frigate reported that the whole French fleet were lying within Cape Henry. Graves immediately formed his line ahead and advanced towards the enemy, who forthwith got under weigh and ran out to sea to meet him with twenty-four heavy ships of the line. At about two P.M. the signal was made to Rear-Admiral Drake, commanding the rear division, which was now the leading one of the fleet, to bear up and close with the enemy. At a quarter-past four both fleets got into action and the contest continued till after sunset. Several of the English ships received great damage, and the "Terrible," 74, was so much injured that her pumps were kept going to keep her from sinking, and it was at length found necessary to destroy her. In the action the British loss amounted to ninety killed and 230 wounded. The fleets continued in sight of each other during the succeeding four days with a power on either side of renewing the action; but Admiral Graves was not much inclined to do so, having only nineteen ships to twenty-four, 1500 guns against 1800, and 11,300 men against 18,000; and consequently De Grasse, taking advantage of the first favourable change of wind, pushed for the Chesapeake River, where he anchored his fleet and bade defiance to the British Admiral to dislodge him. The British fleet was, therefore, carried back to New York, where on the 24th it was joined by Admiral Digby from England, and by successive reinforcements from other quarters, so that by the 11th of October it numbered as many as twenty-seven ships of two decks, with two of 50 guns each.

#### 11. WASHINGTON ASSEMBLES HIS ARMY TO ATTACK YORK TOWN.

During these transactions Washington was playing a game of great address on the side of New York. He used every endeavour to propagate an idea that the object of the contemplated attack, in conjunction with the French, was New York, and that he had given up the intention of proceeding to the succour of Virginia. He employed the stratagem of sending fictitious letters announcing this

intention, which he took care should fall in the way of the British scouts. He had, in truth, at one time seriously meditated a stroke upon Sir Henry Clinton, and was much mortified at finding that the French Admiral would not come into his arrangements. Indeed, he expresses in his correspondence at this time how provoked he was that De Grasse did not come to New York in time to prevent the arrival of a fleet of transports with 2000 Hessian troops, which had reached Clinton so late as the 14th of August; and he had certainly associated his hopes of a glorious termination of the war with his long concerted and earnestly pursued plan of investing New York both by sea and land. It was therefore with evident reluctance that Washington had given up all idea of attacking New York, and now at De Grasse's earnest request began to remove the French troops into Virginia, for the purpose of carrying on the war with the object that had been agreed upon with the allies. The detachment under the Count de Rochambeau was brought from Rhode Island, and all the troops destined for the south were in motion on the 15th of August, when Washington broke up his camp at New Windsor and passed the North River to meet them. The confederated forces marched through Philadelphia on the 3rd and 4th of September, where such courtesies as might be expected passed between the French commander and the Congress assembled there. From thence they marched to the head of the Elk, at the bottom of the Chesapeake, and the French fleet under Count de Grasse was in possession of that estuary.

#### 12. CLINTON SENDS AN EXPEDITION WHICH TAKES POSSESSION OF FORTS TRUMBULL AND GRISWOLD.

For some time Clinton thought that Washington was not going to the south at all, but that he was intending once again to make an attempt on New York, whilst La Fayette and the French proceeded to attack Cornwallis's army. As soon, however, as Sir Henry Clinton became aware of the real intentions of General Washington, he thought nothing more likely to induce him to retrace his steps towards the north than a movement by Benedict Arnold, since it was the great object of the revenge desired by the Americans to get this man in their power. Clinton therefore recalled him to New York, and sent him with a sufficient land and marine force on an expedition up the Connecticut. On September the 6th, the embarkation having been effected in the night, the troops in two detachments were landed in the morning, on each side of the harbour of the trading town of New London; that on the Croton side being commanded by Lieut.-Colonel Eyre, and that on the London side by General Arnold. A redoubt, from which a cannonade was opened upon his troops, was abandoned on his approach. Fort Trumbull, which commanded the harbour, was presently carried by four companies of British, who obtained a footing in it in spite of showers of grapeshot that rattled around them. There remained, however, on the other side Fort Griswold, which was represented to have been very incomplete in its works and destitute of any thing like a garri-

son. Colonel Eyre was therefore directed to carry this fort by a *coup-de-main*. It was defended by Colonel Ladgard with about 200 men. This was presently assaulted on three sides by two British regiments. Arnold, however, soon discovered that all his information on the subject was erroneous, and that the fort was in a much more formidable state than it had been represented to him to be, and was in truth very strong: he forthwith despatched an officer to countermand the orders for an assault, but it was now too late, as the attack had already commenced. The work was a square, with flanks; the troops at once succeeded in making a lodgment in the ditch, regardless of a very heavy fire; they then ascended by mutual help from each other's shoulders, and forced their way in through the embrasures with fixed bayonets. The 40th and 54th regiments purchased the honour of this desperate assault at a great loss. Eyre, who led them, was wounded; and Major Montgomery, who succeeded to the command, was killed by one of the spears, with which, when driven to a close encounter, the garrison had armed themselves in their defence; the command then devolved on Major Bromfield, and the fort was captured. Forty-six men were killed, and eight officers and 135 men wounded. On the other hand Ladgard, the Governor, and eighty-five of the garrison were slain, sixty were wounded, with about seventy prisoners. Ten or twelve privateers and traders were burned; a number of storehouses were subjected to the same fate, which quickly reduced the whole of New London to ashes, and sixteen of the American ships made their escape up the river. The expedition after this returned to New York.

### 13. SURRENDER OF LORD CORNWALLIS AND HIS ARMY AT YORK TOWN.

The combined French and American army had arrived, as has been noted, at the head of the Elk, where it falls into the Chesapeake. Transports from the French fleet were here ready to receive the whole army of Washington, and, having seen them embarked, the General and Rochambeau proceeded by land to Williamsburg, where La Fayette was encamped, having the French fleet lying in the bay. A council of war was forthwith held by the commanders by sea and land on board the "Ville de Paris," the flag-ship of De Grasse, and measures were concerted for reducing Lord Cornwallis at York Town with all convenient speed, the French Admiral intimating that he could not and would not remain long in that station with a fleet of such magnitude. It was the 15th of September when the transports landed the combined forces at Williamsburg, which now amounted to 12,000 men, French and Americans. The same day the French Admiral received intelligence that Admiral Graves with his fleet was off the mouth of the Chesapeake, and feeling confident that to save Lord Cornwallis they would attempt to force an entrance, and not liking to be obliged to fight in such narrow waters, he put to sea, as we have seen; and having driven the British fleet off the coast and captured two frigates, the "Richmond" and the "Isis," he returned to these waters on the



14th. Washington now hastened forward his military preparations with the greatest activity. While fleets and armies, Frenchmen and Americans, were thus gathering around him from north, south, east, and west, Lord Cornwallis continued to strengthen himself in his position as well as he could, indulging the hope that Sir Henry Clinton would be enabled, with the assistance of the fleet, to bring round to the Chesapeake such a force of men and ships as might turn the scale in favour of the British. About this time, indeed, he heard from Clinton of the arrival of Admiral Digby and of his determination to repair with the fleet and 5000 men to Cornwallis's relief. York Town, as it was called, was a mere village, of small extent, standing on a peninsula some eight miles wide between York and James Rivers. The southern bank of the former is high, and on the opposite shore stands another village called Gloucester. The communication between these posts and the passage of the river was commanded by British batteries, and by a small squadron of ships which lay under their guns, but all their redoubts and lines were mere earthworks, hastily thrown up. The main body of the army was encamped on the open ground round about York Town, intrenched within lines and field-works that completely commanded the peninsula; but these were not strong, and were too extensive for the force intended to defend them. Tarleton held the post of Gloucester with a force of 600 or 700 men under Lieut.-Colonel Dundas. As the French Admiral was not at all easy at his fleet being cooped up in these narrow waters, it was necessary for Washington to send La Fayette to him on the 25th of September with a very strong letter, to prevent his altogether going to sea and leaving the confederate army to act by itself. On the 28th the whole American army marched from Williamsburg, and came in sight of the British encampment that night, two miles from their outer works. On the 29th they again moved forward, and took their ground in front of the British works on the left. Beyond some skirmishing no opposition was made to this advance. Lord Cornwallis had found it already necessary to contract his post, the works of which were too extended and exposed for him effectually to defend them, and he accordingly on the 30th now quitted his exterior lines altogether, and retired to those more inward. When the Americans discovered this, they took possession of the outlying works and made a nearer advance. De Grasse's fleet were in Lynnhaven Bay, and a ship or two were pushed above the town to complete the movement on the water side. On the 1st of October the abandoned works on Pegin Hill were repaired by the combined army; and a detachment under the Count de Lauzun and General Weidow at the same time invested the post of Gloucester Point, and came into conflict with Tarleton, who, with some cavalry and infantry, sallied forth and took a good number of men prisoners. The trenches were opened in the night between the 6th and 7th of October; and on the 9th, at five in the afternoon, the first American battery on the right opened with six 18 and 24-pounders, besides mortars and howitzers. On the 10th two French batteries, one of ten 18 and 24-pounders, the other of four

18-pounders, and two more American batteries of 18-pounders and mortars were brought into play; and the "Charon" frigate, 44, was set fire to by some hot shot from the French guns, and entirely consumed, but her guns and stores had been previously removed. On the 11th the second parallel was advanced to 200 yards of the British works, and this was completed by the 14th; on that evening an assault was made on the two redoubts on the left under Colonel Hamilton, Washington's aide-de-camp, and Colonel Laurens, son of the President of Congress, which were successfully carried by the bayonet, taking one major and five officers with sixty-seven men prisoners; these redoubts were then included in the second parallel. On the 15th the British made a sortie under Lieut.-Colonel Abercrombie, and entering two of the batteries, spiked eleven guns, and killed and wounded four officers and twelve men of the French, but they were unable to effect much, for by this time the besieging batteries were mounted with 100 pieces of ordnance. Lord Cornwallis could now scarcely show a gun on the side of attack, his shells were nearly expended, and his works were sinking and crumbling. Nothing less than the certain hope and expectation of relief could have induced him to attempt the defence of the post any longer; but as yet nothing was heard or seen of the fleet that had been promised him, nor of the 5000 men from New York, which were to have made their appearance in the Chesapeake on the 15th.

Thinking that he might perhaps save a part of his army by a bold manœuvre and a rapid movement on the Gloucester side, he resolved to attack the Duke de Choisy, who commanded on that side, and to endeavour, although with the sacrifice of all his artillery and stores, to force his way through Maryland, Pennsylvania, and Jersey to New York. Accordingly, on the night of the 16th and 17th of October the light infantry, a great part of the guards, and part of the 23rd regiment were transported across to Gloucester Point without being discovered either by the French or Americans. But at this critical moment of hope, apprehension, and danger fortune proved adverse: the weather, which had till then been calm and moderate, changed to a most violent storm of wind and rain. The boats passing with the last division of the troops were driven down the river, and many of the boats could not recross again, so that the design was entirely frustrated, while Cornwallis's force, thus weakened and divided, became in imminent danger. At daybreak the besiegers brought guns to bear upon the passage, but the storm happily subsided, and the boats at length got the troops back again to their camp in the course of the forenoon without much loss. The British General now clearly saw that the crisis could no longer be averted—as he was without a shell in his locker and with sickness in the camp, while the engineers were of opinion that the works were assailable in many places, and that it would be madness to stand an assault. Cornwallis therefore beat a parley, and wrote to Washington to propose terms; when his proposals were returned to him and he was requested to make them in writing, on which a cessation of two hours was allowed. Eventually commissioners were named on both

sides to treat for a surrender. On the 18th Washington replied to his Lordship, and to expedite the business stated the terms of capitulation that he would be disposed to grant; but he only allowed two hours for consideration, and declared that at the end of that time hostilities must be recommenced. Colonel Laurens was the commissioner on the part of the American army, whose father, singularly enough, was at the very moment a close prisoner in the Tower of London. The Vicomte de Noailles was the commissioner on the part of France, and Colonel Dundas and Major Ross were the British negotiators. Nothing was left to the British but compliance with all demands. Hopeless of all relief from his chief, Lord Cornwallis was obliged to sign the capitulation. The terms were substantially the same as had been granted to the Americans at the surrender of Charleston; and General Lincoln, who had on that occasion resigned his sword to Cornwallis, was now appointed to receive the submission of the royal army. On the 19th of October the posts of York and Gloucester were given up. The garrison, consisting of 4017 men, marched out at three o'clock, the infantry with shouldered arms and fixed bayonets, the cavalry with swords drawn, the colours of both cased; and all these with a train of fine brass guns, stores, and provisions, now became the prize of the American army. The ships and their furniture were assigned to the French Admiral, who thus got one frigate, two sloops, and the transports: 1500 seamen shared the fate of the garrison. The officers and men retained their baggage, and the former were allowed their parole. The loss in killed and wounded on the side of the besiegers is not stated; but the besieged lost six officers and 548 men killed and wounded, and had expended 16,000 shot and shell in the siege.

The war was substantially closed by this brilliant feat of arms. It added immensely to the military reputation of General Washington both in France and Europe generally, and much enlarged his influence with the American people. Congress voted thanks and a marble column, and appointed the 13th of December for a day of thanksgiving and prayer on account of this signal interposition of Providence, when the members went in procession to the Dutch Lutheran Church to evince their gratitude. On the very day of the surrender of York Town 7000 troops, under Clinton himself, conveyed by a fleet of twenty-five ships of the line, and eight frigates, under Admiral Graves, left Sandy Hook to succour Cornwallis, but they did not arrive off the Chesapeake till the 24th of October, when on receiving intelligence of the surrender of the fleet and army, they returned to New York. Admiral Graves then resigned the command of the North American station to Admiral Digby and proceeded to his new command of Jamaica.

#### 14. WASHINGTON DESPATCHES A REINFORCEMENT TO GENERAL GREENE IN GEORGIA.

A trait is recorded of Washington at this time which is very significant of the disinterestedness, but at the same time of the severity

of his character. When the British ships were in the Potomac, a flag was sent on shore to Mount Vernon to require a supply of fresh provisions. The steward of the General, believing it to be his duty to save the property of his employer, repaired on board ship with the flag, carrying back an ample supply of every kind of fresh provisions. In reply to the report made to Washington of this circumstance, he said, "What has given me most concern is, that you should have gone on board the vessels of the enemy and furnished them with refreshments. It would have been less painful to me to have heard that in consequence of your non-compliance with their request, they had burnt my house and laid the plantation in ruins. You ought to have considered yourself as my representative; and should have reflected on the bad example of communicating with the enemy and making a voluntary offer of refreshments to them with a view to prevent a conflagration." It is almost unnecessary to say that this is not the practice with the armies of civilized nations. Any acts of courtesy which can lessen the asperities of war have been at all times gladly accepted and have never been stopped until they have been abused.

Washington, while exchanging congratulations on all sides on the success which had crowned his late efforts, had no disposition to repose on his laurels. He now endeavoured to excite the Count de Grasse to co-operate with him in an expedition against Charleston, and after writing a very earnest public letter on the subject, repaired on board the "Ville de Paris," to enforce his argument by personal exertions, but he failed altogether in his attempt. The French Admiral pleaded the orders he had peremptorily received from his court to execute other projects. The American General, however, within a few days of the surrender of Cornwallis, wrote to Congress that he had already ordered a reinforcement to join the army under General Greene, and as De Grasse could not give them conveyance by water, he had ordered them to march overland under the command of Major-General St. Clair, to aid in the reduction of the enemy's post at Wilmington. Washington himself, however, now returned to his former position on the North River.

#### 15. BATTLE OF EUTAW SPRINGS—STUART AGAINST GREENE.

But Greene had already commenced active operations long before the arrival of this reinforcement. At the beginning of September he broke up his camp on the high ground of Santee, crossed the Wateree, near Camden, and marched towards Friday's Ferry. On this Colonel Stuart retired to Eutaw, about forty miles from the Congaree, to meet a convoy and some reinforcements that were on the road from Charleston. Greene followed the British slowly, to give time to General Marion to come up and join him, which he did on the 7th, when the two armies were about seven miles from each other. It was instantly determined to engage, and at four o'clock in the morning of the 8th, Greene moved forward the legion of Lee, and while the regulars formed the advance, Colonel Washington brought up the rear and covered the artillery. At six o'clock Stuart first heard from two

deserters of their approach, but a large party of his troops had already gone out without arms in search of roots and vegetables. These were surprised, encountered, and cut to pieces. Stuart, on the appearance of the enemy, drew up the remainder of his men across a road on the heights near the Eutaw Springs, having a rivulet on his right and a very thick hedge on his left; and a small detachment with two guns were thrown forward to oppose the approach of the assailants. The attack was commenced upon this advanced body, which was driven back; and Greene then endeavoured to turn the left of the British. His attack was so vigorous that the buff gave way, but the 63rd and 64th regiments met the foe with the bayonet, but were at length borne back by the enemy's superior numbers. On the other hand the provincial militia were driven back by a battalion under Major Majoribanks, and this officer advanced till he came in front of a force of American regulars, who bravely came forward to meet him with the bayonet, whilst Lee with his legion outflanked and succeeded in turning the British left, on which they were enabled to pour a very destructive fire. This wing was thus obliged to yield their ground, and retreated to a large brick house surrounded with offices and garden-enclosures, into which Major Sheridan had already thrown himself with the New York loyal volunteers.

While Greene was following up his advantage Colonel Washington with his cavalry charged the British right flank, but was received by such a murderous fire that his people fled, leaving their gallant commander behind, wounded, and a prisoner. The Americans now threw forward a column in the direction of the brick house, but were met by incessant peals of musketry, and by rifles from every window and enclosure. Greene accordingly brought up his guns to batter the building, but they were found too light to do much execution, and the gunners were picked off by the good marksmen inside the house, so that the guns were eventually abandoned. Stuart now again re-formed his line and renewed the engagement with great spirit; and Greene made a last effort against the brick house and the British left wing, but his people had already suffered too much in their attacks upon the building to return to it with any alacrity, and the American General was obliged at last to draw off his army, having lost 139 killed, and about sixty prisoners. The loss of the British was eighty-five killed, 351 wounded, and 257 missing, which latter consisted principally of the foraging party who were surprised and cut off at the beginning of the affair. The Americans carried off a 3-pounder with them, and left behind them two 6-pounders. The British remained on the ground the night after the action, and all the following day without molestation; but in the evening Stuart thought it prudent to retire towards Monk's Corner, where he was joined by Major McArthur with his force, and Greene advanced again to Eutaw, but soon recrossed the Congaree and took up his old quarters behind the Santee. In the month of November he attempted a surprise of the British post at Dorchester, which failed; and he returned to a place called Round O, where he took up his quarters with his whole army to await the reinforcements that were

coming to him by land from the Chesapeake, under Major-General St. Clair.

#### 16. NAVAL AFFAIR AT THE ISLAND OF ST. IAGO.

A secret expedition to a very remote part of the world had been long talked of as in contemplation by England. The South Seas were at one time supposed to have been its destination. A large fleet was forming under Admiral Darby, for the relief of Gibraltar, but there was a squadron attached to it whose object was kept secret. This squadron consisted of the "Hero," Captain Hawker, the "Monmouth," 74, Captain Alms, one 64, and three 50-gun ships, besides several frigates, a bomb-vessel, fire-ship, and some sloops of war, all under the command of Commodore George Johnstone: and they had on board a land force consisting of 3000 men, under General Meadows. Several outward-bound East Indiamen, and store and ordnance vessels went under the convoy of Admiral Darby, which amounted accordingly to more than forty sail, and these all put to sea from Spithead on the 13th of March. This armament did not escape the penetration of France and Holland; the latter trembled for her colonial possessions, which she had no means of preserving but by the assistance of her new friend and ally—France. A squadron of five ships of the line and some frigates, with a body of land forces, all under the command of M. de Suffren, were hastily got together, destined to watch the motions of Commodore Johnstone's armament, which, however, safely arrived at Porto Praya Roads in the Portuguese island of St. Iago, in the Cape de Verd Islands, after a short and successful passage. It was soon apparent that the French Admiral was not altogether ignorant of his enemy's whereabouts, although it appears that the British Commodore was without any knowledge of his adversary, for he neglected those first precautions which every prudent man ought to take in time of war. He seemed to have no idea that there was an enemy in his track, and instead of mooring, according to the most obvious and natural arrangement for defence, the larger ships outward with their broadsides towards the sea, he anchored without the slightest attention to any order whatever, and without any vigilance. The crews were allowed to go on shore watering and fishing, and enjoying the recreations of the island. In this unprepared and disordered state, between nine and ten in the morning on the 16th of April, the "Isis," 50, which happened to be the outermost ship, perceived a strange squadron coming close round the land into the harbour. It was soon known to be French, and the alarm being given, signals were made to recall the men from shore, for, although the port was neutral, it was known that the French were seldom very scrupulous in the observation of neutrality, where an advantage was to be obtained. M. de Suffren was very soon in the centre of the British ships, the French squadron firing on both sides as they passed. The "Hannibal," 74, M. de Tremignon, led the way with great intrepidity, and while getting as near her as she could fetch, dropped her anchor with noble resolution. The "Héros," 74, M. de Suffren's flag-ship, took up

the next place; and the "Artesia," 64, M. de Cadillac, anchored astern of the "Héros." On the other side, the Commodore's own ship, "Romney," 50, could only fire through two openings between other ships, and accordingly Johnstone quitted her and raised his flag on board the "Héro." The engagement immediately began, and lasted an hour and a half. The British ships by their position were unable to fire except from one of their sides; but soon after the action began, some of the India ships recovering from their surprise, began to fire on the enemy with good effect. In a short time two of the French ships found this fire so intolerable as not to be any longer endurable; and the "Artesia," having lost her captain, made the best of her way out of harbour. M. de Suffren soon followed this example, and left the unfortunate "Hannibal," as a mark to be fired at from every side, while it was evident from her slow and ineffective return fire, that she must have been sorely injured and dismantled; but she displayed extraordinary gallantry and endurance; she had lost her foremast and bowsprit, and soon her main and mizenmast went by the board, and she was a mere hulk on the waters; nevertheless her commander raised a stump on which he rigged a sail, and one of her consorts contrived to take her in tow and carry her out to the mouth of the bay to the astonishment of all. The "Sphinx," 64, got hold of the "Hinchinbrooke," East Indiaman, but the Commodore pursued and recaptured her, and the Frenchman in making his escape was nearly lost on a reef of rocks. The "Infernal," fire-ship, was also at one time captured, but was fortunately recovered by her own crew.

#### 17. GIBRALTAR RELIEVED BY ADMIRAL DARBY.

The necessities in other parts of the world had occasioned by far too long a delay in the provisionment of the important fortress of Gibraltar, now seriously threatened by the Spanish armies and fleet. The supplies thrown in by Admiral Sir George Rodney, the previous year, had, through the care of its wary and provident Governor, been so sparingly consumed, that after reducing the daily allowance of the garrison, he now even condescended to so small a matter as the supply of hair powder worn by the soldiery; this he deemed an extravagant waste of flour, and without inquiring into its supposed ornament, he forbade the further use of it, as a matter of economy. The honour and interests of Great Britain were deeply engaged in the timely relief of "the Rock," and a fleet had been fitted out for this object in the beginning of the year, as has been already noticed, under the conduct of Admiral Darby, who had sailed from St. Helena with the East and West India convoys on the 13th of March. This fleet amounted in all to some 800 sail, and having cleared the Bay of Biscay the ships separated, and stood away on their respective courses, but ninety-seven transports, storeships, and victuallers kept on their course with the Admiral towards Gibraltar, and arrived off Cadiz before the middle of April. Looking into that harbour as they passed they found Cordova's fleet of thirty-three ships of the line lying peaceably at anchor there, without the

smallest appearance of any intention to oppose their progress. Darby therefore sent forward the transports with some men-of-war and frigates to cover them, to proceed with all speed to Gibraltar, where they arrived on the 13th, while he cruised with the main body of the fleet under his command off the Strait's mouth, to watch the movements of the Spaniards. Admiral Darby having effectually performed the hazardous and difficult service on which he had been sent, now returned to the Channel, leaving Admiral Digby with ten sail of the line and frigates to cruise to the westward, and he himself arrived in port on the 19th of May.

But though Spain did not dare to confront the British power in mid-sea, she had made herself exceedingly troublesome to the garrison of Gibraltar, where some gunboats constructed at Algeiras infested the bay, coming near enough to fire at night upon the town, and these had lately been considerably increased and improved. They were worked by twenty oars and carried a long 26-pounder in the prow. They were marshalled in order under the command of Don Moreno, and would even cannonade and bombard the ships lying in the bay when the wind favoured them, but at the appointed hour of the wind springing up contrary, they immediately took flight. Sir John Lockhart Ross with his division of two-decked ships had been placed here for the protection of the trade, which, owing to the personal activity of the captains and their crews, was, notwithstanding these annoyances, effectually secured. The heart of Spain was so thoroughly in her work at "the Rock," that she lavished all her treasures upon its conquest. The whole naval and military force of the state and its resources of every kind seemed diverted to that single object. She had now raised stupendous works against the place, and 170 pieces of cannon of the heaviest metal poured their iron shower in a tremendous cannonade and bombardment night and day for a considerable time consecutively, but the firing was returned with still superior power and greater fierceness by Elliot, the Governor. It was a standing maxim, however, with that eminent commander, never to waste his ammunition, and now finding that his loss from his adversary between the 10th of April to the end of June did not amount to more than one commissioned officer and fifty-two men killed, and seven officers and 253 wounded, after a discharge by the enemy of 10,000 pounds of powder, and 75,000 shot, the General retrenched his own fire and seemed to behold unconcerned the loud fury and empty violence of the Spanish artillery.

#### 18. THE FRENCH AND SPANIARDS BESIEGE FORT ST. PHILIP AT MINORCA.

But the Spaniards had at this time determined to undertake a new service—the reduction of the island of Minorca; and the combined fleets of France and Spain convoyed a force under the command of the Duke de Crillon, a French officer of some repute in the Spanish service, who landed there with a large body of troops without opposition on the 20th of August. The garrison, consisting of two British



and Hanoverian regiments under General Murray, retired into Fort St. Philip, the siege of which was immediately commenced in form. The French commander was instructed by his court to offer General Murray a bribe of 100,000*l.* sterling, and rank and employment in the French or Spanish service, if he would save him the loss, delay, and uncertainty of a siege, and surrender the fort to him. The high-minded Scotchman indignantly replied, "When your brave ancestor was desired by his sovereign to assassinate the Duke de Guise, he returned the answer which you should have done when your master charged you to assassinate the character of a man whose birth is as illustrious as your own: 'L'honneur me le défend.' I adopt the same words in reply to your proposal to me. But if you have any humanity pray send clothing to your unfortunate prisoners in my possession; leave it at a distance to be taken up for them, because I will admit of no communication with you for the future, but such as is hostile in the most inveterate degree." The French Duke, though young, volatile, thoughtless, and dissipated, after the fashion of the period, was a man of honour, and capable of appreciating that quality in others. To Murray's noble reproof he replied like a soldier, "Your letter places us each in our proper station. It confirms me in the esteem I have always had for you. I accept with pleasure your last proposition." Cailion found that he was not equal to the reduction of Fort St. Philip, for although he was reinforced by 4000 men despatched from Toulon, with artillery and engineer officers, yet he was unequal to the reduction of such a fortress this year.

#### 19. NAVAL WAR.

To make a diversion in the enterprise, a powerful fleet was collected together by the French and Spanish to invade the British coasts. The French were conducted by Admirals de Guichen, Beausset, and De la Motte-Piquet, and consisted of eighteen capital ships of the largest dimensions, many of them carrying 110 guns each; and the Spanish fleet, consisting of thirty sail of the line, was commanded by Don Luis de Cordova and Don M. de Gaston. The amount of both fleets combined was forty-nine ships of the line, and as soon as they had landed the troops at Minorca, they returned with diligence that they might cruise triumphantly at the mouth of the English Channel.

#### 20. BATTLE OFF THE DOGGER BANK BETWEEN THE BRITISH AND DUTCH FLEETS.

But before they could arrive there, Rear-Admiral Sir Hyde Parker, returning from the Baltic with a convoy of merchant-ships, fell in, off the Dogger Bank, very early in the morning of the 5th of August, with Admiral Zoutman in the "Ruiters," with a convoy of Dutch traders, and soon came to blows. The British and Dutch when they meet at sea have seldom separated without a stern conflict. Sir Hyde's squadron consisted of the following ships: the "Fortitude," 74, the flag-ship, the "Princess Amelia," 84, the "Bienfaisant," 64,

the "Buffalo," 60, the "Preston," 50, the "Dolphin," 44, with the "Latrona" and "Cleopatra" frigates, the "Alert" brig, and the "Sprightly" and "Bury" cutters. The Dutch Admiral, with Commodore Bindsbergen, had eight ships of the line, mounting from 74 to 54 guns, with ten frigates and five sloops; and they were joined by the "Charlestown," an American frigate of novel construction, being as long and as large as a ship of the line, with thirty-six 42-pounders on one deck, and an unusually large proportion of men as her crew. Admiral Parker, having separated the men-of-war from the merchant-ships under his convoy, bore away with a general signal to chase. The enemy immediately formed line with eight two-decked ships on the starboard tack. The British consisted of seven. Not a gun was fired on either side until the ships had arrived within pistol-shot of one another—"L'une et l'autre se disposèrent pour le combat dans un silence terrible." The action then began, and continued with an unceasing fire for three hours and a half. By this time the battle-ships on both sides were unmanageable; all the ships were shattered in their masts, rigging, and sails. The "Fortitude" had ten shots between wind and water, and a great many in her hull above water. Both squadrons lay like logs on the water for a considerable time near each other, like antagonists panting and out of breath with their great exertions. At length the Dutch bore away with their convoy to the Texel, but the British were not in a condition to follow them. The "Hollandia," 68, went down in the course of the night, and sunk in twenty-two fathoms of water, and, sad to record, she sunk so suddenly that the crew could not save the wounded. She was discovered by the British in the morning with her pendant still flying above water, which was immediately struck and brought off as a trophy by the "Belle Poule." The British lost 142 killed, including Captain Macartney of the "Princess Amelia;" 403 were wounded, including Captain Graeme, who lost an arm. The Dutch disguised their loss, but it was thought to have exceeded 1100 men in killed, wounded, and lost, including Count Bentinck, who bravely fought the "Batavia," and was mortally wounded in command of her. It was long supposed that the American ship "Charlestown" had gone down in the action, but though she survived she suffered severely. The battle of the Dogger Bank was the last hostile effort of any Dutch fleet, formerly of so much renown in naval annals. Henceforth the nation appears in history but as the spectator of the glory of others, and in a very slight degree as an asserter of her own.

King George in the royal yacht, having the Prince of Wales with him, met the fleet as it returned to the Nore, and held a levee of all the officers of the squadron, on which occasion the Admiral had the honour of dining with his Majesty; but although the Admiral was thus openly distinguished by his Sovereign, it was understood that for some cause he considered himself neglected and ill treated, and he had too much pride and sturdiness to conceal his dissatisfaction even from his King, or from the First Lord of the Admiralty, who accompanied his Majesty. It was an anecdote of the time that the

royal intention was on this occasion signified of providing for the son of Macartney, who had been killed in the action, and that Admiral Parker sulkily replied that this was unnecessary, for that he had adopted him as his own son; and he at the same time intimated his intention of retiring from the service, by wishing the King "younger officers and better ships, for that he had found he was grown too old for service." Shortly afterwards the Admiral did in truth strike his flag in disgust: all this, however, was a mere ebullition of party spleen, for he soon returned again to the service, and rehoisted his flag the following April, but he soon afterwards perished at sea.

## 21. THE CONFEDERATE FLEETS OF FRANCE AND SPAIN ENTER THE BRITISH CHANNEL.

Mean while the grand combined fleets had continued their course and occupied the mouth of the British Channel. Admiral Darby with a fleet of twenty-one ships of the line had gone away on a cruise to the westward about a month before, when the accidental meeting of a neutral vessel apprised him of the union and arrival of the combined French and Spanish fleets off the coasts of the United Kingdom, and he returned forthwith, and got safely into Torbay on the 26th of August. Very great alarm was spread in Ireland, as well as in England, by the unprotected state of the coasts, for Darby's fleet was quite unequal to cope with the enemy. The great outward-bound convoys for America and the West Indies were lying in the harbour of Cork, which was totally without fortifications, and the city was an immense store of all kinds of provisions. Accordingly troops were set in motion for its defence, and patriotic volunteers in numbers joined the soldiers. As soon as De Guichen and Cordova had received intelligence of Admiral Darby's position in Torbay, it was debated whether his great inferiority of force would not justify an attack in harbour. De Guichen contended strongly for an immediate attempt, for reinforcements were every day running into the bay, and the British had already got together thirty sail of the line, with twelve frigates and six fire-ships, and were each moment acquiring strength. De Beausset, the French second in command, declared, in opposition to his chief, that an attempt on Torbay would offer so many disadvantages to the larger force that it would be exceedingly hazardous of execution. The Spanish commanders were also equally divided in opinion: Cordova sided with De Beausset; and Vincent Doz, the third in command, with De Guichen; so that the idea of attacking Admiral Darby in Torbay was at length entirely renounced. The confederated fleet was, however, master of the sea, and every day it was picking up prizes and capturing a number of English ships, returning with the large booty obtained at St. Eustatia. It afterwards appeared that both French and Spanish fleets were in such exceedingly bad condition, that the British fleet ought to have gone forth to attack them, and the government had, indeed, sent orders to Darby to put to sea; but sickness and discussions were as rife in one squadron as the other, and the new ships of 110 guns were found exceedingly unmanageable

## 292 KEMPENFELDT CAPTURES FRENCH TRANSPORTS. [A.D.

and dangerous, and were very insufficiently manned. All this occasioned delays of one kind or another, so that the Admiral was prevented, notwithstanding the urgency of the occasion, from getting out to sea till the 14th of September, when the enemy had already abandoned all hope of successful action, and had sailed away to port with all their force. De Guichen with his division had already got into Brest on the 11th, and the Spaniards had proceeded direct to Cadiz. Darby kept the sea till the month of November, when the West India convoy arrived; and had he continued out a little longer he would have fallen in with a rich Spanish flotilla, which brought from America a large supply of treasure to Spain, but stress of weather forced the British fleet also into port.

### 22. ADMIRAL KEMPENFELDT CAPTURES TWENTY SAIL OF FRENCH TRANSPORTS—JOHNSTONE'S SQUADRON DESTROYS SOME DUTCH EAST INDIAMEN AT THE CAPE.

Several inconsiderable actions took place with various success between the British cruisers and privateers and those of France, Spain, and Holland. On the 2nd of September the "Chatham," 50, Captain Snape Douglas, captured off Boston the "Magicienne," 32, Captain the Chevalier Bouchetière, with the loss of thirty-two killed and fifty-four wounded, and she was added to the British navy. On the 14th of October the "Cameleon," 14, Captain Drury, engaged and burned a large Dutch lugger of 18 guns, which blew up in the fight so near the English sloop and with so terrible a shock that the people on board the "Cameleon" were thrown off their legs. Captain Drury tried to save the unfortunate crew, but not a soul was found alive either upon the wreck or in the water.

The utmost expedition was used at Brest to refit and repair De Guichen's squadron, notwithstanding the lateness of the season, as it was necessary to reinforce the Count de Grasse with both troops and ships of war, and also to expedite naval and military stores for their fleet in the West Indies. Intelligence of this preparation having been received in England, Admiral Kempenfeldt with thirteen sail of the line and four frigates left the coast in hopes of intercepting this convoy and squadron. The French force when it left Brest numbered nineteen heavy line of battle ships; yet, notwithstanding this superiority, or ignorant of it, Kempenfeldt had the fortune to fall in with them on the 12th of December in a hard gale of wind, when both fleet and convoy were a good deal dispersed. With great professional judgment and dexterity, for which this Admiral was eminently distinguished, he determined to profit by these circumstances, to cut off the convoy from the fleet in the first instance, and to fight the enemy afterwards. In the movements for this purpose the "Triomphante," 84, came across the "Edgar," 74, which led the English van, and a sharp though short conflict ensued; but before evening Kempenfeldt had captured about twenty sail of large transports and merchant vessels. The French commander had in the mean time collected together his force and formed the line of battle. Admiral Kempenfeldt got upon the same tack with

the enemy, with the determination of engaging them in the morning, but at daylight he discovered the extent of their force, and thought it prudent to change his resolution, so that the adverse fleets, after a full view of each other, parted apparently with equal content on both sides. Nearly 1100 land forces and between 600 and 700 seamen were taken in the prizes, together with brass and iron ordnance, gunpowder, small arms, and military clothing.

In the beginning of May Commodore Johnstone, having repaired damages, quitted Port Praya; and he despatched Captain Pigot towards the middle of June, with three or four of his best sailing ships, towards the southern extremity of Africa to obtain some intelligence as to the whereabouts of Admiral de Suffren. Captain Pigot fell in on this service with a large Dutch East India ship, the "Heldwothernde," of 1200 tons burden, laden with stores and provisions, besides 40,000*l.* in bullion for the island of Ceylon, which he captured; and he learned from her that the French squadron were in False Bay on the 21st of June, and that several Dutch East India ships were lying at anchor in Saldanha Bay, about fourteen leagues from the south end of the Cape, and therefore out of reach of their protection. This information satisfied Commodore Johnstone that he was not in a condition to fulfil his orders, which had for their object the conquest of the Dutch settlement at the Cape of Good Hope, which the timely arrival of M. de Suffren appeared to have effectually prevented; and accordingly the Commodore determined to profit by the information he received to attack the Dutch ships in Saldanha Bay. This scheme was very successfully effected. On the 21st of July he ran in under the shore in the night, and got into the bay betimes in the morning. The enemy were alive to danger, and had their fore-topsails bent in preparation for a start; but the Commodore was so alert and rapid in his movements, that he only gave them time, from the moment of their discovery of the British ships, to cut their cables and run their vessels on shore. The boats were instantly manned, and with great alacrity the seamen boarded the ships, though they had been set on fire, and saved three large vessels of 1100 tons each, while the fourth, of equal burden, was consumed. After this success he sent the "Hero," "Monmouth," "Iris," and "Active" with General Meadows and the troops to the East Indies, and returned with his prizes to England.

### 23. THE MARQUIS DE BOUILLÉ RETAKES ST. EUSTATIA AND DUTCH GUIANA.

The Count de Grasse, when he quitted York Town with his fleet, carried with him a land force under the Marquis de Saint-Simon, and repaired to the Caribbean Sea; but the Marquis de Bouillé, who had been left in command in the Antilles for the French, had not waited for his return to carry out new conquests. On the 26th of November, with three frigates and smaller vessels, having 2000 men on board, he surprised the British garrison, consisting of the 18th and 15th regiments which had been left in possession of St. Eustatia. It is

related that an Irish battalion in the French service, under Count Dillon, dressed in scarlet, deceived Governor Cockburn, who thought them to be a reinforcement to himself, and that he did not discover his error till they opened fire upon his troops and made him prisoner. The Count de Kersaint was sent about the end of this year to reconquer the Dutch colonies of Demerara, Essequibo, and Surinam, which had been left unprotected, and he resolutely compelled the English planters to supply slave labour for the erection of forts for their defence against the British.

#### 24. ELLIOT MAKES A SUCCESSFUL SORTIE FROM GIBRALTAH.

At Gibraltar the Spaniards had almost exhausted the fury of their cannonade, and an extraordinary degree of quiet now prevailed on both sides, when Governor Elliot seeing that the enemy's stupendous works had already arrived at a very high state of perfection, considered the moment favourable for making a sortie upon them in order to injure or destroy them. He accordingly made his arrangements, and at three in the morning of the 27th of November, upon the setting of the moon, a strong detachment issued from the garrison in three columns; the right column led by the Hanoverian Lieut.-Colonel Hugo, the centre by Lieut.-Colonel Dackenhausen, and the left by Lieut.-Colonel Trigg of the 12th regiment. The reserve was led by Major Maxwell of the 78th, and by a party of seamen in two divisions, commanded by Lieutenants Campbell and Muckle of the royal navy. The whole was directed by Brigadier Ross. Nothing could exceed the silence and order of the advance, and so near and exact was the combination, that at one and the same instant the whole exterior front of the enemy's works was attacked. The Spaniards, surprised, astonished, and dismayed, gave way on every side. By the most wonderful exertions two mortar batteries of ten each, and three batteries of heavy cannon, with all their lines, communications, traverses, beds, carriages, and platforms, were overthrown and consumed to ashes, and all the artillery in them destroyed. The magazines blew up one after another in the course of these conflagrations. The whole Spanish camp continued tame spectators of the havoc that was made, without an effort to save or defend their works, and the sortie returned to the garrison before daybreak, with scarcely a casualty, the whole time employed in the engagement not exceeding two hours from the time of its departure. The loss of men was not very considerable on either side; one officer of rank of the enemy was mortally wounded, a few men were brought in prisoners, and probably some others fell in the field.

#### 25. WAR IN THE EAST INDIES—SIR EYRE COOTE RELIEVES THE FORTS BESIEGED BY HYDER ALI, AND DRIVES OFF A FRENCH FLEET FROM PONDICHERRY.

More than three months had elapsed since Hyder Ali had entered the Carnatic; more than seven weeks since Sir Hector Munro had quitted his army and returned to St. Thomas's Mount; yet with an enemy so active and satiate at the very gate of the presidency, no

preparations had been made for its defence. Sir Eyre Coote therefore on his arrival at Madras on the 5th of November of last year, found that he had to make all the requisite arrangements to enable him to possess even an army to command. Among the good consequences which attended his coming to take the command in the Carnatic, that of reconciling or overcoming the dissensions of government at Madras was far from being the least. Warren Hastings was no man for half measures, and had given Sir Eyre the same full authority at Madras that his employers had entrusted himself with for the benefit of the whole Indian peninsula. Accordingly, the General at once deposed Mr. Whitehall, the Governor; and the council, yielding without hesitation to the wishes of the supreme government, entrusted to Coote the unshackled conduct of the campaign. It was determined in a council of war attended by Sir Hector Munro, General Stuart, and Lord Macleod, that it would be best to march to the relief of some of the garrisons that were severely pressed by the enemy, rather than to proceed at once against Hyder's army. This was now supposed to exceed 100,000 men, while the whole British force did not exceed 7000, and could only muster about 800 black cavalry, all wretchedly supplied both with provisions and means of transport.

Hyder, after sweeping off the cattle and making a desert of the country round Madras, had detached his son Meer Sahib, to invest Vellore, Wandewash, Permacoil, Chingleput, and Amboor, which places were all now besieged. The first from its situation and strength afforded no cause for immediate apprehension, but some of the others were in imminent danger, and contained large magazines and provisions. The last-named place, though commanded by an English officer, opened its gates on the 13th of January, before Sir Eyre could take the field, which was not till the 17th. On the 18th he arrived within four miles of Chingleput, the siege of which was immediately raised, but it was only just in time, for the garrison had not fifteen days' provision remaining. Wandewash was now considered to stand most in need of assistance. Sir Eyre Coote accordingly marched at the head of his army to its relief, and on the 19th of January crossed the Pallaur. It was expected that Hyder would collect his whole force, and use his utmost efforts to prevent his passing this river, but so far from doing so he retired with his whole force to a cautious and guarded distance. Sir Eyre accordingly crossed the Pallaur, and being led to believe that the fort of Carangoly, in which the enemy was understood to have laid up stores of rice, might be taken possession of, he despatched Captain Davis with 1000 men on the 20th of January, to attack it; who, finding the place very insufficiently defended, obtained possession of it with very little loss by a very brilliant *coup-de-main*, but found that the amount of its resources was as much exaggerated, as its defences had been underrated.

Wandewash was about twenty-eight miles further. Lieutenant Flint commanded the garrison, and to the great delight of the whole army, they saw the British flag still flying upon it when

they arrived there past noon on the 24th. Flint had defended it with great resolution and judgment, although the enemy had got down even to the ditch in his approaches. A notable feint by Meer Sahib had been happily frustrated: the besieged were looking anxiously for relief, when early in the morning of the 17th a heavy fire of cannon and musketry was heard in the direction whence relief was expected. The firing continued till daybreak, when a column of about 3000 infantry, having the appearance of British sepoys with the British flag, appeared, and drew up behind the village at the east face of the fortress, and discharged their cannon at bodies of horse making demonstrations to charge them. At the same time the troops in the trenches abandoned them with precipitation and marched off in the direction of Arcot. The garrison was persuaded it was the succour that had arrived; but Flint was more sceptical. He observed that the practice of the artillery was more distant than was usual with British artillery, and that the shot always struck clear of their apparent object. He found some difficulty in impressing his own belief on his men, but he resolved at all events to avail himself of the absence of the enemy from the ditch; into which he detached a large portion of his small garrison, who entered it unperceived, destroyed the galleries, and set fire to the materials accumulated for filling the ditch. The smoke of this was the first intimation to the enemy of what the garrison was about, and they immediately rushed in to recover their works. The troops were then recalled and rejoined their comrades without the loss of a man, and Meer Sahib "was sold." On the 22nd the enemy learned the capture of Carangoly, and the advance of Sir Eyre Coote, when the trenches and batteries were forthwith evacuated, and the besieging force, consisting of 1200 cavalry and 2000 infantry under Meer Sahib, retreated to a position about fifteen miles from the British encampment. Twenty-one years before, on the same day of the same month (1760), the same gallant British commander had raised the siege of Wandewash by one of the most memorable of his victories over the French under General Lally, and he now encamped on the same spot which he then occupied. Sir Eyre found only one day's ammunition remaining to the garrison, and after throwing in a slender supply, he now marched to the relief of Pernacoil, and relieved it as he had done Chingleput and Wandewash. But he had scarcely effected his purpose when he heard of the expected arrival of a French fleet upon the coast, and he therefore proceeded to restore confidence and order at Pondicherry. Here the French inhabitants, notwithstanding the generosity shown to them when that city surrendered to the English, evinced great treachery in collecting provisions for a fleet and army which they expected from the Mauritius. Sir Eyre having therefore obliged Hyder to raise the sieges every where, encamped in the beginning of February on the Red hills above Pondicherry, and found the enemy's fleet of seven sail of the line and four frigates just anchored in the roads under M. d'Orves. Not a moment was lost in checking the bad disposition of the inhabitants, whom he deprived



of their arms, destroyed their boats, and moved away all the provisions they had collected, so that when the squadron, in great distress for both water and provisions, arrived, they found neither the boats nor stores they expected, and were obliged to quit the coast without obtaining any relief. In about three weeks after his arrival, on the 15th, the French commander departed altogether for the islands and left the English army free to receive its supplies by sea, as heretofore.

But Sir Eyre had scarcely driven the French ships from the coast when Hyder again made his appearance, advancing in full march towards Cuddalore. Coote instantly ordered his tents to be struck, and the two armies moved during the night of the 6th of April in parallel roads, until at dawn the British line was formed with the left extending towards Fort St. David's, and its right nearly at Cuddalore. It was a great object with him to protect this place, which was likely to have been a source of annoyance in the hands of an enemy, and Hyder, thwarted by his adversary's admirable tact, could neither obtain possession of it nor of the boundary hedge, but was forced to lie upon his arms, without attempting any thing.

Sir Eyre Coote's force was, however, too weak and too ill supplied to encourage adventure of any kind, and Hyder was too cautious to hazard any thing without necessity: nothing of consequence therefore took place for several months between the armies. The first occurrence that broke the monotony of repose between the two armies took place about the middle of June. A fortified pagoda at Chalambrum, a place about thirty miles from Cuddalore, was reported to be garrisoned only by a few hundred of irregular troops, and Sir Eyre thought to take it by a *coup-de-main*. He therefore broke up his camp on the 16th, and at sunset on the 18th the General directed an assault to be made. The attempt was repulsed with the loss of 150 men, and an attempt to batter it in breach with a single 18-pounder was equally unsuccessful, and the gun was taken. On hearing of this Hyder made a forced movement of 100 miles in two days and a half, and returned to his position within three miles of the British encampment, while he covered the whole country round with his cavalry. The repulse from Chalambrum had inspired the Mysore chief with a mistaken confidence which his followers shared with himself, and they thought the moment had arrived when they might utterly destroy the British army. Hyder's force was now become enormous; twenty-three battalions of sepoys, amounting to about 15,000 men; 11,000 topasses, clad and armed after the European manner; with 600 or 700 Europeans, all extremely well disciplined, composed the main strength of his army. His irregular infantry, armed with matchlocks and pikes, amounted to 120,000 men; and his cavalry exceeded 40,000, while his artillery consisted of forty-seven pieces of cannon of heavy calibre, worked by Europeans. Sir Edward Hughes with his ships was, however, at Cuddalore. The fleet of which he was in command had done good service on the Malabar coast by destroying the whole of Hyder's navy in Cuttack and Mangalore, and now arrived opportunely on the

Coromandel coast, for the situation of the British army was critical, and Sir Eyre Coote saw that a decisive blow must be struck or Southern India must be abandoned. The swarms of the enemy, who covered the whole country with his cavalry, precluded the British commander from procuring the least knowledge of the number and disposition of the main body by intercepting all his scouts. He therefore embarked his battering guns on board the fleet, and divested himself of every impediment to rapid motion. He was, however, still sadly crippled from want of cavalry, of which he had only two regiments of native and one of European horse. Indeed, his European force did not altogether exceed 1700 men. He had, however, the fullest confidence in the valour and excellency of these troops, and he trusted to his own genius, and to the fertility of his own resources for making his dispositions in the face of an enemy infinitely superior, whom he looked to be able to bring to a general action, either by threatening his flanks or forcing his front. His whole force of all arms amounted to about 9500 men, with fifty-five light field-pieces.

#### 26. BATTLE OF PORTO NOVO.

At nine o'clock on the 1st of July the British army passed out of its encampment, and after a march of about seven miles and a half advanced to Porto Novo, a haven forty miles southward of Pondicherry. The enemy's works became at once clearly distinguishable, and Sir Eyre rode forward to reconnoitre them. The country opened an extensive plain to their view, and the enemy's cavalry appeared drawn up in great force, and in full view upon it: his principal troops were ranged in order of battle in rear of his numerous batteries, extending farther than the eye could reach. A warm, though still distant cannonade, began, and the enemy's artillery were well served and did execution; an infinite number of rockets were unintermittingly thrown to confound the observation, and disorder the march of the assailants, but the English guns did not return a single shot; for the General was sensible that every round he possessed would in the course of the day be wanted to take a more decisive effect. After about an hour passed in his observation Sir Eyre discovered that the country on his right would admit of his taking such a sweep as might enable him to turn the enemy's left: it was a daring and masterly movement in the face of such an enemy, and under the fire of so numerous an artillery, yet the accidental discovery of a road which Hyder had made for some purposes of his own, facilitated the attack. This was made by the first wing only, in two columns, under Sir Hector Munro: General Stuart, who commanded the second wing, advanced to occupy the heights which the first had vacated, and it was about nine o'clock when these sudden and unexpected evolutions, performed with an alertness of which Hyder had himself seen no example, obliged him to make a new arrangement of his own army. He withdrew his guns and brought forward his infantry to attack Stuart, whilst a detachment attempted to get into the interval between him and Sir Hector Munro, in order to attack

the latter in the rear. A small war schooner from the British squadron opened her fire upon a mass of Hyder Ali's cavalry engaged in this operation, and the first broadside was fatal to its commander and to a considerable number of men. This unexpected cannonade, magnified by the fears of those upon whom it was directed, led them to believe and report that the fire of the entire squadron was turned upon them. The columns under Sir Hector Munro triumphed over every obstacle, drove Hyder's infantry, artillery, and cavalry in one promiscuous flight before them, and repulsed the enemy front and rear: the conduct and gallantry of the General who commanded this advance were highly distinguished. Hyder now commenced the attack against Stuart in person, but the brave defenders of these heights beat back his troops. The battle raged for six hours, and every inch of ground was fiercely contested. At four o'clock the enemy's line gave way, and a precipitate retreat followed in confused masses. The victory was complete on all sides, nevertheless many of its advantages were lost through the inability of the victors to effect a pursuit through their want of cavalry. But for that, the whole of Hyder's artillery and stores must have fallen into their hands. It was intolerably vexatious to them to behold the strong and vigorous cattle of the flying enemy, carrying off their guns at full trot, while their own were scarcely able to drag the artillery into position. Hyder Ali had throughout the day viewed the battle from a small eminence, where, seated on a low stool, cross-legged, he witnessed the gradual yielding and ultimate flight of his vast army. Hyder was so astonished at the turn that affairs took, that he appeared to lose all courage and self-command. It was at length suggested to him that it was time to move, to which he replied by a torrent of abuse (which was Hyder Ali's vernacular), until one of his grooms, on whom long service had conferred the privilege of disregarding ceremony, seized the feet of the chief and forced his slippers on them, observing, "We will beat them tomorrow, in the mean while mount your horse." He left about 8000 of his men dead upon the field; his principal and favourite General, Meer Sahib, was mortally wounded; and several of his leaders and best officers were struck down in the fight, with about 10,000 men. The loss of the English was comparatively trifling, about 527 was the total amount of killed and wounded. This was the famous battle of Porto Novo, which dispelled the awe in which Hyder Ali had been hitherto held, and preserved the British possessions in India. Few battles have been undertaken under more serious disadvantages, yet few victories have been more complete. It was the triumph of discipline over numbers, of an active attacking body upon an inert mass. To Coote the highest praise is due for the courage that prompted him to seek and to accept the battle, while his troops are represented by those who witnessed their conduct to have behaved with a steadiness that could not be surpassed.

At the same time Tippoo Sahib, Hyder's son, was carrying on the siege of Wandewash with 30,000 men. On the 22nd of June he renewed it and attempted on the night of the 16th of July to carry

it by an assault, which failed. Orders to renew the attack the following night produced indications of mutiny, the discouragement consequent upon Hyder Ali's defeat, which had reached the Mysore camp, induced Tippoo on the 18th to decamp and join his father, in the neighbourhood of Arcot. While Hyder was thus forced to abandon all the fruits of his former successes, Sir Eyre Coote a few days after the battle, marched into the Northern Circars to meet the long-expected and much wished-for reinforcement of ten battalions from Bengal, under Colonel Pierce, and in the beginning of August he effected a junction with it at Pulicat. Joined by this important reinforcement, and being now enabled to act with increased vigour, he marched to lay siege to Tripassore, a fortress of some importance, which seemed to offer an easy acquisition. On the 19th of August he appeared before it; and on the 22nd a breach having been effected, a flag of truce appeared proposing a surrender on terms, which were refused, but accepted unconditionally on the 23rd, on the besieged perceiving that the assailants were again advancing to the breach. Before the surrender was effected, it was reported that large bodies of the enemy were in sight, and on reconnoitring this force it was discovered to be the advanced guard of Hyder's army, coming in full march to the relief of the place. There was only one day's rice now left in the English army, and the capture of the place had given 1400 additional men to be provided for. Under these circumstances, therefore, Sir Eyre Coote was under the necessity of standing still waiting to obtain some fresh supplies, and he availed himself of the interval to offer Hyder to exchange some of these prisoners against an equal number of British, but the wily Oriental replied, "The men of Tripassore are faithless and unworthy, they know that they dare not approach me: they are your prisoners, and I advise you to put every one of them to death speedily."

#### 27. BATTLES OF POLLALORE AND SHOLINGUR.

There is an opinion prevalent, without any satisfactory authority, that the battle of Pollalore was fought in consequence of a formal challenge sent in by Hyder and accepted by Coote. Hyder Ali at this time found himself on the very ground on which he had defeated Colonel Baillie the last year, and with a superstitious confidence in its being a lucky spot rather than for its peculiar fitness, he determined here to try the fortune of a second battle. But that the British General should have received and acted upon such a challenge seems to be in the highest degree improbable; it was neither in the character of Sir Eyre, nor would it be in that of any British officer, to admit of any such understanding as this when in command of troops, and certainly not with a semi-barbarous chief like Hyder. Sir Eyre Coote was, it is true, the aggressor; for finding that the Mysoreans were willing to hazard another action, he advanced to attack them at about eight in the morning of the 27th of August. Hyder's army occupied a position intercepted by several deep water-courses and ravines, across which the British had to pass in their advance, which occasioned a heavy loss. The General, in order

to lessen the effect of the batteries that were brought to play upon him, resolved to form line, which he did under a severe cannonade, with a steady discipline and valour that could not be exceeded by any veterans in the world. The battle commenced at nine in the morning, and it was a very long and hard-fought day, not concluding till near sunset. Hyder's army was driven in succession from every strong post, and obliged to abandon the field of battle with precipitation. The British were left in possession of the field; although, nevertheless, the Mysoreans claimed a victory. The loss of the English was certainly greater than in the preceding fight, and that of the enemy less; but this could not of itself even justify the claim for a drawn battle. The British loss was mainly owing to having to pass ground broken by tanks and nullahs under a heavy fire of artillery, while these same irregularities of ground very much protected the Mysore soldiery. Colonel Browne, an old, able, and experienced officer, was killed in this battle; and Captain Hialop, afterwards a distinguished general, and at this time an active and spirited young officer, aide-de-camp to the commanding General, was struck down, close to his side, by a cannon-shot; General Stuart lost a leg; but the numbers of men killed and wounded are not stated. The attack of Sir Eyre was not thought judicious, nor the ground favourable to the attempt, by Sir Hector Munro, who commanded the first line, and who could not resist making a sort of remonstrance upon it to his chief: "You talk to me, sir, when you should be doing your duty," was the stern and ungracious reply. Such strong language is not uncommon with men accustomed to command, but there seems no just reason why the courtesies of gentlemen should be departed from on any occasion by naval and military commanders. The consequence of such an error was soon visible in this case: Munro, a high-spirited man, resented this insult expressed at the head of his division, and in the hearing of those he commanded, by retiring from the service, and, but for an accident that soon sent him on a distant and separate command, the services and experience of a brave and useful servant would have been lost to his country. But though a victory were gained, the open country recovered, and the Carnatic saved, the British army was in no degree benefited by this battle; and the General, finding himself without a day's provision for his troops, quitted the army two days after the battle and repaired in person to Madras, to represent the inutility of his remaining in command of troops unprovided with any thing but arms. Here he found a new Governor, Lord Macartney, who promised better attention to his necessities, and encouraged the veteran soldier again to return to the army.

At this time Vellore, of which the siege had been again resumed, suffered also the utmost distress from the want of provisions. It was gallantly defended by Colonel Long, an officer whom no dangers could affright nor any suffering overcome. Vellore was a place of considerable importance, because it commanded one of the principal passes from Mysore into the Carnatic, and Coote resolved to attempt something for a diversion in its favour. He found his old enemy

waiting to be again attacked near the hill of Sholingur, a strong pass on the Vellore road. On the 27th of September Sir Eyre granted him his wish without a moment's hesitation, and, taking his antagonist a great deal by surprise, he moved the army forward to an attack about four o'clock in the afternoon. The second brigade, with the flank companies of the 73rd, and all the cavalry, with twenty-two guns, advanced to gain the enemy's flank, while the rest moved steadily forward in line, and were received by a heavy but well-directed fire from seventy pieces of artillery. The entire cavalry of the enemy made a furious assault on this line, but were driven back headlong. The pursuit continued till dark, and it was midnight before the British army was re-formed on the field of battle. Hyder's army was again completely routed, and his cavalry especially suffered extremely: he is reported to have lost more than 5000 men, while that of the victors did not exceed 100 in killed and wounded. Hyder was enabled to carry away his guns, but only by the sacrifice of a large number of his cavalry. The trophies of the day were three standards and a gun, which Sir Eyre would have willingly exchanged at this time for something more substantial in the shape of food. Famine, as it had done continually, still pressed heavily upon his army; his bullocks were few in number and wretchedly out of condition; and it was only by the success of the detachments he sent out to collect rice that he was enabled to support his men from day to day. The General, however, succeeded towards the end of October in relieving Vellore, which was reduced to the last extremity, and he afterwards besieged and took Chittore on the 10th of November. By this time the monsoon had set in with unusual violence, the rain fell in torrents, and the cold became so intense, that although he paused to relieve Paliput and Tripassore, to both of which the Mysoreans had laid siege, he hastened to place his troops in cantonments near Madras, which he effected late in November.

At the time that Hyder led his grand army into the Carnatic he detached a corps to the southward, which laid waste the principality of Tanjore, and took possession of every fort and town in it except the capital. This province had been placed under the command of Colonel Braithwaite, who gallantly baffled the continued efforts of the Mysoreans to reduce the town, and who still retained possession of it. Nevertheless it was necessary to send him reinforcements. As soon as they arrived, the Colonel, animated by the presence of fresh troops, began to act on the offensive. He attacked the enemy in his front in a fortified position, of which the village of Mahadapatam was the key; and though his army was greatly inferior to that of his opponents, and indeed of the same material, for it was entirely composed of natives, yet he defeated them with great slaughter, and captured, amongst other trophies, two pieces of cannon.

### 28. THE DUTCH POSSESSIONS IN THE INDIAN SEAS CAPTURED.

The British government being now at war with Holland, as well as with France, the Dutch possessions in the East Indies became a

subject of attention. Lord Macartney soon after his arrival in the settlement called out the militia of Madras and put himself at their head on the 21st of June, to reduce Sadras and Pulicat, both about equi-distant from Madras, at the north and south of it, of which he obtained possession in the month of August. It happened that five British ships from China, on their way homeward, arrived about this time at Fort Marlborough on the coast of Sumatra. Captain Clement, the commodore of this squadron, in conjunction with Captain Mandeville, the Governor of the fort, determined on an enterprise against the Dutch settlements on that island. The address and good conduct of these gentlemen so effectually supplied the want of force, that the Governor of Bantam was tempted on the 16th of October into a surrender of all their territory to the British crown.

Rear-Admiral Sir Edward Hughes had been very successful at sea by destroying Hyder's shipping in his own ports, as has been related. He now, as soon as he became acquainted with the rupture with Holland, turned his attention to Negapatam, a most important town, port, and fortress in the Tanjore country, of special importance at this period as the great naval and military magazine for Hyder's constant supply, open at all times to the reception of the French navy, and an arsenal for their fleet and army; and Lord Macartney justly conceived that it was a point of the utmost importance that every harbour of India should at this time be closed against another European power. It was, therefore, blocked up by sea, and an expedition was prepared under Sir Hector Munro to attack the place by land. This required all the abilities and exertions of both commanders, for the place had been strongly fortified and considerably strengthened, and the garrison was reinforced by a large detachment of Hyder's troops. Sir Hector was at this time chafing under the harsh expressions used towards him by Sir Eyre Coote during the battle of Pollalore, and he had in consequence quitted the army, and was in retirement at Madras. It was deemed advisable to keep so able a man in good humour and employed, and he was therefore selected for the service. Without drawing a single man from Coote's force, it was thought that the troops under Braithwaite at Tanjore, with the marines, and a body of sailors to work the guns, would muster a force altogether of 5000 men, which should be all placed under the command of Sir Hector Munro. The season was adverse, the shift of the monsoon being at hand; but the enterprise warranted risk, and was forthwith put in hand. The troops were assembled at Nagore, near Negapatam. Lieut.-Colonel Nixon, with part of Braithwaite's corps from Tanjore, had just driven the enemy's troops out of Nagore after the battle of Mahapatam, when Sir Hector came on shore and assumed the command. The land forces, with the sailors and marines of the squadron, were immediately put on shore by the Admiral, with some mortars, two 12-pounders, and some lighter artillery, also a sufficient amount of powder and shot, all which was with great difficulty brought on shore under the superintendance of Captain Ball, of the "Superbe," and the siege was commenced on the 29th of October. The whole force of the be-

siegers, including seamen and marines, was about 4000 men capable of effective service. The garrison far exceeded this number; it was composed of 500 Europeans, 700 Malays, 4500 sepoys, and 2300 of Hyder's troops, making in all about 8000 men. The General, having carried by storm some strong lines and redoubts that defended the approach of the place, broke ground before the north face of the fort on the 3rd of November; and on the 5th the Admiral moved a part of his squadron to support the flank of the British lines. On the 7th, a battery of ten 18-pounders being just ready to open, the Dutch Governor, Regnier van Vlissingen, was summoned, which he replied to with respectful firmness. Two desperate sorties were made by the garrison with almost their whole force, including the Mysoreans, which were each time beaten back with great loss; and so terrified were Hyder's cavalry at the roughness they experienced in these several encounters, that they took themselves off altogether into the open country, and never again joined the garrison. On the 10th a battery of four 18-pounders produced considerable effect on the face of the bastion, and four more guns were opened against it at daylight on the 11th. The enemy now demanded a parley; and Admiral Hughes landed on the 12th, when the terms were at once signed and ratified by the two commanders. The loss to the besiegers was twenty-eight killed and about 100 wounded. The capture of Negapatam induced Hyder Ali to evacuate all the forts and strong posts he held in Tanjore. The monsoon having now set in with great fury, the military and naval operations of the year were necessarily concluded; but not until Sir Edward Hughes had sailed across to Ceylon, when Trincomalee and Fort Ostenburgh, possessions of Holland in that island, were besieged, and added to the conquests of the English; so that the Dutch were now expelled from every station that they held within the limits of the Indian seas.

---

 1782.

1. WAR IN INDIA—SIR EYRE COOTE RELIEVES VELLORE—COLONEL BRAITHWAITE SURPRISED AND TAKEN AT THE COLAROOON.—2. SIR EDWARD HUGHES CAPTURES TRINCOMALEE.—3. FIRST NAVAL ACTION BETWEEN ADMIRALS HUGHES AND DE SUFFREN OFF MADRAS.—4. THE FRENCH TAKE CUDDALORE—THE LAST DEFEAT OF HYDER AT ARNEE.—5. MILITARY CHARACTERS OF GENERAL SIR EYRE COOTE AND HYDER ALI.—6. SECOND NAVAL ACTION BETWEEN HUGHES AND DE SUFFREN.—7. THIRD NAVAL ACTION BETWEEN HUGHES AND DE SUFFREN.—8. THE FRENCH ADMIRAL SURPRISES AND CAPTURES TRINCOMALEE.—9. FOURTH NAVAL ACTION BETWEEN HUGHES AND DE SUFFREN.—10. BRITISH WAR WITH THE MAHRATTAS CONCLUDED.—11. NAVAL ACTIONS IN THE WEST INDIES—HOOD AND DE GRASSE.—12. ISLAND OF ST. CHRISTOPHER'S BESIEGED AND TAKEN BY M. DE BOUILLÉ.—13. GREAT NAVAL BATTLE BETWEEN RODNEY AND DE GRASSE.—14. AMERICAN WAR



—CAPTAIN ASGILL'S CASE—PRELIMINARIES OF THE TREATY OF INDEPENDENCE SIGNED.—15. EXPEDITIONS AGAINST THE BAHAMAS AND THE BRITISH FORTS IN HUDSON'S BAY.—16. WAR IN EUROPE—MINORCA TAKEN BY THE FRENCH.—17. NAVAL WAR.—18. ELLIOT'S DEFENCE OF GIBBALTAR.—19. MILITARY CHARACTER OF GENERAL SIR GEORGE AUGUSTUS ELLIOT, LORD HEATHFIELD.—20. MEMOIRS OF THE DUKE DE CRILLON-MAHON—THE CHEVALIER D'ARÇON—THE MARQUIS LA FAYETTE—GENERAL SIR BANASTIE TABLETON.—21. PRELIMINARIES OF PEACE.

1. WAR IN INDIA—SIR EYRE COOTE BELIEVES VELLORE—COLONEL BRAITHWAITE SURPRISED AND TAKEN AT THE COLAROOON.

The fatigues to which the gallant veteran Sir Eyre Coote had been exposed in the last campaign told upon threescore years, so that on the 5th of January he was seized with apoplexy. His temper, naturally irritable, was soured with the opposition made to all his remonstrances with respect to the state in which his army was left, and the total absence of zeal on the part of all the civil authorities in providing equipments and supplies for his troops vexed his spirit. Lord Macartney declares "that he courted Sir Eyre like a mistress, and humoured him like a child;" but the brave old man could not be pacified, and would have relinquished his command and returned to Bengal, had he not been suddenly summoned to the field. Information reached him of the fall of Chittore, and of the impossibility that Vellore could hold out long, having been again reduced to the very last day's stock of provisions. He recovered sufficiently to march on the 6th; and though harassed and cannonaded throughout the whole of the 10th, he reached Vellore on the 11th with a supply of three months' provisions. He performed this journey in a palanquin, but conducted the march with his accustomed skill, and on the 13th commenced his return again to Madras. Again his columns were exposed to a galling fire of cannon and threatened seriously by the enemy, but he made good his passage in excellent order; and, after encountering some opposition from Hyder on the 16th, returned successfully to his lines at Tripassore.

Early in 1782 the war was carried on with great alacrity, but with varied success. A detachment of Bombay sepoy, under Major Abingdon, relieved the troops that had been sent to reinforce Colonel Braithwaite from Madras, and which were now recalled for the defence of the Carnatic. These were now ordered to relieve Tellicherry, on the coast of Malabar, blockaded by part of Hyder's troops, which they succeeded in doing, but were unable to keep the field, and were compelled to shut themselves up in it, and defend themselves till reinforcements arrived. Abingdon then resumed the offensive, and on the 8th of January routed Suddat Khan and stormed his camp, not only raising the siege, but taking the whole of the enemy's cannon, amounting to sixty pieces, and the whole of the baggage. After this on the 12th of February Abingdon marched upon Calicut and compelled the place to surrender.

Colonel Braithwaite with a considerable force, that was called  
VOL. III. X

the Southern Army, for the protection of Tanjore and the adjoining provinces, lay on the banks of the Coleroon with about 2000 tired infantry and thirteen field-pieces, with which was joined about 250 cavalry. Hyder's army was distant; and though the Colonel's situation was in a flat and open country very much exposed to any sudden inroad, many deep and great rivers interposed between him and any considerable body of his enemy, which induced him to suppose that he had no great cause for alarm, and he therefore took no precautions against a surprise. An intelligent native warned him of his danger, but it was impossible to shake his faith in his ordinary channels of information; though, in fact, those who furnished the British commanders with intelligence were very often the spies and emissaries of the enemy. His situation in fancied security on the banks of the Coleroon did not escape the vigilant attention of Tippoo Sahib, whose active mind was always alive to adventure; the troops he commanded were never deterred from passing rivers, or even moderate arms of the sea, for the passing of dangerous waters was among the military exercises of both Hyder's cavalry and infantry. An expedition was therefore planned in conjunction with M. Lally with about 400 French against Braithwaite, the whole force being estimated at 20,000 men, of whom more than half were cavalry. With this force and twenty pieces of cannon Tippoo suddenly appeared before Colonel Braithwaite on the 16th of February, and completely surrounded him. The suddenness of the surprise admitted of no more than time sufficient to the Commander to throw his detachment into a hollow square, with his cavalry in the centre, and his guns interspersed on the faces. A violent cannonade on all sides was not sufficient to disorder the square, though it was attacked impetuously and incessantly by hoards of cavalry. They were received with wonderful firmness, and with incessant showers of grape and musketry. Tippoo's cavalry were completely put to the rout; and the square of infantry opening out, permitted the British cavalry within to sally forth and pursue, and then again to return to their former station. It will scarcely be credited that this state of things continued for twenty-six hours; but in course of time the numbers of the British had become sadly thinned, and the gallant survivors were worn down with wounds and fatigue. At length on the third day, the 18th of February, M. Lally, seeing the hopelessness of all Tippoo's attempts, proposed a new disposition and a more effectual mode of attack. He put himself at the head of his 400 Frenchmen, and marched with fixed bayonets to the attack of that side of the square that he deemed the weakest, supported by Tippoo's best infantry and flanked by his cavalry. The whole force of artillery was at the same time poured in on the other sides of the square, so that the front attacked could receive no support whatever from the other sides. Confident of success, fresh in spirit, and with the bravery of their race, these gallant Frenchmen soon overturned the poor wearied sepoys, who were now easily broken, and a dreadful carnage ensued. To the honour of the French commander he exerted himself with the noblest humanity to stop useless bloodshed, and is said to have

struck down five of the Mysore troopers with his own hand in that generous exertion. He demanded of Tippoo that the prisoners should be committed to his charge, and there they continued to experience kindness and humanity until they were transported to Hyder's capital, in the Mysore kingdom, where the remnant of this gallant band were doomed to be shut up with the other prisoners taken during the war in the most dismal dungeons of Seringapatam, and were exposed to sad privations.

The troops that had come from England under Commodore Johnstone were sent forward by that officer from the Cape, and one portion of them, under Colonel Humberstone, arrived at Bombay, and from thence were directed to land at Calicut, where they joined Abingdon's corps, of which the Colonel then took the command. Some success at first attended the operations of this force, and they gained several advantages over Hyder's troops; but the approach of the monsoon compelled Colonel Humberstone to relinquish the conquests he had made, and on the 18th of May he again fell back upon Calicut. His force was by this time reduced from 1000 to 800. Colonel Macleod was now sent by Sir Eyre Cooté to assume the command, who successfully resisted a night attack made upon his position by Tippoo Sultan with spirit and success, when fortunately Sir Edward Hughes appeared off the coast with 450 Europeans, and united them to this force.

## 2. SIR EDWARD HUGHES CAPTURES TRINCOMALEE.

This Admiral had proceeded, as soon as the monsoon had moderated, to carry into execution the designs he had formed against the Dutch settlements in the island of Ceylon; and he arrived with his fleet in Trincomalee Bay on the 5th of January, when the marines, together with a detachment of 500 sepoys whom the General had supplied for this occasion, were landed about three miles below the fort with a proportionate artillery: the whole commanded by Captain Geil, of the "Monarca," assisted by Cap<sup>ain</sup> Montague, of the "Seahorse," and Captain Reynolds, of the "Combustion" fire-ship. The seamen and marines immediately formed, and, pushing their way through the dark night without any regular order, arrived with their guns at the gateway in the early morning, and in an instant became masters of the place. The garrison only consisted of three officers and forty soldiers, and there was no loss of life on either side; but the fort was an acquisition of immense consequence to future operations. It was found from the prisoners that the enemy's principal force was at Ostenburgh, a high hill commanding the harbour, and in open communication with their ships, which lay under its protection. Major Geils, the engineer on board, forthwith proceeded to reconnoitre, and learn the best approach to these heights. The necessary stores, provisions, and ammunition were forthwith landed, but it was the morning of the 8th before the detachment marched to the high hill that commanded the Ostenburgh Fort, on the top of which the enemy had a post, which was attacked the same night and carried. The seamen and marines there established

themselves within 200 yards of the fort, the Governor of which, Major Hornæd, was summoned, but he declared his determination to defend it to the last. This good man was, however, an old friend of the Admiral's, who had often shared his hospitality with the other officers of the fleet, and who therefore sent in a private letter by the hands of Major Geils urging him not to drive him to extremities. However Hornæd pleaded the orders from his government, and the preparations proceeded. Major Geils however had observed that the lower forts might certainly be carried by assault, and on his report a storming party, consisting of 450 seamen and marines with scaling ladders, advanced at daybreak on the 11th, preceded by a forlorn hope under a sergeant, who made their way through the embrasures without discovery, and, continuing their advance, they soon drove the enemy from their works and possessed themselves of the fort. The ships and vessels in the harbour immediately surrendered.

### 3. FIRST NAVAL ACTION BETWEEN ADMIRALS HUGHES AND DE SUFFREN OFF MADRAS

To further her scheme of ruining the British affairs in India, and to protect her new ally, Holland, in her great resources of wealth and power in the East, France had despatched a squadron under M. de Suffren (early in the previous year as we have seen), who after having saved the Dutch settlement at the Cape, proceeded to join M. d'Orves, his superior in command, at the island of Mauritius. Upon this junction the French fleet numbered ten sail of the line, besides a 50-gun ship and several frigates, and carried with it the first division of an army destined, under M. de Bussy, to retrieve the fortunes of his country in Asia.

The united squadron put to sea from the island in December, 1781, and made the Coromandel coast early in January. Soon after this M. d'Orves died, and the command devolved on M. de Suffren, who immediately signalled that the fleet should steer direct for Madras. During this passage, the British ship "Hannibal," 50 (being entirely separated from a squadron under the conduct of Captain Alms), was intercepted and taken, having in dark weather run into the midst of the French fleet: five or six other prizes were also made by them before they arrived on the 15th of February in Madras Roads. Sir Edward Hughes having quitted Ceylon had only arrived here on the 8th, with six ships of the line very much out of condition, and on the following day had been joined by the "Monmouth," 64, Captain Alms, the "Hero," 74, and the "Isis," 50. Great exertions were immediately made to get the whole squadron ready for the expected appearance of M. de Suffren, who was known to have arrived off the Indian shores, and Sir Eyre Coote supplied the want of marines on board by sending a detachment of the newly arrived 98th regiment to take their place. The French Admiral stood in directly for Madras Roads, under the expectation that Admiral Hughes lay at anchor there with four sail of the line only, but perceiving nine two-decked ships in the roads, instead, he

suddenly let go his anchor at noon. At four o'clock in the same afternoon, however, he weighed and stood away to the southward. Sir Edward Hughes, who had been busily employed in placing his ships in the most advantageous position for covering and protecting the trading vessels in the open roads, and in clapping springs upon the cables of the men-of-war in order to bring their broadsides to bear on the enemy's approach, made sail immediately and followed the French Admiral, standing out of the roads, and pursuing the enemy through the course of the night. He fortunately in this pursuit recaptured five of the English prizes; also the "Lauriston," one of the large ships of the French squadron, armed *en flûte*, and having on board a great number of French officers and 300 soldiers of the regiment De Lausanne, with cannon, ammunition, and military stores of every kind, intended for a present to Hyder, was also taken in the course of the next day by the "Isis," Captain Lumley. Admiral de Suffren, who was deservedly esteemed one of the ablest naval commanders the French King had at this time in his service, now perceiving the danger to his convoy, at once put his ships before the wind with all the sail they could carry in the hope of bearing down upon the British in time for their relief. Sir Edward seeing about three o'clock that M. de Suffren was bearing down fast upon him, and that his best sailing ships were already within two or three miles of the sternmost of the English ships, recalled his chasers, and at daylight the next morning threw out a signal to form the line of battle ahead; but it was half-past eight o'clock before it could be formed, from the state of the weather, which was dark and hazy, with sudden and frequent squalls of wind. It was now the 17th of February and about noon when the enemy was seen coming down before the wind to the attack, in an irregular double line abreast, towards the rear of the British fleet, which was somewhat separated. The English Admiral on perceiving this threw out a signal for the line of battle abreast, in order to frustrate the design of breaking in upon the line, but M. de Suffren so manœuvred as to bring eight of his best ships to direct their whole attack on five of the British ships, which left the "Eagle," the "Monmouth," the "Worcester," and the "Burford," under the most approved commanders, to remain idle spectators in the van, without the possibility of coming to the assistance of their fellows. Sir Edward Hughes was in the centre in the flag-ship, the "Superbe," 74; the four below the Admiral were the "Hero," 74, Captain Wood, the "Isis," 50, Captain Lumley, the "Monarca," 68, Captain Gell, the "Exeter," 64, Commodore King and Captain Reynolds. These ships were forced to sustain for three hours a very unequal combat. The weight of the action lay on the "Exeter" and the "Superbe:" the former was the sternmost ship, and being a bad sailer got considerably separated from the rest, so that three of the enemy's ships, the smallest of equal force or superior in size to the "Exeter," bore down directly upon her. The "Monarca," which lay next to the "Exeter," made every possible effort to protect and cover her. M. de Suffren in the "Héros," 74, flag-ship, fell in like manner

upon the "Superbe," in the centre, and it was evidently his policy merely to disable these ships, for he never extended his attack beyond the centre of the line. What the event might have been had this superiority of fire continued much longer, appears doubtful; but at six o'clock a smart breeze sprung up suddenly in favour of the British fleet, enabling the four headmost ships to pay round to the enemy. The French Admiral himself had already suffered sufficiently in the encounter, and taking advantage of the breeze, he hauled his wind and stood to the northward, it being then nearly dark: the rest of the squadron also were glad to effect their retreat. The "Exeter" was reduced almost to a wreck, and was so leaky from the number of shot holes in her hull under water, as to be reduced to the necessity of making signals of distress. Her captain, Reynolds, and ten men had been killed, and forty-five wounded. The "Superbe," in like manner, had her rigging cut away, and was so severely damaged in her hull that she had five feet of water in her hold. Her captain, Stevens, was amongst the killed. The total loss of the British was thirty-two killed and ninety-five wounded. The French fleet was out of sight in the morning, and the British Admiral found it necessary to proceed to Trincomalee to repair damages, and found that for the same purpose his opponent had arrived at Bathiolo, a port in the same island, still in the possession of the Dutch.

#### 4. THE FRENCH TAKE CUDDALORE—THE LAST DEFEAT OF HYDER AT ARNEE.

The unfortunate affair on the Colaroon could not but totally disconcert Sir Eyre Coote's plan for the campaign. This disaster laid open all the Carnatic to the southern end. M. de Suffren with his fleet had now got safe into Pondicherry, and was enabled to disembark the troops at the presidency, under the command of the Marquis de Bussy, which amounted, including a regiment of Caffirs, to 3000 men; and these being joined by a body of Hyder's forces, under his son Tippoo, fresh from the destruction of Braithwaite, the combined army marched in full confidence and security to besiege Cuddalore. This place was of sufficient strength and importance, but was garrisoned only by a weak battalion of 400 men, and was totally unprovided for any defence. Accordingly Captain Hughes, the commandant, was obliged to surrender it on the 8th of April. The position thus wrested from the English was a seaport town and became of first importance to the French, both as a place of arms and as a harbour during the remainder of the war. The Mysorean army now advanced and took Permacoil, and afterwards presented itself before Wandewash. Sir Eyre had seen with anxiety these unexpected losses, but this latter place was of too much importance to be left without some attempt at preservation: he accordingly put himself in motion on the 12th of May to its relief, in full confidence that Hyder, now strengthened by so powerful an aid of Europeans, would not be averse to a general action, but in this he was mistaken. Hyder retreated before the British advance, and posted himself

strongly among the Red hills in the neighbourhood of Kellinoor. Sir Eyre Coote was unwilling to risk an attack in a position of so much strength, and knowing that Hyder's great magazines were deposited in the strong fortress of Arnee, he determined on a demonstration against that place, in order to alarm the Mysore chief for its safety. He therefore drew off his army from Kellinoor, and marching away in the direction of Arnee, encamped within five miles of it. This judicious movement immediately produced the intended effect by drawing Hyder from the hills to the rescue of a place which contained all his means for carrying on the war. The difficulties of obtaining precise information as to the movements of the enemy were so considerable, that the van of the British army had already reached Arnee, and was marching out of camp, when a distant cannonade in the rear announced to the General the approach of Hyder, who had made a forced march of forty-three miles to the surprise and astonishment of the British General. The British army was in a low situation surrounded by hills, of which the Mysore troops instantly took possession: nevertheless Sir Eyre used his utmost despatch, and displayed his accustomed ability in making such dispositions as might bring the enemy to close and decisive action. It was about dawn on the morning of the 2nd of June, when a heavy fire was opened on the rear-guard, but it was near mid-day before the British were prepared to march upon the enemy. While the two armies were preparing for battle, Hyder despatched a strong corps under his son Tippoo to reinforce the garrison at Arnee, and carry off all the treasure. After a succession of manœuvres by both armies, the grenadiers of the 73rd regiment and the Madras Europeans, under the command of the Hon. Captain Lindsay of the former regiment, entirely dispersed the European corps of the enemy, under M. Lally, and captured one gun and eleven tumbrils. On seeing the fate of their allies, the Mysorean army gave way on every side and was completely routed, the want of sufficient cavalry alone preventing the most disastrous results. On the day after the battle, Sir Eyre Coote obtained information that Hyder was encamped on such strong ground as might encourage him again to stand an engagement, but upon his advance he found his enemy in full retreat. The loss of the British in this action was inconsiderable, but the 78th regiment of Highlanders, having lately landed from a sea voyage, were so unseasoned that more men died of fatigue than fell in action.

Hyder, though obliged to fly, remained unconquered. In less than a week after this battle a body of his chosen cavalry found means to draw the vanguard of the British into an ambuscade, and cut them off before they could be supported by the army in their rear. The British force was after these affairs visited by sickness to an alarming degree, and its stock of provisions being exhausted, the General found it necessary to fall back to the vicinity of Madras. The battle of the 2nd of June was the last in which the two commanders were destined again to face each other. They neither of them survived it many months, and though they equally escaped the fate

of the field, it seems probable that they were alike victims to the many dangers of the contention. Sir Eyre Coote's health was too much shaken to permit of his continuing longer in the state of mental and corporeal excitement in which he had been placed since his arrival in the Carnatic, and now obliged him to give up the command, which consequently devolved on Major-General Stuart; and no event of any considerable importance took place in this portion of India during the remainder of the year.

In Bengal a sort of war was carrying on under the nominal leadership of Major Popham, but in fact under the immediate command of Hastings, the Governor-General. In the contest Cheyte Sing, the Rajah of Benares, in September very nearly got possession of the Governor-General's person, and he only escaped from the city by night. Cheyte Sing was at the head of 40,000 men, but was utterly routed and driven out of his states by the brave and enterprising Popham, with a very inferior force.

#### 5. MILITARY CHARACTERS OF GENERAL SIR EYRE COOTE AND HYDER ALI.

General Sir Eyre Coote, K.B., died at Madras on the 26th of April, 1783. He was amongst the distinguished men who founded the British rule in the East Indies, and in a dismal and critical period was the military saviour of our empire in that country. Coote was born in 1726, of a baronet's family, in Ireland, and first served in the army against the Pretender's forces in 1745. In 1754 he went with his regiment to the East Indies, where he distinguished himself at the battle of Plassey and the siege of Pondicherry, where he had the rank of colonel. He entirely routed the French under General Lally on the 22nd of July, 1761, and captured the capital of their Indian empire on the 26th of November. In 1770 he was made Commander-in-Chief of the Company's forces in British India, and in 1771 was invested with the Order of the Bath; having previously received from the Court of Directors a diamond-hilted sword, in gratitude for the important services he had already rendered the Company. He was sent to command the Madras army against Hyder Ali, and gained the great battles of Porto Novo, Pollalore, and Arnee. He was not only a brave and skilful commander, but had that steady and prudent carriage, and that ascendancy of character, which had the effect of composing or suspending the differences of men in council—the besetting sins of the civilian rulers from Warren Hastings downward—who would probably have lost the Indian empire but for the fortunate advent of such men as Clive, Coote, and Munro into the peninsula. It must be admitted that Sir Eyre had some failings; he was of a fretful temper, and a love of gain had grown up side by side with his pursuit of glory. He was strongly impressed with his own merits, and like many excellent officers he was ever prone to deem himself slighted or neglected. He was exceedingly jealous of his own dignity, and distrustful of others, and his frequently repeated threats of resignation were mere childish pretexts to obtain his own way, altogether unworthy of his character. Sir Eyre Coote com-



manded in an eminent degree the respect and affection of the natives of India, and it is stated that no sepoy who had at any time served under him ever passed his picture without making obeisance to Coote Bahadoor. The East India Company have honoured his memory by a fine monument in Westminster Abbey.

#### MILITARY CHARACTER OF HYDER ALI.

Coote's great opponent, Hyder Ali, was born at Dinavelli in Mysore, in 1718. He was of humble origin, the grandchild of a fakir or Mahomedan saint, who originally came from the Punjaub into the Deccan. Versatile in his talents, but with a natural turn for adventure, he became a captain of freebooters, and subsequently a soldier, when he was always a volunteer in every service of danger. This soon brought him under the notice of his sovereign. His intrepidity in the field and a series of successful enterprises against the Mahrattas raised him at length in 1759 to the situation of Commander-in-Chief of all the Mysore armies. In this position (in the year 1760), through the agency of a Portuguese bishop, a negotiation was opened with him to assist M. Lally, who had found out the policy of availing himself of native aid from among the powers of India. The negotiation was conducted with such secrecy that the British authorities were not aware of it, till the first division of the promised troops had reached the French camp. Colonel Coote commanded the British at the time, and was engaged in besieging a fort when the whole Mysorean force suddenly appeared in sight. Subsequently Hyder gained such honour and increased power in war, that, having obtained also immense wealth, he made his sovereign, the Rajah, a pensioner upon his bounty, and from being the ostensible servant became real master of Mysore. The natural consequence soon followed. In 1761 he succeeded to the musnud. The sovereignty which he had thus acquired he maintained by the boldness of his power and the wisdom of his policy, and regarding the English as intruders he formed the most artful and formidable alliances for their complete expulsion from Asia. He had, however, no such settled hostility against the British, but that, had the opportunity offered, he would rather have preferred to court their alliance, for he said one day to his minister, "I have committed a great error in my policy, I have purchased a draught of leandir (a cheap intoxicating liquor) at the price of a lac of pagodas. I might have made the English my friends in spite of Mohammed Ali, the most treacherous of men. Even though I could ruin their resources by land, yet I cannot dry up their sea." But in real truth he was never a man to have been trusted by the British, for during his whole career we find him tied by no principle, restrained by no scruples, and bound by no promises, nor was he ever withheld from any object by a sense of honour or of gratitude<sup>1</sup>. In 1780, regardless of the treaty he had in 1769 entered into with them, he burst into the Carnatic with a vast army and ravaged the country to the very walls of Madras. But his old anta-

<sup>1</sup> Gleig.

gonist, Sir Eyre Cooté, led the British troops against him, and defeated him in several engagements. Nevertheless, the presidency of Madras had been brought to the very verge of ruin when Hyder's career was suddenly terminated by death. Like many other Indian princes he was addicted to licentious pleasure, but unlike them he was never enslaved by it: Many of his leisure hours were passed in the company of dancing girls, and to intoxication he was often prone. On common occasions he evinced personal vanity, and his toilet took a considerable portion of time. But no sooner did peril threaten or ambition prompt, than all such habits of indulgence were quickly laid aside and Hyder passed all his time in council or on horseback. Ever easy of access, he quickly drew from those who approached him the information he desired, and manifested the keenest insight into character. His education had been so neglected that he could neither read nor write, but was assisted in all his affairs by a most retentive memory, and by a shrewdness hard to be deceived. He was careful for his people's welfare, rather for his own sake than for theirs, because he knew that to make them prosperous was the way to make himself powerful<sup>1</sup>. He had a genius for war, and learned very soon to appreciate the benefits of European discipline, which brought him into closer connexion with the French: but he was aware of the danger of entering many of the officers of that meddling nation into his army, for he said, "I dare not admit them in force to Mysore." He governed with a degree of vigour rarely seen in Orientals, and extended the bounds of his principalities almost to the Kistna. He was succeeded in his power by his son Tippoo Sahib, who, at the time of his father's death, was engaged against a British force under Colonel Macleod, and had compelled it to retire before him, but his pursuit was strangely and suddenly stopped on the 12th of December by the intelligence that not a man of the Mysorean army was to be seen, and further inquiries elicited the fact that the whole were in full and rapid march to the eastward. The cause at length transpired: Hyder had died on the 7th. Tippoo, on hearing of this event, instantly broke up his camp and hurried to join the grand army which had been withdrawn from Arcot to approach him, and he safely established his head-quarters on the 2nd of January between Vellore and Arnee, and without opposition ascended the musnud. The death of Hyder had been kept a close secret: the body was deposited in a chest filled with aromatics and sent away from the camp under an escort, in the manner in which valuable plunder was conveyed. The palanquin of the General occupied its accustomed place, care being taken to restrain all close approach, lest the repose of the royal patient should be disturbed. Notwithstanding these precautions one of the leaders entrusted with the secret proved faithless, and revealed it to Lord Macartney, who, well aware of the weakness of an Indian army when even temporarily deprived of its chief, urged the British General to advance against it; but the jealousy of civil interference prevailed, and General Stuart refused to act upon the

<sup>1</sup> Lord Stanhope.

information to move forward his army, until in the mean while Hyder's successor had arrived, who at once assumed the sovereignty with an extraordinary affectation of humility and grief, but with a spirit of hostility to the British not in the least degree diminished.

#### 6. SECOND NAVAL ACTION BETWEEN HUGHES AND DE SUFFREN.

Sir Edward Hughes had returned with his fleet to Madras in the middle of March, having till then heard nothing further of the French squadron. On the 30th of March he was on his way back to Trincomalee with a reinforcement of troops and stores for that garrison, when he was joined by the "Sultan," 74, and the "Mag-nanime," 74, from England. On the 8th of April the enemy was discovered in the north-east quarter, and continued in sight for three days, the British Admiral holding on his course. On the 11th he made the coast of Ceylon, and bore away directly for Trincomalee, about fifteen leagues to windward. This change of course took place in the evening, and afforded an opportunity to the French Admiral to obtain the weather-gage, of which he quickly availed himself, and at break of day was seen crowding all the sail he could carry in order to get up with the rear of the British. At nine in the morning the Admiral, though hemmed in upon a most rocky and dangerous coast, resolved to engage, and made signal to form line of battle ahead. The enemy, who was about six miles distant, spent about three hours in manœuvring, when, about fifteen minutes past noon, five sail composing their van made sail to engage that of the British, while the remainder of the force, consisting of seven sail, attacked with the utmost fury the "Superbe," "Monmouth," and "Monarca," which formed Sir Edward's centre. At half-past one M. de Suffren in the "Héros," 74, with the "Orient," 74, astern, bore down within pistol-shot of the flag-ship, pouring in a torrent of fire as if they would carry her by a *coup-de-main*; but after nine or ten minutes, during which he had experienced a rough reception, he stood on to attack the "Monmouth," making room for the ships in his rear to keep up the attack on the "Superbe." At three o'clock the "Monmouth," Captain Alms, which had sustained with unparalleled fortitude the joint attack of three ships, had her mizen-mast shot away, and in a few minutes afterwards her main-mast met the same fate, and she was obliged to fall out of the line to leeward. She now nailed her colours to the stump of the mizen-mast, never to be struck. The enemy used every effort to profit by her condition and carry her off, but the Admiral in the flag-ship speedily came up, and the "Monarca" and "Sultan" bore down to her relief, and covered her with such a fire that the enemy were glad to relinquish their expected prize. The British commander hoped that the customary change of wind in the afternoon would have kept him from the shore; but this still continuing to the northward, and apprehensive that the "Monmouth" in her disabled condition might drift too near it, he made signal for the squadron to wear, and at the approach of night to anchor, when the French drew off in considerable disorder to the eastward. M. de Suffren's ship, the

"Héros," had been so roughly handled that he had been obliged to shift his flag to the "Hannibal." Indeed the condition of both squadrons was pretty much alike. The loss sustained by the "Superbe" amounted to fifty-nine men killed, including two lieutenants, and the master and ninety-six wounded. The "Exeter," Commodore King's ship, though not so hotly engaged as before, had forty-five killed and ten wounded. Captain Alms had two wounds in his face from splinter, and the wheel was twice cleared, only two persons remaining with the captain on the quarter-deck. A son of this most accomplished and gallant commander was one of the lieutenants killed on board the flag-ship. The "Isis," Captain Lumley, was so shattered, that having taken in tow the French frigate "La Fine," 40, she was obliged to cast her off, and she contrived to escape in the darkness. The enemy continued at anchor in sight for five days; both fleets being busily employed in this interval in repairing such damages as could be done at sea, and neither in a condition to renew the attack. At length on the morning of the 17th the French got under weigh and stood in for the centre of the British squadron as though they would engage, thinking to get possession of the "Monmouth," which lay completely dimasted and incapable of resistance. Such diligence had, however, been used by the British commander to put his ships in a condition of defence, that on a near approach the French found every thing well prepared for their reception, so they thought proper to haul their wind, stand to the eastward, and were entirely out of sight by evening. The "Monmouth," under jury-masts, and the rest of Sir Edward Hughes's fleet proceeded to Trincomalee, which place they reached four days after the action. The loss of the British in this action amounted to 137 killed and 430 wounded. The French only owned to 139 killed and 364 wounded. The latter proceeded after the action to Batticola, a Dutch port in the island of Ceylon, about twenty leagues to the southward of Trincomalee, and remained there till pretty early in June, when they returned to the coast of Coronandel. They still retained their former superiority over the British, of twelve ships of the line, carrying 770 guns, against eleven, carrying 732 guns, besides having more frigates. The French had rendered Cuddalore a place of arms both for sea and land, where they were enabled to victual and replenish their ships with both men and stores; 400 French and as many sepoys being now added to the crews, with 300 artillerymen. M. de Suffren was aware that the British expected a reinforcement of several ships of war under Sir Richard Bickerton, who had left England with a convoy on the 6th of February, having the "Cumberland," 74, the "Defence," 74, the "Sceptre," 64, the "Africa," 64, and the "Inflexible," 64, together with the "Juno" and "Medea" frigates; besides which the "Bristol," 50, had already reached Sir Edward Hughes, who had also remasted the "Monmouth" and refitted his other ships. With this fleet he had now arrived at Negapatam, and the French commander, thinking to encounter the English squadron before the arrival of these reinforcements, appeared boldly with eighteen ships before Negapatam

on the 6th of July to beard his enemy in his own harbour, and his enemy was not slow in answering the challenge.

#### 7. THIRD NAVAL ACTION BETWEEN HUGHES AND DE SUFFREN.

It was noon when the French fleet appeared in sight, and by three o'clock Hughes had weighed anchor and put out to sea. He stood to the northward during that evening and night, in order to gain the wind of the enemy. In the morning, when his squadron had now nearly closed with the opponent, he made the signal to each ship to bear down directly upon her opposite and bring her to close action. These orders were admirably obeyed. The firing commenced on the part of the French at ten A.M., but was not returned on the side of the English till near eleven, when it soon became general, and lasted until noon, at not more than 200 yards' distance. Soon after twelve the French line appeared in disorder, and the sternmost ship was obliged to bear away quite out of the line. About one the French Commodore's ship, "Le Brillant," lost her main-mast. But at this critical moment fortune befriended the French; the sea-breeze set in with such unusual strength that several of the English ships were taken aback, and paid round off on their heel with their heads the contrary way. This had the effect of breaking the British line, and totally breaking their order of battle. The disabled and broken enemy were thus enabled to recover themselves. "Le Sevère," French 74-gun ship, had struck to the "Sultan," Captain West, after a severe engagement; but when in the act of bracing round "Le Sevère" poured a broadside into her antagonist, rehoisted her colours, and made off. Sir Edward Hughes, seeing part of his ships on one tack and part on another, attempted to remedy the disorder by annulling the signal to form line and making a signal to wear, when he was hailed by Captain Gell, in the "Monarca," who informed him that all his standing rigging was shot away, and his ship so crippled as to be utterly ungovernable. During the operation of wearing a partial engagement was continued between such of the English and French as happened to come within reach of each other, and the "Eagle" was for some time hard pressed by two of the enemy, whilst the "Hero" got so close to the land that she was seen to make a signal of distress. At half-past one the Admiral nevertheless made signal for line of battle ahead, and was preparing to renew the attack; but at two, seeing the enemy standing in shore and collecting his ships in close order, he gave up the design, and cast anchor at the approach of evening between Negapatam and Nagore. The French squadron anchored about three leagues to leeward, and, to his unspeakable mortification, Sir Edward Hughes saw them get under weigh in the morning and proceed on their way to Cuddalore, while he was utterly incapable of preventing or pursuing them. The Admiral despatched Captain Watt in the "Sultan" on the following day with a letter to M. de Suffren claiming the "Sevère," and complaining of her treatment of the "Sultan" in raking her after she had struck to her; but although an inquiry was afterwards entered into at

Paris on this transaction, no satisfaction could ever be obtained. The British lost seventy-seven killed and 233 wounded; the French, 168 killed and 601 wounded. The British Admiral again lost the captain of the flag-ship, Maclennan, who was shot through the heart at the commencement of the action. Sir Edward Hughes being under the necessity of making good his defects in spars and rigging shot away in action, and of obtaining supplies of all sorts, including ammunition and provisions, ran into Madras Roads on the 20th of July, where he was joined by the "Sceptre," 64, Captain Graves, who had got separated from Sir Richard Bickerton's squadron, and, in company with the "Medea" frigate, had captured in the way a large French ship laden with stores. The Admiral immediately despatched the "Monmouth" and "Sceptre" with stores and provisions to Trincomalee. In the mean time M. de Suffren had no sooner repaired his damages at Cuddalore, than he received advices there that the "St. Michel," 64, the Sieur d'Aymer, commander, and the "Illustre," 74, having under convoy the second division of the Marquis de Busy's troops and artillery, had arrived at the Point de Galles, which lies at the extremity of the island of Ceylon.

#### 8. THE FRENCH ADMIRAL SURPRISES AND CAPTURES TRINCOMALEE.

The French Admiral, accordingly, was enabled to sail on the 1st of August, and to get his forces together, which now amounted to twenty-three sail. So difficult, however, was it to obtain information, that it was the middle of August before Sir Edward Hughes heard of this junction. It happened that the "Coventry," 32, Captain Mitchel, fell in with "La Bellone," French ship, and confiding in the goodness of his ship's company, drew on a most desperate engagement with her of two and a half hours, at the end of which Captain Mitchel most gallantly obliged his enemy to fly, but when pursuing with great eagerness he suddenly found himself in sight of De Suffren's whole fleet. He was now, of course, obliged to fly in turn, being chased by two ships of the line, but escaped, and brought the intelligence direct to the Admiral, who got ready for sea as soon as he could, in great anxiety for the safety of Trincomalee; and he sailed from Madras on the 20th of August. The French Admiral, as soon as he had formed the junction with the Sieur d'Aymer, proceeded directly to attack that place. The commandant, Captain Macdowal, was astonished at the appearance of such an enemy, but was unable by any fire of his batteries to prevent the fleet from anchoring in Back Bay, where De Suffren arrived on the 26th of August. The French Admiral forthwith landed his troops there under the Baron d'Agoult, and the place was immediately invested. After two days' work at the batteries, those on the left were opened on the 29th, and soon evinced such a superiority over those of the garrison that these were silenced before night. The following morning the Baron summoned the commandant. The terms of capitulation were every thing that Captain Macdowal could desire, so eager was the French Admiral to obtain possession of the

place. Accordingly it capitulated, and Fort Ostenburgh was given up the following day. On the 2nd of September Sir Edward Hughes arrived off Trincomalce, and nothing could exceed his mortification and astonishment when he perceived the French colours flying upon all the forts, and about thirty sail of the line riding at anchor in the roads around it.

#### 9. FOURTH NAVAL ACTION BETWEEN HUGHES AND DE SUFFREN.

The enemy were in the fullest pride of success and in the fullest confidence of superiority; as soon, therefore, as they perceived the British fleet they got out to sea, and stood to the south-eastward to get the wind. Sir Edward Hughes might as well have avoided an engagement, for no success could recover the place; but the indignation of the whole squadron cried aloud for vengeance, and the signal was immediately made for the headmost ships to engage at two cables' distance. The British Admiral stood off before the wind from the shore, to draw them as far as possible from Trincomalce, so that it was half-past two in the afternoon of September the 3rd before the French began to fire on the English line, and soon after the engagement became general. The French, to derive greater advantage from their superior force, directed their view upon the ships at the extremities of the British line, which were already in close action with an equal enemy. By this means the "Worcester," which was the last ship, was most furiously attacked by two of the enemy, and hotly pressed, when the "Monmouth," throwing all her sails aback, came up timely, and threw in so close and powerful a fire upon the enemy that the French attack failed of its effect. At the same time five of the enemy's ships came down in force, and fell with equal fury and greater power upon the "Exeter" and "Isis," which were the headmost of the English van. The "Exeter" had again the sad destiny of being exposed to the encounter against great odds. She was at length so disabled as to be obliged to drop out of the line, while the "Isis" was now left weak and forlorn to run the gauntlet of all five ships before she could be supported. During these fierce encounters the centre divisions on both sides were fairly and closely engaged ship by ship; the rival commanders, in the "Superbe" and "Héros," dealing out their blows with unremitting fury on each other. At half-past three the ship astern of the French Admiral had the mizen-masts shot away, and the ship ahead lost her fore and mizen top-masts. The action continued till half-past five, when a change of wind brought the English to windward. Admiral Hughes accordingly made signal for wearing, which was instantly obeyed with such alacrity and order that it seemed rather an exercise of parade than one in the height of action and danger. The British fleet now renewed the action on the other tack with fresh ardour. At twenty minutes past six the French Admiral's main-mast was shot away close by the beam, and soon after his mizen-mast met the same fate: on the English side the "Worcester" lost her main top-mast. At seven the whole of De Suffren's squadron hauled their wind to the southward.

receiving a severe cannonade as they passed to leeward of the British line, and, getting clear off, the action entirely ceased. Among the killed were Captain Watt, of the "Sultan," Captain Wood, of the "Worcester," and the Hon. Thomas Lumley, of the "Isis." This was the fourth of the several battles which Sir Edward Hughes this year fought with M. de Suffren, none of which had any decisive result. In this last the loss of the British in killed and wounded was 1350 men. The French returns showed about 1100 killed and wounded. Thus ended one of the best-fought actions recorded in naval history; and it terminated a naval campaign in this part of the world unequalled as to the number, variety, and obstinacy of the actions by which it was distinguished. The French returned to Trincomalée on the very night of the action, and lost the "Orient," 74, one of their best ships, in the act of getting into the harbour in the dark. The French Admiral was so little satisfied with the conduct of his officers in this action, that he sent no less than six of his captains to the Mauritius to account for their conduct. Hughes went to refit at Madras, where he narrowly escaped a dreadful hurricane on the 15th of October. Sir Richard Bickerton arrived and joined him there in that month with five ships of the line and a considerable reinforcement of troops. As a naval commander the French Admiral, M. de Suffren, appears in a far more respectable light than any of his predecessors in the Indian seas. It was to no purpose that Hughes sustained action after action with Suffren; though invariably victorious, he never managed an attack so as to reap the fruits of victory, which, on the contrary, always passed into the hands of the vanquished; the honour of the day belonged, in truth, to all the brave men on either side who were here contending. No ship of war was captured, no triumph or trophy obtained. But M. de Suffren blotted his escutcheon by landing all the prisoners at Cuddalore, and deliberately assigning them over to Hyder Ali, by whom they were removed in chains to Mysore. The whole civilized world must unite in its abhorrence of giving into the hands of a barbarian, notorious for his contempt of honourable obligations, prisoners whom he had not captured, and who were entitled from their captors to the generous treatment customary, and therefore due to them, from an honourable enemy.

#### 10. BRITISH WAR WITH THE MAHRATTAS CONCLUDED.

On the 17th of May this year a treaty of peace was concluded at Salbye with the whole of the Mahratta nation, on the principle of a mutual restoration of conquests since 1775. It was on the 18th of May in that year that the first encounter between the British and the Mahrattas had taken place, when Colonel Keating, acting in conjunction with Rugonath Row, defeated them near Poonah. It will be remembered that in the year 1780 General Goddard defeated Scindiah and Holkar at Surat, and afterwards, in the course of that summer, reduced the fortresses of Dubry and Ahmedabad. This was succeeded by many complicated operations. The district of the



Corkan had been reduced by a detached force under Colonel Hartley, but he had been soon after compelled to withdraw out of it, in spite of a protracted and gallant defence. From the side of Bengal, Agra, a principality of Scindiah, had been invaded, and the strong forts of Lahar and Gwalior had been carried by assault by a body of troops under Captain Popham, who had been sent to reinforce the army of Goddard. Gwalior was a place of such considerable strength as to be regarded by the native military authorities as impregnable; it had been, however, captured by Popham on the night of the 3rd of August, 1780. Goddard had marched in October of the same year to attack the city of Bassein to the south of Bombay, which surrendered, after the tedious process of a siege, on the 11th of December. The operations of the army were covered by a force under the command of Colonel Hartley, who for six weeks was engaged in almost daily encounters with uniform success; but the supreme government had got weary of this Mahratta war, and gave instructions that the contest should be restricted merely to defensive operations, for the contests going on in the Madras presidency required successive draughts from Goddard's army, and left that General in no condition to conduct even a defensive war with spirit. He took post at the Bhore Ghaut, a place difficult of access, but from which he was at length compelled to retreat with great loss both in men and baggage. Colonel Carnac had succeeded Major Popham at Agra, and had also been compelled to retire before Scindiah to Mahautpoor. He succeeded, however, at length in throwing the Mahratta chief off his guard, and suddenly attacking his camp by night, when he put him to the rout with dreadful slaughter and irretrievable confusion. Thus in the end, by the judicious management of Hastings the Governor-General, brought about the general pacification with the Mahrattas, by which an armed truce was established, and it was stipulated in the provision that all European traders, except the British and Portuguese, should be excluded from the Mahratta territories.

#### 11. NAVAL ACTIONS IN THE WEST INDIES—HOOD AND DE GRASSE.

The naval and military operations of the British in the exactly opposite hemisphere now demand attention. The events in the East Indies, having been brought down to the conclusion of the year, have much anticipated those in the western hemisphere. The Count de Grasse with thirty-two ships of the line, having rested a short time to refit at Martinique, presented himself on the 11th of January before the island of St. Christopher's or St. Kitts, and landed 8000 men there under the Marquis de Bouillé. General Frazer with a garrison of 600 effective men immediately retired to Brimstone Hill, a rather strong redoubt in this island. The French had intended to have attempted Barbadoes, where Sir Samuel Hood was with his fleet, which did not consist of more than twenty-two ships; but the winds in this region blowing always to the west, frustrated their intention, and made them direct their attack against St. Christopher's. Sir Samuel resolved to attempt if possible the

preservation of this island, and gallantly determined on the unusually bold stroke, with his inferior force, of becoming himself the aggressor, and attacking his adversary at anchor. The accident of two ships, the "Alfred," 14, and the "Nymphe" frigate, running foul of each other interrupted the prosecution of his first bold design, and rendered a new disposition necessary. This occasioned such delay as enabled the French Admiral to weigh and form line outside the road of Basseterre. On the 24th of January, however, the French cutter, "Espion," 16, laden with shot and shells for the Marquis de Bouillé's force, fell into Hood's hands; and afforded him all the information he required. On the 25th, at daybreak, the Count de Grasse with his whole fleet, consisting of one ship of 110 guns, six of 80, twenty-three of 74, and four of 64, with two frigates, stood out to the southward on the larboard tack. Sir Samuel Hood immediately perceived the advantage that he might derive from this movement. The enemy were at daylight full in view and were formed in a line of battle ahead. In order to draw them more off shore Sir Samuel feigned an immediate attack; the ruse succeeded, and De Grasse prepared for action. The measures necessary for this object threw the French Admiral farther from his anchorage, which gave Sir Samuel a fair prospect of gaining the possession of it, and he therefore tacked and pushed in directly for Basseterre Road, which he succeeded in fetching. The Count de Grasse, indignant at the advantage which had thus been effected over him, and apprehensive that this masterly movement would cut him off from all communication with De Bouillé's army, now made a violent attack upon the rear and part of the centre of Hood's fleet, and fell with especial fury upon Commodore Affleck, with the hope of entirely cutting off his division; but that gallant officer, seconded by the Hon. Captain Cornwallis and Lord Robert Manners, kept up so unceasing a fire, that they in a great measure covered the other ships, and after a sharp conflict the enemy bore up for the offing; but the "Solebay" frigate, being closely pursued, ran on shore on Nevis point, and was destroyed by her crew. The next morning by eight o'clock the British line was attacked from van to rear by the whole force of the enemy, who continued the engagement for two hours without making the slightest impression upon it. The French then wore, and hauled off to seaward. In order to strengthen the position of the rear of the fleet, Sir Samuel moved the seven rearmost ships towards the town of Basseterre, forming an obtuse angle, by which means no one part of his fleet could suffer a partial attack. In the afternoon of the same day, the 26th of January, the Count de Grasse renewed the action, hoping to overwhelm his antagonist by his great superiority of force. He again made his attack upon the centre and rear, but was repulsed with greater loss and damage than before. The flag-ship, the "Ville de Paris," 110, received no less than eighty-four shots in her hull, and was obliged, in seamen's phrase, "to be heeled," that is, laid partly on her side, in order to plug and cover the shot-holes, and that in view of the English. The loss of the British in these several engagements was

172 killed, and 244 wounded; and it was said that the enemy sent away nearly 1000 wounded to St. Eustatia.

12. ISLAND OF ST. CHRISTOPHER'S BESIEGED AND TAKEN BY M. DE BOUILLÉ.

With considerable difficulty about 350 of the inhabitants of St. Kitts (who were not in general well attached to the crown of England), were, through the exertions of Governor Shirley, led up to reinforce Brigadier Frazer's small garrison at Brinestone Hill. This situation is naturally very strong, the approaches to it difficult, and the ascent so steep as to make the adventure of the Marquis de Bouillé attended with much difficulty; but he had also many misfortunes; for as he had no means of land carriage to bring up the powerful artillery and stores with which he was provided from Basseterre, where they might have been easily and securely landed, he endeavoured to obtain them by sea, and attempted to disembark them from shipboard at Sandy Point, but the vessel with a prodigious quantity of siege guns and ammunition struck upon the rocks and went to the bottom. The vessel captured by the British squadron, which might have supplied the loss, now of course failed to replenish his wants, nevertheless he fished up with great industry and perseverance no small part of the artillery, and the shot and shell, from the ship that had sunk; and most unexpectedly hit upon eight brass 24-pounders, with 6000 balls and 1500 shells, at the foot of the hill, which had at some former period been sent out from England for the garrison, and had been left in the field and never carried up to the works. De Bouillé opened the trenches in the night between the 16th and 17th of January. After the fight between the fleets, which has been above related, a communication was opened between Hood's anchorage and the garrison. The marines and troops on board, consisting of the 28th and 69th regiments and two companies of the 19th, numbering in all about 2100 men, under General Prescott, was, however, a force too inadequate to the attempt of raising the siege by attacking the enemy. They were, nevertheless, put on shore on the 28th, and a smart skirmish took place with a part of the Irish brigade, who were stationed at Basseterre. About 100 were killed and wounded on both sides in this fight; but this brought down the marquis de Bouillé the following morning with 4000 men taken from the trenches. He found General Prescott, however, too well posted to attack him, and therefore led back his troops to the siege; and as no object was to be gained by the British troops remaining on shore, Prescott and his force re-embarked the same evening. The vigilance of the besiegers was however so alert, that Captain Curgenvin with a few brave volunteer seamen who attempted to get into the garrison, where their assistance would have been extremely useful, were foiled in the attempt, and a number of officers who had ventured the same task singly were unsuccessful. Batteries upon batteries were now multiplied all round the hill, and the force and effect of twenty-three heavy guns and twenty-four large mortars cannonading night and day a spot of

ground whose diameter did not exceed 200 yards was at length felt: the works on one side were so destroyed as to form an entire and perfect breach. The Admiral was on the 8th of February informed by signals of the distress and danger of the garrison; but nothing could be done, for no means existed of being able to extricate them from their difficulties. On the re-embarkation of Prescott the Marquis de Bouillé had summoned the fort again, and Governor Shirley now embraced the proposal of a capitulation, when every condition proposed, whether in favour of the garrison or the island, was agreed to. Indeed, the Marquis de Bouillé's magnanimity in all the transactions which he had with the British in these conquests is spoken of by English writers with the greatest praise and thankfulness: he seemed to have been the man to reap all the French laurels of the war in that quarter, and his activity in fight and generosity towards the conquered were alike conspicuous.

The surrender of Brimstone Hill rendered the longer stay of the English squadron in the anchorage ground of Basseterre equally useless and dangerous, and nothing remained for Sir Samuel Hood but to retire and carry off his squadron in as perfect a condition as possible. "Would the event of a battle have determined the fate of the island, he would have attacked the enemy." But the French had been just joined by two new ships of the line from France, so that M. de Grasse now possessed the decided superiority of battle ships. The means therefore of even quitting his situation were not a little difficult to the British Admiral. Nevertheless, on the night after the capitulation, the enemy's fleet lying within five miles, and their lights full in view, the English squadron were ordered to cut their cables and put out to sea all as nearly as possible at the same instant, and this they did according to their orders without obstruction or pursuit, and the fleet got clear away. The neighbouring British islands of Nevis and Montserrat followed the fortune of St. Christopher's, and surrendered to a French force under the Count de Barras, so that of all their numerous possessions in the West Indies, Jamaica, Barbados, and Antigua now alone remained to the English.

### 13. GREAT NAVAL BATTLE BETWEEN RODNEY AND DE GRASSE.

While the French fleet under De Guichen, which Admiral Kempenfeldt was too weak to intercept, was proceeding to the West Indies, Sir George Rodney, who had hoisted his flag on board the "Arrogant," got the start of them from the Channel by a few days, and had proceeded for the West Indies with a squadron of twelve ships of the line. Rodney about the middle of March effected a junction with Hood on his passage away from St. Christopher's, and found himself at the head of a fleet of thirty-six ships of the line. Hood was enabled to inform the Admiral that the Count de Grasse was safe in Port Royal, but was meditating a descent on Jamaica. De Guichen had met with such a continued succession of tempest and foul weather that the larger portion of his squadron had been obliged to return to France in

very bad condition, so that the two vessels that joined De Grasse before St. Kitts were all he could now expect in the way of reinforcement from France. Sir George Rodney therefore ran into Gros-islet Bay, in the island of St. Lucia, in order that he might keep a more watchful eye on the French fleet than he could do by continuing to cruise. On the 5th of April he learned that De Grasse was embarking troops; and on the 8th at daybreak the signal was made that the French fleet was coming out of Port Royal Bay. Sir George was in such constant readiness that in less than two hours all his ships were under weigh and in pursuit with the utmost speed, and came up with the enemy on the 9th, near Dominica, near which island both fleets were for some time becalmed. The objects of the hostile commanders were not less opposite than their interests. It was the business and design of the Count de Grasse to avoid fighting by all possible means, until he had formed a junction with the French and Spanish fleets at Hispaniola. On the other side, the salvation of the West Indies, with the whole fortune and hope of the war, depended upon the British commander's preventing this junction; or, at all events, of bringing on a decisive engagement with the French before it took place. The van of the British fleet was commanded by Hood, in the "Barfleur," the centre by Rodney, in the "Formidable," and the rear by Admiral Drake, and perhaps a set of more brave and efficient officers were never before united in a command of equal force. The three divisions of the French fleet were commanded respectively by the Count de Grasse, in the "Ville de Paris," M. de Vaudreuil, and M. de Bougainville, all distinguished commanders. When the wind rose the French fleet got the breeze first, and stood away for Guadaloupe. The van of the British received it next and crowded all sail after them. The centre and rear of the fleet still remained becalmed and motionless. De Grasse seeing this was tempted (injudiciously) by the separated and exposed situation of Hood's squadron, to bear down upon it, hoping to destroy it before Rodney could come to his assistance. At nine o'clock in the morning of the 9th of April, the "Barfleur" had at one time seven, and generally three of the enemy's line of battle ships firing upon her: and nearly every ship of that division was exposed to the same unequal contest, but they all behaved with a firm and determined resistance, and sustained without shrinking all the efforts of so great a superiority, apparently inflicting more mischief than they received. At length and by degrees the leading ships of the centre division came up, followed by the flag-ship, the "Formidable," with her two seconds, the "Namur," and the "Duke," all of 90 guns, who made and maintained a most tremendous fire. De Grasse accordingly withdrew, and availing himself of the wind was enabled to prevent the engagement becoming general by keeping his ships at a cautious distance. One of his captains in a 74-gun ship backed his main-topsail when opposite Prince Rupert's Bay, and in this situation bravely returned the fire of three assailants in succession, to the great admiration of the British fleet. Captain Bayne, of the "Alfred," was killed, and the "Royal Oak," the "Montagu," and

another 74, suffered extremely, yet were not disabled from keeping the sea, but the casualties are not given as very large on either side notwithstanding the cannonade, which is recorded as being the most tremendous ever known between the same number of ships. At noon all the ships having come up, De Grasse withdrew his fleet and evaded all the efforts of the English commanders to renew the engagement. The British fleet therefore lay to for the night to repair damages, and next morning made all sail in pursuit. During the day of the 10th, both fleets were in sight of one another, but in the morning of the 11th the French fleet had got so far to windward as to be scarcely visible. In the mean time Drake had become the van and Hood the rear. About noon two of the French ships were observed far to leeward of the rest, with their topmasts struck. Signals for a general chase from the Admiral were forthwith run up, and the pursuit soon became so vigorous that the "Agamemnon" and some others had come with such quickness upon the two Frenchmen that they would have been cut off, but that De Grasse hastened to their relief with his entire force. This spirited movement brought matters to the point that the British so ardently desired. It was now become impossible for the French Admiral to avoid fighting; but as the evening was too far advanced, the pursuing ships were recalled, a close line was formed, and a most masterly disposition of the British fleet was exhibited during the night. The enemy had also become sensible that the die was now cast, and prepared with equal resolution for the battle on the morrow. The scene of action may be considered as a moderately large basin between the islands of Guadaloupe, Dominica, Saintes, and Mariegalante, bounded both to leeward and windward by dangerous shores. The hostile fleets found themselves in the morning upon opposite tacks, and the battle commenced at seven o'clock. The action was begun by the "Marlborough," Captain Penny, the leading ship of the van, who received and returned, at near distances, the first fire of twenty-three ships of war, and had the fortune to have only three men killed and sixteen wounded in running this gauntlet. Each ship as it successively came up ranged slowly and closely along the French line, and as a signal for close fighting was kept continually flying, the British ships gave and received so close a fire that every shot took effect, and as the French ships were full of men the carnage in them was dreadful. Some opinion may be formed of the havoc that was made, from the fact, that the "Formidable," the flag-ship, fired nearly fourscore broadsides, and it is probable she was not singular. During four or five hours neither ships appear to have had any advantage. Towards noon, however, the breeze freshened, and Rodney, perceiving an opening in the enemy's line, made the celebrated signal for "breaking the line," and he himself immediately bore

<sup>1</sup> The controversy as to the originator of this manœuvre—whether it was Le Père Hoste, Clerk of Eldon, Sir Charles Douglas, or Lord Rodney himself—can have no place in these mere "Annals" of the times. It is for the historian, like the judge on the bench, to determine historical con-

down direct upon it, followed by the "Namur," and the "Duke," Captain Gardiner, and supported by the "Canada," Captain Cornwallis. These vessels broke through the enemy's line about three ships short of the centre, and were soon followed by those in the rear, who doubled upon the enemy as they got through, and kept up a tremendous fire. By wearing round upon his heel Rodney completed the manœuvre of attacking to leeward, and cutting asunder the enemy's fleet. The instant that the Admiral wore after breaking through he threw out a signal for the van to tack, and this being immediately complied with by Drake's division and that of the centre, the British fleet got to windward of the enemy and completed the confusion. An eyewitness of the scene on board the flag-ship records, "We passed within pistol-shot of the 'Glorieux,' 74, which we so roughly handled that she was shorn of all her masts, bowsprit, and ensign staff; but the white flag was still nailed to a stump, breathing defiance in her last agonies. It struck the Admiral's fancy, who was an indefatigable reader of Homer, that this motionless hulk was not unlike the corpse of a fallen hero, and he exclaimed, 'Now shall be a contest for the body of Patroclus.'" This bold manœuvre of breaking the line decided the fate of the day; but the French continued the fight with their usual high spirit and intrepidity, and the battle raged until sunset, being nearly eleven hours from its commencement. "I believe," says Rodney, "it was the severest engagement ever fought at sea." The British rear, however, under Hood, were never able to engage at all. The wind did not reach them as it had reached the rest, and it was only at the last that this distinguished officer served to render the victory more decisive and the ruin greater by coming up to finish the action. The French van bore away to leeward and endeavoured to re-form their disordered line, but the broken state of their fleet necessarily exposed their ships to be attacked in detail. Many opportunities occurred in so long an engagement for single combat. The "Canada," 74, Captain Cornwallis, took the French ship "Hector," 74, in this manner, and after making her strike, pushed on to the flag-ship, the "Ville de Paris." The "Centaur," 74, Captain Inglefield, came up to attack the "César," 74, and a most gallant action took place. The French Captain had the worst of it, but disdained to yield. Three other ships came up upon him successively and almost tore him to pieces by their fire; he nailed his colours to the mast, and his death only put an end to the contest, when the mainmast went by the board and there was not a foot of canvas without a shot hole. The

trroversies, by impartially weighing the evidence between them; but the annalist is rather like the lawyer who states the case or prepares the brief. It is his duty to record facts and events, and it is sufficient for him to leave the Admiral the full credit of the manœuvre; for an officer in command makes every suggestion that he may receive from others his own; since he is alone responsible for its success or failure, as well as for the manner in which it may be carried into effect.

"Ardent," 64, which had been captured by the French in the beginning of the war, was now recaptured by the "Belliqueux," and the "Bedford." The "Diadème," 74, went down by a single broadside from the "Formidable." M. de Grasse, even after his line was broken, with his seconds, "Le Languedoc," and "La Couronne," continued the contest with the "Canada." It seemed as if he were determined to sink rather than strike to any thing but a flag, for though he still held out, he was already much battered. At length Sir Samuel Hood came up in the "Barfleur," just as the sun was sinking below the horizon, and poured in a most tremendous and destructive fire, which is said to have killed sixty men outright. The French Admiral resolutely endured even the repetition of this fire for a quarter of an hour, when, having as it is said but three men alive and unhurt on the upper deck (he himself being one of the three), he hauled down his flag and surrendered his sword to Sir Samuel Hood. The thrill of ecstasy that penetrated every bosom in the British fleet when the flag of the "Ville de Paris" went down, is not to be described. She was the largest ship afloat, and such a surrender was the crowning glory of the conflict.

The sea never witnessed a more noble contest, which had lasted during the whole day of the 12th of April, when prodigies of valour had been performed on both sides. When it grew dark the Admiral thought it necessary to bring to for the night, in order to keep the fleet collected, secure the prizes, and afford time for inquiring into the state and condition of his ships after so severe and long an action. The remains of the enemy's fleet went off before the wind in small detached squadrons and single ships; the greater part under Bougainville and Vaudreuil bore away in a body for St. Domingo; while some ran down for shelter and relief to the Dutch island of Curaçoa. Sir George Rodney finding the enemy entirely out of sight in the morning, attempted to pursue them, but after three days, finding they were gone away to leeward, he desisted and despatched Sir Samuel Hood with the hope of picking up some of the disabled ships. On the 19th Hood overtook and captured the "Jason," 6½, the "Caton," 64, and two large frigates, in the Mona Passage, between Hispaniola and Porto Rico, which brought up the whole loss of the French in this action to eight ships of the line and two frigates. Four of the ships that escaped got safe into Curaçoa, but for some time the French commanders believed that twelve ships of the line had been either lost or taken. Their loss in killed and wounded was computed at from 2000 to 3000 killed, and double that number wounded. One of the captured ships, the "Diadème," had been sunk, and one, the "César," had blown up after the action, in both which all on board had perished. The ships had fought all through the day at such close quarters, and the French had so many land troops aboard their ships, that their loss could not but have been excessive. On the side of the British in both actions (for no separate lists were kept), the loss amounted to 1050 killed. Captain Blair, of the "Anson," and Lord Robert Manners were in that number, and universally lamented. A monument to their joint memory was erected by Parliament in St.



Paul's Cathedral. Among the results of the victory must be reckoned thirty-six chests of money intended for the pay and subsistence of the troops, together with the whole train of field artillery and battering train, destined for the invasion of Jamaica. That island was now safe, and the dominion of the Caribbean Sea restored to Britain.

The intelligence of this important victory was received in England with an unanimous and almost frantic joy, for the people had become dispirited by the indecisive nature of the late conflicts with the French, who had followed up for so long a period their policy of never closing with, nor coming up to a decisive action; but, sad to relate, such was at this period the virulence of party spirit in England, that before the news arrived Rodney had been recalled from his command by no less an authority than Lord Keppel, his brother Admiral, and a successor had been appointed, and had actually sailed from England to take upon him his command. Success, as is invariably the case, raised Sir George from an indifferent rank in public opinion to the highest pinnacle of popularity. He was elevated to the peerage, and an additional pension of 2000*l.* a year (he had already a similar pension for his victory over De Guichen in 1780) was voted him. Hood also was made an Irish Baron, and Drake and Commodore Aflleck were made Baronets. Admiral Pigot arrived from England to take the command from Rodney in the beginning of August, and the hero returned to England to the enjoyment of those honours which were the due reward of his services. A column and other monuments were erected to his honour at the expense of private individuals. Sums were collected for the same purpose by public subscription. In short, never before did any commander whatever receive such accumulated honours.

The Count de Grasse came on board the flag-ship as a prisoner the day after the battle. He carried himself as one who was conscious he had done his duty, and was received with every token of attention and respect by Rodney and his officers; but in France the most virulent expressions of disgust were hurled on his misfortune and his fame; epigrams circulated from mouth to mouth, and even the women carried ornaments called "*à la de Grasse*," having on one side a heart and on the other none. The poor Admiral had, however, one attached friend left in France, his faithful dog, "*Loup*," who, when his master left home to take the command, remained for three days in his chamber, watching his coat and refusing food.

The enemy was still formidable both by sea and land in the West Indies. The Spaniards had sixteen ships of the line and about 8000 troops at Cape François. Several French men-of-war were also at that station, with the remains of De Grasse's fleet, now under the command of Vaudreuil, which amounted to twenty-three sail of the line. Lord Hood, therefore, with about twenty-eight ships of the line, was left to keep the sea and watch the motions of the enemy at Hispaniola. But the spirit of enterprise was nipped in the bud; the late blow was too severe to be so soon forgotten. All ideas of

conquest were laid aside. The Spanish fleet and troops returned to the Havannah: a number of ships of war went home with convoys, and the Comte de Vaudreuil, with about thirteen sail of the line, gave up the West Indies and proceeded to North America.

#### 14. AMERICAN WAR—CAPTAIN ASGILL'S CASE—PRELIMINARIES OF THE TREATY OF INDEPENDENCE SIGNED.

Before Rodney's great victory had even taken place, an event bearing most influentially on the contest in America, had occurred in England. The British ministry under Lord North had resigned on the 20th of March, and the new government had been installed, of which the fundamental principle of union was, "Peace with the Americans and the acknowledgment of their independence." Elated by the recent successes of their arms and by the apparently accumulating misfortunes of England; and strong in their alliances with France, Holland, and Spain, the American Congress received the first overtures, even from friendly hands in the mother country, with coldness, if not with distrust; but when the news of the defeat of De Grasse, and the destruction of all that superiority, which their allies had, till then, commanded at sea, reached the American continent, it filled the republican party with dismay, and no inconsiderable part of them with despair. No military transactions of any consequence had occurred during the period that intervened since the capitulation at York Town. The opposite armies were so nearly balanced with respect to force and to the strength of their respective posts and defences, that little room for enterprise was left on either side. Sir Henry Clinton remained at New York: Washington passed the winter at Philadelphia, in order to be at hand to confer with Congress, who were in session there, and to enjoy the distinction that late events had conferred on him, and the repose to which they had justly entitled him. Early in May Sir Henry Clinton obtained permission to retire from his arduous command, which now devolved on Sir Guy Carleton.

A circumstance more creditable to the resolution and firmness of a leader of brigands, than to the brightness and generosity of a soldier, and which greatly sullied the just fame of Washington, occurred at this period. It appears that a Captain Huddy, who commanded a small body of troops at a post on Tom's River, in Monmouth, New Jersey, was attacked by a party of royalists, who had become maddened and exasperated by the wholesale losses inflicted on some of their friends and relatives by the republicans, since the capitulation at York Town; and having taken him prisoner they hanged him on the heights near Middletown, on the 12th of April, leaving a label on the tree, stating, "We, the refugees, &c., determine to hang man for man while there is a refugee. Up goes Huddy for Philip White." On this being made known to Washington, the Commander-in-Chief, who had Congress at his elbow, he addressed a letter to the generals and field-officers of the army, and inquired their opinion on these points: "1st. Whether retaliation was justifiable? 2nd. If so, on whom should it fall? and, 3rd. How

should the substitute be designated?" The persons addressed, twenty-five in number, answered the first question in the affirmative unanimously. Washington accordingly wrote to Sir Henry Clinton demanding that the officer who commanded the party should be given up to him. Clinton replied that he had caused Captain Lippencot to be placed in arrest, and had ordered a court-martial to sit upon him. The American General declared himself not satisfied, and directed that an unconditional prisoner of the rank of captain, or if none should be found, a lieutenant under the same circumstances, should be sent him from among the prisoners, either in Pennsylvania or Maryland; but finding no one of that description in his power, he caused to be assembled the officers who had surrendered under the terms of capitulation at York Town, and selected by lot Captain Charles Asgill, of the British guards, a young gentleman nineteen years of age, the only son of his father, and heir to an extensive fortune and an honourable title. This officer was forthwith transferred to the custody of the provost-marshal, and Sir Henry Clinton was informed by letter from Washington himself, dated the 5th of May, that he meant to hang him in retaliation for the murder of Huddy, and that he had fixed the time and place for his execution. In vain did Sir Henry first and then his successor express their utter abhorrence of the act and sentiments of the murderers, but all entreaty and arguments were unavailing: Washington either had no feelings or disguised them. All Europe exclaimed against his barbarous resolve, and even the King of France interfered to urge the American General to reconsider his determination, delicately insinuating through his minister, the Count de Vergennes, that "though Captain Asgill was doubtless your prisoner, yet he was one whom the arms of the King had contributed to put into your hands at York Town."

While this was pending, Sir Guy Carleton, the former Governor in Canada, now in command of the British forces, received instructions from the new cabinet of the British King, to open negotiations with Congress on the basis of their independence. This was on the 14th of May, and from this time hostile operations were suspended in the north, but in Carolina and Georgia a war of posts was continued with fierceness and carnage. The year passed away, however, in the constant expectation that the war would terminate. Nevertheless, Washington employed the time in unremitting labour and efforts to bring his army into a state of preparation for renewed hostilities. His army was by his own account in a wretched state at this period; left destitute of provisions, in a state almost of mutiny, and even so late as October he declared that there never was so much suffering, or so great a spirit of discontent as at that instant; and he wrote, "It is high time for a peace." General Greene also complains on the 13th of August, that "his men were ragged as wolves," that his "beef was carrion when it could be had," and that "they were frequently without any." In this state of things the French army, which had rendered such notable service against Lord Cornwallis, was collected and marched to Boston, and in the

month of October were shipped off for the West Indies, for a defence against any British attempts in that quarter. On the 30th of November the preliminaries of the Treaty of Independence were signed by Adams and Franklin at Paris, and a few days previously to the receipt of this act (on the 7th of November) Congress resolved that the Commander-in-Chief should be directed to set Captain Asgill at liberty.

#### 15. EXPEDITIONS AGAINST THE BAHAMAS AND THE BRITISH FORTS IN HUDSON'S BAY.

Great as were the effects of Rodney's victory, it could not be expected that it should stay at once the enterprise of all the combined enemies against the British power. Don Juan de Gagigal, Governor-General of the island of Cuba, having a great force destined for the conquest of Jamaica upon his hands, determined to employ it on an expedition against the Bahama Islands. Colonel Maxwell, the Governor at New Providence, had not above 170 invalids to oppose to an armament of above 5000 sea and land forces, but he delayed a reply to the summons made to him for a surrender for some time in order to take advantage of contingencies: finding, however, nothing come to his rescue, he finally capitulated on the 8th of May, without bloodshed, liberal terms being granted to the garrison, which consisted wholly of invalids.

Before his departure from the West Indies, Admiral de Vaudreuil concerted an expedition against the British defenceless settlements at Hudson's Bay, Hayes and Nelson's Rivers. M. de la Pérouse (the celebrated but unfortunate navigator), in the "Sceptre," 74, with two 36-gun frigates, was appointed to conduct this expedition; having 800 soldiers and artillery on board, with some mortars and guns for the sieges they expected to undertake. The squadron sailed from Cape François on the 31st of May, but such were the natural impediments from fogs and ice in this "realm of frost," that it was not till the 8th of August that they came in sight of Fort Prince of Wales, on the Churchill River. These forts, as they are called, are in fact mere commercial factories; and there are many of them erected at the mouths of the principal rivers of the settlement. There was not a single soldier in any of them; and the whole population, consisting of storekeepers, clerks, and servants, did not altogether exceed 120 persons at the utmost. The French, utterly uninformed of the true state of things, landed their troops and artillery on the 9th of August, at cautious distances; and proceeded in their approaches, expecting a formidable resistance, until they arrived within cannon-shot, when, astonished at the solitude and silence that prevailed, they halted, and sent forward a summons to surrender; in answer to which the gates were immediately thrown open. Having burned what merchandise they found (except some of the most valuable furs), the expedition re-embarked, and sailed on the 11th for York Fort. Here they found rivers full of sandbanks and deep mud, currents very strong and violent, and tides extremely low and rapid; and the whole coast was utterly unknown and unmapped. On the

21st of August they landed at the back of the island in the river Nelson, but finding the debarcation difficult, they halted for that night, and remained on board. To their astonishment they found themselves in the morning left dry from the tide, and the troops, leaving their mortars and cannon on board, were obliged to wade, with their muskets on their shoulders, through a soft mud for a quarter of a league to reach the shore: here they found very difficult woods and morasses, which crossed their way, without any sort of road to guide them. Moreover the weather grew so tempestuous that La Pérouse became alarmed for his ships, and was obliged to leave the troops to their own fortunes, and return on board. When at length these latter reached York Fort it opened its gates to the first summons, as Fort Prince of Wales had done. The elements had, however, become too terrible for the exposure of boats and their crews and soldiers to such service as this, so that after blowing up the fort, and doing as much mischief and damage to the Hudson's Bay Company as was estimated at half a million sterling, they withdrew on the 31st of August, carrying with them the nominal governors of the places they had taken. Singularly enough two of the company's ships and the ship "King George," which were hemmed in the Hayes River, were never discovered by the enemy, and consequently escaped capture.

There were some trifling successes this year on the part of the British on the Mosquito shore against the Spaniards: and Acra, with other Dutch forts on the African coast, were captured by conjunct expeditions. But in various latitudes the summer and autumn of this year had been unusually vexed by storms and hurricanes. Four of the French ships captured by Rodney, the "Ville de Paris" (De Grasse's flag-ship), the "Centaur," the "Glorieux," and the "Hector," as well as the British ship "Ramillies," 74, Admiral Graves, foundered at sea, as did the "Centaur," Captain Inglefield, together with several merchant vessels, on the 16th of September off the banks of Newfoundland; and still more strange to say, on the 29th of August at Spithead, the very harbour of Portsmouth, the "Royal George," 100, was overset by a sudden squall of wind, and went to the bottom, with Admiral Kempenfeldt and 400 men, and a number of women and children, the loss amounting altogether to about 1000 persons. No one, however, was more lamented than the brave Admiral himself; he was the son of a Swede, who had entered the service under James II., and had generously followed his master into exile, but had been recalled under Queen Anne. Kempenfeldt was now nearly seventy years of age, and was universally regarded in point of professional knowledge and judgment as one of the first naval officers in the world. It was this Admiral's father who is depicted and immortalized by Addison in the "Spectator" under the well-known appellation of Captain Sentry.

#### 16. WAR IN EUROPE—MINORCA TAKEN BY THE FRENCH.

It is now time to return to the military events that were taking place in Europe. St. Philip's, in Minorca, had been invested by the

armament under the Duke de Crillon since the middle of August in last year. Several spirited sorties were made by the garrison; and early in November one of these, directed against De Crillon's headquarters at Cape Mola, drove him out of quarters, and obliged him to bring his whole force to repulse and dislodge the assailants, but without waiting the attack they returned safe to the garrison. Soon afterwards a shot from the castle exploded a French powder-magazine, in which a number of men perished, and a quantity of live shells were destroyed, which did much mischief. But the badness of food began to tell on the garrison; and that dreadful disease, scurvy, broke out amongst them with such severity, that the garrison was soon reduced from 2692, of which it had originally consisted, to 660 soldiers fit for duty. The showers of shot and shell which had in the interval been poured upon the place had ruined the upper defences of the fortress, and dismounted and rendered useless a great number of cannon. The batteries could no longer be manned; and it was to be apprehended that the enemy, well informed of this weakness of the garrison, would attempt to carry the place by a *coup-de-main*. Under all these circumstances General Murray found himself on the 5th of February under the necessity of capitulating. He obtained for his garrison the honours of war: and it is related that when the poor remains of this gallant force were marched through the Spanish and French lines, that were drawn up to receive them, the generous sympathy of the enemy was roused to involuntary tears as the 600 emaciated, worn down, and decrepit soldiers laid down their arms, exclaiming as they did so, "We surrender them to God alone." The siege had lasted very nearly six months; but it was a loss very grievous to the English, with whom it was a very favourite possession, and who had held the island of Minorca for fourscore years.

#### 17. NAVAL WAR.

As the season for naval action began to open, great efforts were expected from the mighty combination of the whole naval force of France, Spain, and Holland against Great Britain, who had not only to defend her own coasts, but to provide for all the services and contingencies which were required from her on every side of the Atlantic, from the Naze of Norway to the Pillars of Hercules. The force of Great Britain on her own coasts was very inferior to that of her enemies if united, and her policy was to prevent their junction, and weaken them by separate attacks. On the 13th of April (the very day of Rodney's victory) Admiral Barrington sailed from Spithead with twelve sail of the line, and on the 20th discovered seventeen or eighteen sail of large merchantmen and transports under the convoy of the "Protecteur," 74, and the "Pégase," 74, French ships of the line, the "Actionnaire," 64, and a frigate. The signal for a general chase being thrown out, the "Poudroyant," Captain Jervis, so far outstripped all the rest of the squadron, that the enemy thought it best to disperse the convoy by signal, and one of the ships was left to fight her, while the rest made the best of

their way off. This ship proved to be the "Pégase," Captain Chevalier de Sillans, who was forthwith brought to close action. The "Foudroyant" and "Pégase" were well matched in point of force and condition; both were fresh from port, for the latter had only sailed from Brest the day before. It was a little before one o'clock when Jervis came up with her. The action was extremely fierce while it lasted; but in less than an hour the British captain laid the French ship aboard on the larboard quarter, and the "Pégase" was compelled to surrender. The carnage in her was beyond any thing that could have been supposed in so short an action: out of a crew of 700, eighty or 100 were killed; and the damage to the ship, in the destruction of hull, masts, and yards, was proportionate. Captain Jervis and four men were the only casualties in the "Foudroyant."

A few days after (the 23rd) the "Queen," Captain Maitland, pursued and overtook the "Actionnaire," armed *en flûte*, having 250 sailors and 550 soldiers on board, of which number nine were killed and twenty-five wounded by the single broadside she received. Ten large transports and a sloop of war were also taken in the chase. On board the prizes were found a great quantity of ordnance, ammunition, and naval stores, very much needed by the French fleet in the East Indies, and eleven chests of Dutch silver. For the gallant action of the "Foudroyant," Sir John Jervis (afterwards the celebrated Lord St. Vincent) received the reward of the Order of the Bath.

The Dutch fleet soon after this sailed, with designs on the British North Sea and Baltic trade, and Lord Howe was obliged to be sent with a squadron of twelve sail of the line to frustrate them, which obliged the Dutch to return hastily to the Texel, and terrified them into a relinquishment of further designs. M. de Guichen and Don Cordova sailed from Cadiz in the beginning of June northward, in expectation of being joined by the squadron from Brest, and here fell in with an outward-bound British fleet under the convoy of Admiral Campbell in a 50-gun ship, accompanied by some frigates. About eighteen sail of English merchantmen and transports, bound to Canada and Newfoundland, were captured; but the remainder, with the ship of war, had the good fortune to escape. Lord Howe was accordingly recalled to look after this combined fleet, and sailed on the 28th of June, with twenty-one ships of the line and four frigates, having orders to avoid an engagement as much as possible, but to protect and cover the Jamaica fleet expected home, convoyed by only three men-of-war under Admiral Sir Peter Parker. This rich flotilla arrived safe by the end of July; and the dexterity and skill of Lord Howe prevented the combined squadron from intercepting the British trade or effecting a junction with the Dutch. The Admiral now returned to Portsmouth, where he was soon joined by Admiral Milbanke and Commodore Hotham from the North Sea, in order to accompany the fleet upon the expedition to relieve Gibraltar, which set sail on the 11th of September from the British shores.

#### 18. ELLIOT'S DEFENCE OF GIBRALTAR.

The joy of the Spanish King upon the taking of Fort St. Philip

was unbounded ; the Duke de Crillon was appointed Captain-General of the Spanish armies, and, in conjunction with Don Joseph Moreno, was forthwith destined to the command of the mighty armament prepared for the recovery of Gibraltar. This celebrated rock was now, indeed, a most conspicuous object, calculated to draw the attention of all to the most famous siege and defence recorded in modern history. The Chevalier d'Arçon, a French engineer of high note, was the leader from whose skill the fall of this mighty fortress was especially expected ; but King Charles III. took part himself in the modification and adjustment of the plans of attack, as he had indeed also done in that of Minorca. The preparations against Gibraltar, though vast and beyond all example immensely expensive, were now nearly matured. It was said that no less than 1200 pieces of heavy ordnance had been accumulated before the place ; while the quantities of powder, shot, and every kind of military stores were so immense as to be beyond the credibility of that age. The amount of gunpowder was said to exceed 83,000 barrels. Forty gunboats with heavy artillery, as many bomb-vessels with 12-inch mortars, and 300 large boats were collected from every part of Spain to minister as tenders to the fighting-vessels during the action ; and while the combined fleets of France and Spain, amounting to about fifty sail of the line, were to cover and support the attack, nearly all the frigates and smaller armed vessels of the kingdom were destined to second the powerful efforts of the great floating-batteries, which were the corner-work of this mighty undertaking. Ten great ships of from 600 to 1400 tons burden had been cut down to form floating-batteries that could be neither sunk nor fired ; 200,000 cubic feet of timber had been with infinite labour worked into their construction to strengthen them against the first casualty ; and in order to protect them from bombs or grape a hanging roof was contrived, composed of strong rope-work netting covered with hides, which might shield them from the red-hot shot of the fortress ; a contrivance of pipes ran along all the solid workmanship to communicate water for extinguishing fire in every direction. These batteries were mounted with new brass cannon of great weight. Forty thousand men, and more artillery than had ever been before collected together on so narrow a point, together with a numerous body of skilful artillery and engineer officers from France, Italy, Germany, and Switzerland, were sought for and obtained for this great undertaking from nearly every country in Europe. The length and celebrity of the siege had drawn volunteers from all parts : not only the old nobility of Spain, but the chivalrous from all lauds, flocked to display their valour on this mighty enterprise. Among the number two princes of the blood of France appeared to increase the grandeur of the scene : the Count d'Artois, brother to the French King, and his cousin, the Duke de Bourbon, desired to immortalize their names in the recovery of Gibraltar to their kinsman and ally. The arrival of the French princes was made known by the most condescending and delicate attentions to Elliot, the Governor, to whom they sent fruit, vegetables, game, and ice,



entreating him to name any particular kinds he liked best, as they "looked forward to the hope of becoming his friends, after they had learned to render themselves worthy of facing him as an enemy." The British General was not less polite and obliging in his answers. But he informed the Count d'Artois that in accepting the present he had broken through a resolution to which he had invariably adhered, and entreated his Royal Highness not to heap any more favours of the same kind upon him, as he assured him that every thing that might arrive was sold publicly in the garrison, so that any one who had money might become the purchaser, as he made it a point of honour to partake both of the plenty and scarcity in common with the lowest of his brave companions.

The gallant veteran, firm as the immovable rock which he commanded, had, however, long observed the storm gathering and thickening around him, and saw that it must soon fall with unparalleled violence upon himself, but he calmly waited the event. He knew little of the extent of the preparations making by the enemy, and was quite in the dark as to the terrible machines that inspired the enemy with such confidence; but he left nothing undone on his own part, and confided in the excellency of his officers and the valour of the admirable troops they commanded. He made, indeed, a more copious distribution of furnaces and grates for heating his cannon-shot, and trusted events to the decision of that virtue which has ever been seen to follow superior exertions of virtue and bravery. The small marine force of Gibraltar had for some time been commanded by Captain Curtis, of the "Brilliant" frigate, and it was now formed into a distinct corps under that officer with the rank and title of brigadier. Unawed by the vast force with which he was on every side, both by land and sea, surrounded, General Elliot determined, at the suggestion of General Boyd, the Lieutenant-Governor, to provoke his combined enemies to the attack; for, observing that their works on the land side were nearly completed and pretty far advanced towards the fortress, but not well armed, while he was still a little dubious as to the effect of his fire at such a distance, he resolved on a practice, and opened a powerful and well-directed fire from the rock at seven on the morning of the 8th of September, which he supported throughout the day. The effect far exceeded his expectations, for by ten o'clock the Mahon battery and another were in flames; a great part of the trenches and parapets, with their communications, were likewise destroyed. This affront was so far resented by the allied commanders that it seems to have precipitated their measures, and induced the Duke to open his batteries though they were not quite finished: accordingly a new battery of sixty-four heavy cannon was opened by the besiegers at break of day on the 9th; and at half-past five a general cannonade began, commencing with a volley of about sixty shells, succeeded by a general discharge of about 186 guns of large calibre, all from the land side, a discharge not to be paralleled in any previous siege. While the land batteries were thus pouring forth their vengeance, a squadron of seven Spanish and two

French ships of the line dropped down from the orange grove at the head of the bay, and, passing slowly in front of the works, discharged their shot at the South Bastion and "the Ragged Staff," continuing their fire until they had passed Europa Point. They then formed a line to the eastward, and commenced a heavy fire with all their guns upon the batteries on that side. Curtis returned this fire so well that they were glad to keep off to a guarded distance, and two of the Spanish ships found it necessary to run into Algiers to repair damages. The firing from the isthmus and upon Europa Point was renewed on the next, and continued the succeeding days, for it was hoped to confound and overwhelm the garrison by the multitudinous forms and varieties of attack, and the enormous quantity of fire poured upon them. Gun and mortar-boats were now added to the instruments of destruction, and it was calculated that at this time the bombardment went on at the rate of 4000 shots per day.

The combined French and Spanish fleets were now all arrived at Algeiras; and the new battering-ships were in readiness, each armed with 154 pieces of heavy artillery, thirty-six artillerymen and volunteers being allotted to each gun. The gun and mortar-boats were to carry on their attacks in every possible direction, while the floating-batteries and battering-ships had each their destined objects. By these means, and by the fire of nearly 800 cannon from the side of the isthmus, it was intended that every side of the rock should be attacked at the same instant, so that the garrison should be thrown into irretrievable confusion, consternation, and dismay, and their attention called away to so many services, that the resistance it was thought must become ineffective, and totally unequal to the accumulated weight and force of the attack. Charles III. began to ask every morning on awaking, "Is it ours?" and the reply being in the negative, added, "Well, but it must soon be ours." There is a tradition common at Gibraltar that a Queen of Spain ascended the high hill near the rock called the "Chair," and vowed she would not come down or take food until called to dine in Gibraltar. The Kings of Spain were, however, not half the men their wives were, and did not come so near as the "Chair," but were content to dream about the capture between sleeping and waking and keep at a distance.

Nothing particular occurred till the 12th, when about eight in the morning the combined fleets of Spain and France, consisting of seven three-deckers, and thirty-one ships of two decks, three frigates, with a number of xebecs, bomb-ketches, and hospital-ships, the whole under the command of ten admirals and broad pendants, appeared in the Straits from the westward. When the van of this combined fleet had entered the Bay, and all were attentively viewing the ships, suddenly a flag for a fleet was hoisted at the Signal-house pole. All concluded that it was a British fleet in pursuit, when their hopes were damped by the sudden disappearance of the signal. It afterwards appeared that what was thought to be a flag was an eagle, which after an evolution had really perched for a few minutes on the

pole. Though less superstitious than the Romans, this was deemed a favourable omen by the garrison.

It was thought desirable by the besiegers to anticipate the arrival of Lord Howe's fleet: accordingly about seven in the morning of the 13th of September the whole ten batteries lying at the Puerta Maillora were observed to be in motion. Between nine and ten they were moored in a line at moderate distances from the Old to the New Mole. Nothing could be more masterly than the manner in which they bore down in order with a gentle breeze from the north-west, under the conduct of Admiral Don R. Moreno, and successively took their places right and left of the flag-ship, which was moored just opposite the King's Bastion. A crowd of spectators were now seen on the beach near Point Mala, and the surrounding hills were covered with people, as if all Spain had assembled to behold the imposing spectacle of this attack on the much-coveted rock. On the other hand the town batteries were forthwith manned, and the grates and furnaces ordered to be lighted. The enemies' Cyclopean craft were completely moored in a little more than ten minutes, and then a cannonade was opened loud enough to awaken the dead. The storm of shot and shell which was now directed from the land-batteries and the sea-batteries against the place, and the torrents of missiles of every kind that were vomited from the side of the garrison, exhibited a scene of which neither pen nor pencil can furnish the least idea. It is sufficient to say that upwards of 400 pieces of the heaviest artillery were playing at one and the same moment. The brunt of the assailants' fire fell upon the Old Mole and the South Bastion. A prodigious shower of red-hot balls, bombs, and carcasses from the side of the fortress now quite filled the air, with little or no intermission; astonishing the enemy, who could not conceive the possibility that General Elliot could have constructed such a multitude of furnaces within the narrow limits of a fortified place. In truth, the Ordnance portable furnaces for heating shot were not sufficient to supply the demands of the artillery, and accordingly large bonfires were kindled and shot thrown upon them, which soon heated the balls. These supplies were jocularly called "roasted potatoes." After some hours' cannonade the floating-batteries of the besiegers were found to be no less formidable than had been represented: their construction was so admirably calculated for the purpose of withstanding the combined power of combustion and artillery, that for several hours the incessant shower of every infernal missile made no visible impression upon them. The heaviest shells rebounded from their tops, while 32-pound shot would not enter their hulls. Frequently they were seen to be on fire, but with most persevering intrepidity their crews worked their engines, and applied water most effectively. From nine o'clock till two they kept up a constant and well-directed fire upon the garrison with very little damage on their part. The fire was warmly supported by the besiegers' flanking and reverse fire from the land; but the besieged, though vexatiously annoyed from the side of the isthmus, disregarded their opponents in that quarter,

and directed their principal attention to the battering-ships, whose fire began to tell visibly on the walls. About two o'clock P.M. some smoke was seen to issue from the upper part of the Admiral's ship, and soon after men were perceived using fire-engines and pouring water into the shot-holes: nearly at the same moment the floating-battery called La Tailla Piedra, commanded by the Prince of Nassau, on board of which was the engineer D'Arçon himself, began to smoke on the side exposed to the view of the garrison. The disorder in these two commanding ships soon affected the whole line; confusion became apparent on board several of the vessels; and their fire, though kept alive during the continuance of daylight, yet sensibly diminished the cannonade, which first abated, and about seven or eight o'clock in the evening totally ceased, except from one or two ships to windward. In short, the red-hot balls from the garrison had by this time taken such good effect, that nothing was to be thought of but the safety of the crews. As soon as the fire began to slacken many rockets were thrown up as signals of extreme danger and distress; these signals were answered, and boats from the fleet were seen to row round the disabled ships. Great intrepidity was displayed by the crews in their attempts for this purpose; the danger from the burning vessels, filled as they were with instruments of destruction, was no less dreadful to their inmates than was the fire from the garrison. It was no easy matter to move the unwieldy leviathans from their moorings, and all attempts to do so were unsuccessful. After five hours of the greatest exertion they reated in their old positions, immovable and helpless. A little after midnight one of the battering-ships was completely on fire, and by two o'clock the ship to the southward of her burst into flames; between three and four, six other of the battering-ships indicated the efficacy of the red-hot shot defence. The light produced by the flames was nearly equal to noonday, and greatly exposed the enemy to observation, enabling the artillery to be pointed upon them with the utmost precision. The rock and neighbouring objects are stated to have been highly illuminated by the constant flashes of cannon and flames of the burning ships, forming a mingled scene of sublimity and terror. An indistinct clamour, with lamentable cries and groans, arose from all quarters.

About three o'clock Brigadier Curtis at Europa Point, judging that the calmness of the sea would permit his gunboats to act, speedily manned them with the marine brigade in such a manner as to flank the battering-ships, which manœuvre compelled the crews to abandon them. The scene was wrought up by this new and unexpected attack to the highest point of calamity. At about five o'clock the Brigadier advanced and captured two feluccas, or launches, filled with men; and hearing from the prisoners that many men were, from necessity, left by their friends on board the burning ships, he generously determined to try to rescue them. As the day approached and the true dismal condition of things appeared, the firing both from the gunboats and the garrison gradually ceased, and Curtis, with his gallant little crew, was seen dashing among the burning wrecks,

exposed to the greatest peril, to save the shrieking Spaniards, who were exposed on burning rafts floating about the Bay. While the navy were thus humanely relieving the distressed enemy, the flames had reached the battering-ships to the northward, one of which blew up with a dreadful explosion: in a quarter of an hour afterwards another met with a similar fate. The pinnace into which Curtis had thrown himself was so close to one of these, that a burning piece of timber fell and forced a hole through the bottom of the Brigadier's boat; his coxswain was killed and the strokesman wounded. For some time the crew were obscured in the clouds of smoke, and the Governor and garrison, who witnessed the explosion, never expected to see Curtis again, but the smoke cleared away, and the pinnace with the Brigadier's flag was again visible on the face of the water. After this very fortunate escape, it was deemed prudent to withdraw the garrison from the walls, to free them from the dangers arising from the blowing up of the remaining ships. Eight more of the ships exploded successively in the course of the day, and the tenth was burned by the English. The flag of Commodore Moreno was left flying when he abandoned his flag-ship, the "Pastora," and was burned or blown up with the vessel.

Notwithstanding the efforts of the marine brigade in relieving the terrified victims from the burning ships, many unfortunate men could not be removed. Nine officers, two priests, and 334 private soldiers and seamen, all Spaniards, and one officer and eleven men, French, brought up the number of those who were saved to nearly 400 souls: numbers, however, perished, and it is supposed that at a very moderate estimate, 1500 must have been lost in the waters. The Spanish fleet, indeed, did not perform the services which were expected from them, and this they themselves attributed to the state of the wind. The casualties of the garrison were so trifling as to appear incredible, when the quantity of fire, in all its most destructive modes of action, is considered; three officers and thirteen men were killed, five officers and sixty-three men wounded.

From the whole period between the 9th of August and the 17th of October, when the siege was raised, the whole loss on the side of the besieged was three officers and sixty-five killed, and twelve officers and 388 men wounded. The loss sustained by the enemy under the astonishing fire which the garrison threw upon the various points of attack, cannot be ascertained. The enemy, however, continued their cannonade from the isthmus during the remainder of the month, expending from 1000 to 2000 rounds every twenty-four hours. In the afternoon of the 14th several vessels of the Spanish fleet were observed to loose their topsails, and on the 15th they furled them again, but about two o'clock on that afternoon they manned yards and fired a grand salute. These singular rejoicings astonished the garrison, but proved to be only occasioned by a visit paid by the Count d'Artois to Don Luis de Cordova, the Admiral. On the 16th, at night, a great number of signals were made by the combined fleet, shot was again ordered to be heated in the garrison, and the artillery made ready to man the batteries, while the 89th and 72d

regiments lay to their arms, but the time of insult was now passed away.

Thus did the Pillars of Hercules, so conspicuous as emblems on the device of Charles V., with their ancient motto, "Nec plus ultra," and borne by him upon his banners in his wars against Francis I., now in British hands, beat back all the endeavours of the heirs of Charles and Francis combined<sup>1</sup>. Thus was a signal but completely defensive victory obtained by comparatively a handful of brave men over the combined efforts and united powers, by sea and by land, of two great warlike and potent nations, sparing no expense of labour, or exercise of art to obtain a greatly desired object. Thus ended all Chevalier d'Arçon's high-flown hopes and visions; his constructions were utterly destroyed; his 150 guns were sunk to the bottom of the sea, and his fame blasted. He wrote to the French Ambassador at Madrid, "I have burned the temple of Ephesus; every thing is lost, and through my fault, but the honour of the two kings remains untarnished."

The siege was nevertheless not yet abandoned, and the garrison was still kept continually on the alert, expecting some renewed attack, and watching attentively the smallest movements of the enemy. The knowledge that Elliot's stock of provisions and ammunition must be low, and the hope that the combined fleet might still prevent the British fleet from throwing supplies into the fortress, afforded a glimmering of hope to the enemy, that such an auspicious event as the conquest of the place might, by this contingency, yet be obtained, which might convert the past disappointment into an augmentation of glory. But on the 24th of September an express reached Madrid that Lord Howe, with the British fleet intended for the relief of Gibraltar, had quitted England, and on the 9th of October they were informed that it had been seen off Lisbon steering to the southward with a fair wind. On the night of the 10th a violent gale of wind sprung up from the westward, which was felt in the Bay as well as by the fleets at sea. At midnight it increased to a hurricane. One Spanish ship of the line was seen to be driven ashore near Algeziras; two more were driven to the eastward into the Mediterranean; a Spanish two-decker, the "San Michele," lost her mizenmast in endeavouring to weather the rock; several shots were fired at her from the walls and passed through her, when she at length grounded near the Ragged Staff, and struck her flag to the garrison. On the morning that succeeded the storm, the 11th of October, the British fleet, which had indeed felt it, but through the care of Lord Howe and the vigilance and skill of the officers and crews had weathered it out and kept well together, came about one hour after midnight in sight of Gibraltar, and soon after the "Latona" frigate, Captain Conway, anchored under the guns of the place, to inform the Governor of Lord Howe's arrival, and that the fleet consisted of thirty-four sail of the line, including eleven three-deckers, and six frigates, with thirty-one ordnance transports, and an immense convoy, 150 sail in

<sup>1</sup> Lord Stanhope.

all, together with a reinforcement of 1600 men for the garrison. Although the enemy's signals on the approach of the British fleet clearly showed that they knew of its coming, no appearance of opposition to the landing of the reinforcements was made; but a favourable opportunity was unaccountably lost to them from the want of timely attention to the circumstances of the navigation, for only four or five transports safely reached the rock; the rest with the fleet were carried by the current into the Mediterranean. On the 12th Captain Curtis sailed in the "Latona," to inform Lord Howe of the disasters that had befallen the enemy's fleet in the storm. At noon the British fleet returned and appeared in good order off Estepona or Marbella, on the coast lying between Malaga and Gibraltar: the "Panther," 68, was left in the Bay to collect the store-ships as they arrived, and the "Buffalo," 60, was detached to carry off such store-ships as were with the fleet to the Zafarine Islands, upon the coast of Barbary, so that Lord Howe's force was in fact reduced to thirty-two ships; and by the losses in the storm and other casualties, the enemy's fleet was lessened by six vessels. Nevertheless, after sunset on the 13th, the enemy were descried in great force at about six leagues' distance in a line of battle, with a strong wind blowing in their favour and bearing directly down on the British fleet. They amounted altogether to nearly eighty sail, viz. six three-deckers, thirty-eight two-deckers, five frigates, twenty-nine various, besides two fire-ships. In the course of the day Lord Howe had been enabled to keep between his convoy and the enemy, for the Spanish fleet also had been carried away by the current to the eastward; but by good fortune and good judgment united, the British Admiral kept his multitude of shipping well in hand and in good order, so that there were no stragglers, and as the enemy now came up he calmly awaited their approach, in close line of battle upon a wind, with the ships' heads to the southward. About nine at night advices were received from the look-out frigates, that the enemy had hauled their wind and bore up; and about two in the morning that they had tacked. At day-break they were perceived close in by the land, and at such a distance as scarcely to be visible from the deck. Lord Howe therefore finding the wind favourable proceeded in order of battle towards the Strait, and passed eighteen of his convoy safe into Gibraltar Bay. The enemy's cannonade from the isthmus again opened on the fortress, but on the 15th more of the convoy got safe in, and the garrison, notwithstanding the fire, was busily employed in disembarking the supplies. On the 17th the exertions of the navy were rewarded by floating the captured ship, "San Michele," and she was commissioned under Sir Charles Knowles, and anchored off the New Mole. By the 18th that part of the convoy that was with the "Buffalo" was sent into Gibraltar, and two regiments under Lord Mulgrave, with 1600 barrels of powder, were securely landed. Lord Howe having now fulfilled the important duty entrusted to him, considered that there was no necessity for risking an action in the confined space between Europa Point and Ceuta, and with the wind full from the Mediterranean, which

was in favour of the enemy and against himself; these disadvantages were such that he thought a conflict ought not to be risked, and he, consequently stood away through the narrow channel in close order, followed by the enemy at the distance of about three leagues. The British fleet as soon as it had cleared the Straits brought to, as did that of the enemy, preserving its former distance to windward. At daylight on the 20th both parties began to form the line, and the combined fleet had it in their power, with the wind in their favour, to have chosen their time of action as well as their place and distance. It took some time for them to arrange their force on account of their formidable numbers, and it was already evening before they had arranged their whole force. They began a cannonade at sunset on the van and rear of the British, seeming to point their chief attack on the latter, and continued their fire along the whole line at a considerable distance, and with little effect until ten at night. It was returned occasionally from different ships of the fleet, as their nearer approach at times afforded a more favourable opportunity for making an impression upon them. This firing was held in such utter contempt by Lord Howe, that he did not return a single shot from his flag-ship, the "Victory," although she was fired at by several, and at one time by eight ships. The distant fire, nevertheless, did considerable damage to the yards and rigging of several of the English ships, and sixty-eight men were killed and 208 wounded in this "skirmish." Satisfied with this parade of announcing to the world that they had fought the British fleet, the combined squadrons went into Cadiz to repair damages, and Lord Howe, after detaching one squadron to the West Indies and another to Ireland, returned home and anchored at St. Helen's on the 14th of November.

After the departure of the fleets little attention was paid by the enemy to the blockade of the fortress. The idea of gaining Gibraltar, either by force, starvation, or stratagem, appeared to have been totally relinquished. The cannonade from the land was, nevertheless, still continued, and the siege was not formally raised until the preliminaries of peace had been agreed on. Though every appearance in their camp indicated that they had given up all hopes of subduing the garrison, yet the forces on the isthmus continued very busy, and even entertained the idea of blowing up some part of the rock from the Devil's Tower, but their works in that quarter were soon made "too hot to hold 'em."

All Europe had had their eyes fixed intently on the siege of Gibraltar, in which 7000 men had resolutely defended themselves from the 21st of June, 1779, but it was the 6th of February, 1783, when the Duke de Crillon informed Elliot, the Governor, that the operations of war had ceased. The besieging army under the direction of this distinguished Commander, numbered 27,067 Spaniards, and 4055 French, making in all 33,000, including officers. The total loss to the garrison in killed and wounded was 1231.



## 19. MILITARY CHARACTER OF GENERAL SIR GEORGE AUGUSTUS ELLIOT, LORD HEATHFIELD.

The greatest exertions had been made both by sea and land by the most powerful nations of Europe, and it was no small honour to any man to have frustrated such an enterprise, and at a moment of extreme pressure upon the resources of his country to have at once saved the national honour and its most cherished possession. That man was Sir George Augustus Elliot, now decorated with the order of the Bath for this distinguished service. This soldier was a model and an example of military greatness. At an early age he had informed himself upon all matters connected with the profession of arms; he spoke the French and German languages with elegance and fluency. He had learned tactics as well as engineering and fortification at the celebrated school of La Fère, in Picardy, the most famous one in Europe at that time, established by the great Vauban; and he had afterwards completed his military course by serving as a volunteer in the Prussian army, at this time celebrated for its discipline. Elliot entered the British army in the 23rd regiment of foot, and afterwards served in the corps of engineers. He first saw service, as adjutant of the horse grenadiers in Germany, at the battle of Dettingen, where he was wounded. On his return home he was selected to raise a regiment, afterwards the 15th King's royal regiment of dragoons. He was second in command of the expedition against the Havannah in 1762. In a fortunate hour for his country he was appointed to the command of Gibraltar in 1777. The system of his life as well as his education peculiarly qualified him for the trust of defending an important fortress. He had great military talents, and was a soldier in heart as well as in other qualifications. As an engineer he was well acquainted with the science of the defence of a fortified place. As a disciplinarian, he was ever alive to the necessity of vigilance, and never relaxed it on the appearance of security, but he never hazarded the lives of his garrison by wild experiments. The military system which he introduced into his garrison, and the preparations he made for its defence, were contrived with much judgment, and executed with a constancy sufficient to exhaust the patience of most men. He was perhaps the most abstemious man of his age, an admirable qualification for the governor of a beleaguered place. His food was for the most part vegetables, and his drink water. He never slept for more than four hours at a time, and was up later and earlier than most other men. It was not easy to starve such a man into a surrender, nor to surprise a man whose watchfulness was beyond that of most other people. The example of a commander in a besieged garrison has necessarily a most persuasive effect in forming the manners of those he commands. His soldiery came to regulate their lives by the most strict rules of discipline, before there arose a necessity for it, and severe exercise and short diet became habitual to them before it became essential. He never spent his ammunition in useless parade, nor in unimportant attacks. He deliberately observed the approaches of the enemy

patiently permitted their advances, and then seized on the proper moment with the keenest perception in which to make his attack with success. On the return of Elliot to his country, the gratitude of the British senate was as forward as the public voice in giving him all that his distinguished merit deserved, to which his king added the peerage, permitting Lord Heathfield to take also the arms of the fortress he had so bravely defended, to perpetuate to futurity his noble conduct, which had justly raised him to a most elevated place in the military annals of his time. He was desirous of ending his days within the fortress with which his earthly fame was so connected, and having been seized with paralysis when travelling in Italy, he desired to be put on board ship at Leghorn, but before he could sail he sank under a severe attack, and died there on the 6th of July, 1790. It will grieve all soldiers to learn that his honours have not been transmitted to future ages, for his only son died in 1818 without children, and the brave veteran has left no descendants.

20. MEMOIRS OF THE DUKE DE CRILLON-MAHON—THE CHEVALIER D'ARÇON—MARQUIS LA FAYETTE—GENERAL SIR BANASTIE TABLETON.

1. GENERAL THE DUKE DE CRILLON-MAHON,

Of an ancient and most distinguished family, was born in 1718, and made his first campaign under Marshal Villars in 1731. He was at the battle of Parma in 1734, but in 1742 was taken prisoner by the Bavarians. He was at the battle of Fontenoy in 1745, in which, as Brigadier, he followed up the routed enemy in pursuit; and, after the battle, presented to the King the two front ranks of the regiments of Crillon and Laval dressed in the grenadier caps of the British, who had laid down their arms to him. De Crillon was employed during the Seven Years' War, and was present at the battle of Rosbach, where he had a horse killed under him. He was afterwards named Lieut.-General, in which capacity he commanded the reserve at Latzelberg. Offended at being passed over by the appointment of the Prince de Beauveau in the French expedition against Portugal in 1762, he offered his services to the court of Madrid; where, according to the Family Compact between the two crowns, he was admitted to the same rank he held in the French army; and in 1782 the Duke obtained the command of the expedition against Minorca, which, as we have seen, proved successful. He was in consequence given the supreme command against Gibraltar, and, notwithstanding his failure before this fortress, received from the King of Spain the title of Duke of Mahon for his valued services. De Crillon died at Madrid in 1796.

2. THE CHEVALIER D'ARÇON

Was born in 1733, and was intended for the church, but his taste for the profession of arms was so strong that he determined to adopt it, and he chose an ingenious mode of showing this preference and wish to his parents: they employed an artist to paint his por-

trait, and he took an opportunity of altering with his own hands the costume of an abbé into that of an engineer officer. He made his first campaign in the Seven Years' War, and distinguished himself at the siege of Cassel in 1761. In the interval that elapsed until the year 1780 he became known by his writings, in which he publicly announced his bold plan for the attack of Gibraltar by sea by means of batteries "insubmergibles et incombustibles." The court of Spain, eager for the recovery of this important fortress, received his proposals; and they were after much discussion carried into effect at an immense cost of material, so that no projector ever embarked on his projects under such advantages; but, as we have seen, they failed most egregiously. In 1793 the remembrance of his ability as an engineer brought him again into employment, and he received commands in the first campaigns of the Republic; but he soon lost his health, and was obliged to limit all his further usefulness to the exercise of his pen. He died in 1800.

### 3. THE MARQUIS LA FAYETTE

Appears to have so connected his name with the American contest as to merit a memoir in the Annals of War. He was born in 1757, of one of the most ancient families in Auvergne. At the age of twenty-one he was carried away by a popular enthusiasm for liberty in France, and went over to America to serve as a simple volunteer with the patriots, taking with him abundant supplies of arms and ammunition provided at his own cost. He was immediately placed on the personal staff of Washington: but on the arrival of the French auxiliary corps under M. de Rochambeau, he was appointed to a brigade of provincial volunteers. He did not, however, distinguish himself in any remarkable degree as a military leader, either in America, or, afterwards, in the army of the Revolution, in which he held a command in 1792. He took part in the second French Revolution, and survived till 1833.

MM. de Crillon and d'Arçon, though as Frenchmen they served in the army of Spain, yet formed part of the great confederacy of the Family Compact between the two crowns against Great Britain; but M. la Fayette had no call to enter into the dispute of another people on the other side of the Atlantic, and such interference, though covered under the name of a love of liberty, is very reprehensible in any naval or military man. A Christian gentleman and cavalier soldier may regret war in the abstract as sincerely as a Quaker, but he draws his sword, *pro aris et focis*, to maintain the honour and security of his country, when threatened either at home or abroad: while

"At the red wreaths of guilty fame  
His generous soul would blush."

No true warrior should derogate from the honour of his profession by accepting active service in the quarrels of another people.

### 4. GENERAL SIR BANASTIE TARLETON.

There never was a war which elicited so little military talent as

the American War among the leaders of either side. It was scarcely to be expected on that of the patriots, because they were wholly inexperienced men in military matters, excepting Washington himself; but Gates, Lincoln, Montgomery, Greene, and Sullivan, have left no mark of fame. The same may be said of the foreigners who joined their standard, French, Poles, &c. Nor can it be said that the British earned much reputation that has survived the contest. Sir William Howe and Sir Henry Clinton obtained their red ribbons, but obtained but little praise or blame. Burgoyne and Cornwallis have left a renown not to be envied; and Sir Guy Carleton in the North, and Lord Rawdon in the South, did well, but had too limited a field for glory.

The only General who is named with respect for his exploits in the war, and whose memory still lives as a doughty paladin and a bug-bear among the American people, is Tarleton. He was present in all the actions and affairs in 1777-8 that preceded the return of the royal army to New York, and his conduct in the field obtained for him shortly afterwards the independent command of the cavalry of the British Legion. In this character he served under Clinton at the siege of Charleston, cutting off all communications with the country by his light troops, at which time he succeeded in surprising and destroying three regiments of the enemy's cavalry; and, on the surrender of the town, overtook after a wearisome pursuit and defeated at Waxsaw a superior body of infantry under Colonel Burford, whom he routed with the loss of four guns and all their baggage. He was unfortunate in the affair at Cowpens, for which Lord Cornwallis blamed him; but at Guildford Court-House, he had an active share in the discomfiture of General Greene, and lost his right hand in the action. Tarleton continued to serve up to the unfortunate affair at York Town, when he was in command of the separate garrison at Gloucester. After the peace of 1783 he saw no active service; but he had been quite the Seydlitz of the American War, and afforded every promise of being a first-rate outpost officer. He became Grand Cross of the Bath, and died in 1833.

## 21. PRELIMINARIES OF PEACE.

The failure before Gibraltar was the last action of importance during the war. Splendid as had been the concluding scenes of the drama to Great Britain, the policy of sheathing the sword had been universally admitted by her people. The change of administration had impeded the negotiations that had been commenced at Paris between Mr. Grenville and Dr. Franklin for the acknowledgment of the independence of the North American Colonies; but the preliminaries for a separation were at length signed on the 30th of November between the American Commissioners and the mother country, and King George III. thus announced this fact to his parliament on the 5th of December: "I have sacrificed every consideration of my own to the wishes and opinions of my people. I make it my humble and earnest prayer to Almighty God that Great

Britain may not feel any evils from this dismemberment of the empire, and that no calamities may arise to America from the absence to her of that monarchical institution which has proved so essential to the enjoyment of constitutional liberty in the mother country." In the negotiations that were in progress *pari passu* with France and Spain, the proposition was actually entertained that even after its brilliant defence and while the heavens were yet red with the glory of it, the rock-fortress might be yielded back to Spain in exchange for the island of Porto Rico! The bare idea of such a thought roused the thunder of Fox in the House of Commons, and obliged the minister to intimate to the court of Spain that no terms would tempt the British nation to give up Gibraltar. King Charles vapoured, and spoke of renewing the war, but at length sullenly acquiesced in the proposed terms of peace, which accordingly went forward.

---

## 1783.

### PEACE OF VERSAILLES.

On the 20th of January preliminaries of peace were signed between France, Great Britain, and Spain, and on the 2nd of September between England and Holland. The definitive treaty followed called the Treaty of Versailles, which terminated the war in Europe and America. Each nation found as usual in the retrospect of the war, that its gains weighed little in the scale against its losses. England, in particular, had increased her national debt by more than one hundred and thirty millions, and had to lament the lives of 50,000 of her subjects. The loss of America, which was thought at the time to be so grievous and humiliating to Great Britain, has borne this fruit of experience to the age in which we live, that an independent brotherly nation is greatly more valuable to a kingdom than a discontented colony; and that now when the sores have healed, "religion, language, interest, and affection must prove a bond of permanent union," that will carry to distant lands and remote ages advantages such as no war that was ever waged had ever previously obtained for mankind.

The definitive treaty of peace was not signed at Versailles till the 3rd of September, and it was not till the spring of 1785 that Mr. John Adams arrived at the court of St. James's as first envoy from the United States of America. The popular opinion on the other side of the Atlantic regarded King George III. as an unfeeling and stubborn tyrant; but the republican minister was undeceived and overcome with his Majesty's gracious and pleasing manner when the King said to him in his first audience, "I was the last man in the kingdom to consent to the separation and independence of your

country; but the separation having been made and become inevitable, I shall be the last man in the world to sanction any violation of it, and the first to meet the friendship of the United States as an independent power with cordiality and frankness."

END OF VOLUME III.







